



LOEB CLASSICAL LIBRARY
PLOTINUS
ENNEAD IV
Translated by
A. H. ARMSTRONG

LOEB CLASSICAL LIBRARY
PLOTINUS
ENNEAD III
Translated by
A. H. ARMSTRONG

LOEB CLASSICAL LIBRARY
PLOTINUS
ENNEAD V
Translated by
A. H. ARMSTRONG

LOEB CLASSICAL LIBRARY
PLOTINUS
VI
Translated by
A. H. ARMSTRONG

LOEB CLASSICAL LIBRARY
PLOTINUS
ENNEAD II
Translated by
A. H. ARMSTRONG

LOEB CLASSICAL LIBRARY
PLOTINUS
VII
Translated by
A. H. ARMSTRONG

LOEB CLASSICAL LIBRARY
PORPHYRY ON PLOTINUS
ENNEAD I
Translated by
A. H. ARMSTRONG

PLOTINUS

WITH AN ENGLISH TRANSLATION BY

A. H. ARMSTRONG

EMERITUS PROFESSOR OF GREEK
UNIVERSITY OF LIVERPOOL

IN SEVEN VOLUMES

I

PORPHYRY ON THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS
AND THE ORDER OF HIS BOOKS

ENNEADS

I. 1-9



CAMBRIDGE, MASSACHUSETTS
HARVARD UNIVERSITY PRESS

MCMLXXXIX

©The President and Fellows of Harvard College, 1966

ISBN 0-674-99484-1

First printed 1966
Reprinted 1978
Revised 1989

Printed in Great Britain by
Richard Clay Ltd, Norwich

CONTENTS

	PAGE
PREFACE	vii
SIGLA	xxxv
PORPHYRY ON THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS AND THE ORDER OF HIS BOOKS	1
ENNEAD I.	
1. WHAT IS THE LIVING BEING, AND WHAT IS MAN?	91
2. ON VIRTUES	123
3. ON DIALECTIC	149
4. ON WELL-BEING	167
5. ON WHETHER WELL-BEING INCREASES WITH TIME	213
6. ON BEAUTY	229
7. ON THE PRIMAL GOOD AND THE OTHER GOODS	265
8. ON WHAT ARE AND WHENCE COME EVILS	275
9. ON GOING OUT OF THE BODY	319

NOTE

THE text and translation of this revision (1987) are now in accordance with the latest published changes and corrections in the Henry-Schwyzler text as recorded in the *Addenda et Corrigenda ad Textum* in the third volume of the Oxford Classical Text (*Plotini Opera* III, Oxford 1982, pp. 304-7).

Section III of the Preface has been completely revised.

PREFACE

I. THE ENNEADS

PLOTINUS, as Porphyry tells us in his *Life* (ch. 4), did not begin to write till the first year of the reign of Gallienus (253/4), when he was forty-nine years old and had been settled at Rome and teaching philosophy for ten years. He continued to write till his death in 270 in his sixty-sixth year. His writings thus all belong to the last sixteen years of his life and represent his mature and fully developed thought. We should not expect to find in them, and, in the opinion at least of the great majority of Plotinian scholars, we do not in fact find in them, any major development. The earliest of them are the fruit of over twenty years' study and teaching of philosophy. (He came to Alexandria to study philosophy at the age of twenty-seven, in 232.) There is a good deal of variation, and it is even perhaps sometimes possible to trace a genuine development, in his repeated handling of particular problems. Plotinus had an intensely active and critical mind, and was not easily satisfied with his own or other people's formulations. But in all essentials his philosophy was fully mature before he began to write; and we have very little evidence indeed upon which to base speculation about the stages of its growth.

Plotinus's writings grew naturally out of his teaching. He never set out to write down a sys-

PREFACE

tematic exposition of his philosophy, but as important and interesting questions came up for discussion in his school he wrote treatises on the particular problems involved (Porphyry, *Life*, 4. 11, 5. 50). Thus it seems likely that the treatise V. 5, *That the Intelligibles are not outside the Intellect; and on the Good* was the result of the discussion which Porphyry records in chapter 18 of the *Life*; and III. 4, *On Our Allotted Guardian Spirit*, was, Porphyry says (*Life*, 10. 31), provoked by the conjuration of Plotinus's guardian spirit in the temple of Isis. The treatises were not intended for publication, but for circulation among carefully selected members of the school (*Life*, 4. 14-16). They give us, therefore, an extremely unsystematic presentation of a systematic philosophy. No reader of the *Enneads* can long remain unaware that Plotinus has a fully and carefully worked-out philosophical system. But neither his writings nor Porphyry's description of his teaching (*Life*, 13 and 18) have any suggestion of the dry, tidy, systematic, authoritarian presentation of the scholastic text-book. His teaching was informal and left plenty of room for the freest discussion, and in his writings we find his philosophy presented, not step by step in an orderly exposition, but by a perpetual handling and rehandling of the great central questions, always from slightly different points of view and with reference to different types of objections and queries.

Plotinus appointed Porphyry to take charge of the revision¹ and arrangement of his writings (*Life*,

¹ *διόρθωσις*, the word used by Porphyry, need imply no more than the correction of the spelling and supplying of punctuation which he says that he undertook (*Life*, 26. 37).

PREFACE

7. 51, 24. 2), and the *Enneads* as we have them are the result of his editorial activity. He did not, however, publish his edition till more than thirty years after the death of Plotinus (i.e., somewhere between 301 and 305), and in the interval another edition of the treatises was published by Eustochius, also a pupil of Plotinus and the doctor who attended him in his last illness; of this only a few traces remain.¹ Porphyry has given us a good deal of information about his editorial methods in the *Life*; the full title of the work is *On the Life of Plotinus and the Order of his Books*, and it looks as if one of his main purposes in writing it was to explain, and perhaps to justify against actual or possible criticism, the principles which governed his edition. He adopted the same principle of arrangement, he tells us (*Life*, ch. 24) as that used by Apollodorus of Athens in his edition of Epicharmus and Andronicus the Peripatetic in his edition of Aristotle and Theophrastus; that is, he arranged the treatises according to subject-matter and not in chronological order.² In fact, a division of Plotinus's works

There is no reason to believe that he made any important modifications of the text of Plotinus's treatises as he received them.

¹ For a discussion of the evidence that the edition of Eustochius existed, and that Eusebius in several places in the *Praep. ev.* cites Plotinus according to it and not to Porphyry's edition see P. Henry, *Recherches sur la Préparation Évangélique d'Eusèbe*, pp. 73-80, and *États du Texte de Plotin*, 77 ff. (where the Eusebius texts are printed), and H.R. Schwyzer's article *Plotin* in *Pauly's Realencyclopädie* B. XXI. col. 488-490.

² He gives us, however, the chronological order of the treatises in chs. 4-6 of the *Life*.

PREFACE

according to subject-matter is bound to have a great deal that is arbitrary in it because Plotinus does not, as has already been remarked, write systematically; there is no tidy separation of ethics, metaphysics, cosmology, and psychology in his treatises. Porphyry's arrangement therefore is by no means altogether satisfactory and should not be taken as a safe guide to the content of the treatises; the student of Plotinus's ethics must be familiar with the Sixth (and all the other) Enneads as well as the First, and anyone interested in his metaphysics will be very ill advised to neglect the so-called "ethical" and "psychological" treatises. It is however interesting, if not very useful, to the student of Plotinus to understand how Porphyry made his division. He arranged the whole body of treatises into six Enneads, or sets of nine, forming three volumes (*Life*, chs. 24-26). The treatises on the Categories and those of which the principal subject is the One form one volume (the Sixth Ennead), those dealing chiefly with Soul and Intellect another (the Fourth and Fifth Enneads), and all the other treatises go into the first volume (the First, Second, and Third Enneads); the First Ennead has an ethical emphasis, the Second is predominantly cosmological, the Third has a greater variety of subject-matter than any of the others. It is clear from what Porphyry says in ch. 24 of the *Life* that his reason for adopting the six-nine division was nothing better than the pleasure in the symmetry of sacred number characteristic of his age. To achieve it he had to do some vigorous cutting-up of the treatises as he received them. He subdivided a number of the longer treatises (III. 2-3, IV. 3-5, VI. 1-3, VI.

PREFACE

4-5); more curiously, he not only cut up one treatise but also put the pieces into different Enneads (III. 8, V. 8, V. 5, and II. 9 were written by Plotinus as a single treatise¹); and it is possible, though not certain, that it was he who, to make up his number, collected the short notes on various subjects which constitute III. 9 into a single treatise.

II. THE THOUGHT OF PLOTINUS

A

Plotinus is, like other philosophers of the Hellenistic and Roman periods, a practical religious and moral teacher and also a professional philosopher, engaged in the critical interpretation of a long and complicated school-tradition which we are beginning to know and understand a good deal better than formerly,² and working in an intellectual *milieu* which included not only those esoteric pietists the Gnostics and Hermetists, with whom he is sometimes rather misleadingly coupled, but a considerable number of other professional philosophers (about whom we know next to nothing) of very varying schools and points of view.³ His philosophy is both an account of an ordered structure of living reality, which proceeds eternally from its transcendent First

¹ On the problems raised by the appearance of these subdivisions as separate treatises in Porphyry's chronological list see Schwyzer, *art. cit.*, col. 487.

² Some important modern books dealing with this tradition are listed at the end of this *Introduction*.

³ Cp. Porphyry, *Life*, ch. 20 (the preface to Longinus's book).

PREFACE

Principle, the One or Good, and descends in an unbroken succession of stages from the Divine Intellect and the Forms therein through Soul with its various levels of experience and activity to the last and lowest realities, the bodies perceived by our senses: and it is also a showing of the way by which the human self, which can experience and be active on every level of being, is able, if it will, to ascend by a progressive purification and simplification to that union with the Good which alone can satisfy it. There are two movements in Plotinus's universe, one of outgoing from unity to an ever-increasing multiplicity, and the other of return to unity and unification: and closely connected with these two movements is what is perhaps the deepest tension in his thought. This results from two opposed valuations of the movement from unity to multiplicity and two correspondingly different ways of regarding the First Principle. When Plotinus's attention is concentrated on the great process of spontaneous production by which the whole of derived reality streams out from the First Principle, he sees that First Principle as the superabundant spring of creativity, the Good which is source of all goodness, the One from whose rich unity all multiplicity unfolds: and to emphasise the goodness of the splendid multiplicity of derived being is all the more to exalt the goodness of its source. The One as creative source of all being is properly described in the language of positive transcendence, as better than all good existing and conceivable. But when his mind is bent on the ascent to the Good by the stripping off of our lower and the transcending even of our higher self, when the First Principle appears

PREFACE

no longer as superabundant source but as the goal of pure unity which we attain by a radical simplification, by putting away all the varied multiplicity of being: then in comparison with that One and Good so passionately desired everything else seems so hopelessly inferior that he can think of its very existence as due to a fault, and represent the timeless coming forth of the Divine Intellect¹ and of Soul² as acts of illegitimate self-assertion. Plato, when he fixed his mind on God, had a very poor opinion of the human race:³ and Plotinus, when he fixes his mind on God, sometimes seems to have a very poor opinion of the whole of existence. But in neither philosopher was this way of looking at things a settled conviction, governing the whole of their philosophy. Plato's whole life and work show that he did, after all, usually think the human race worth taking seriously: and the positive view of derived reality, as good from the Good, greatly predominates over the negative in the *Enneads*. The tension between the two attitudes of mind is most apparent when Plotinus is considering the lowest level of reality, the material world. There is a very noticeable fluctuation in his thought about the precise degree of goodness or badness to be attributed to the body and the rightness or wrongness of the soul's descent into it. Plotinus is rightly conscious at this point of a similar tension in the thought of Plato, and in his effort to present Plato's thought as perfectly reasonable and consistent he tries hard, if not altogether successfully, to resolve it.⁴ The same basic tension probably accounts for a certain in-

¹ III. 8. 8.

² III. 7. 11.

³ *Laws* 804B.

⁴ E.g., in IV. 8. 5.

PREFACE

consistency in his description of the matter of the sense-world. He speaks several times¹ of this matter as derived from the principles immediately preceding it (i.e., Soul), and so ultimately from the Good; which would imply (as the later Neo-Platonists saw) that it was itself good in its own kind, even if that kind was the lowest possible. But for Plotinus the matter of the sense-world is the principle of evil, and in I. 8 in particular he speaks of it as absolute evil in a way which suggests an ultimate dualism and is hardly compatible with its derivation from the Good.² It is possible to produce a philosophical reconciliation of these contrasting emphases, and even of Plotinus's divergent accounts of the matter of the sense-world. But I am not sure that they are ever fully reconciled in Plotinus himself. There are, too, perhaps other fluctuations and tensions besides this major one. There are elements in his experience which do not fit into his system, elements in the tradition he inherited which are not fully assimilated, and lines of thought suggested which if they had been followed up might have led to a radical revision of his philosophy—the same, after all, might be said of almost any great philosopher. But his thought cannot be resolved into a mere jumble of conflicting elements. Tension is not the same thing as in-

¹ II. 3. 17; III. 4. 1; IV. 8. 6.

² And a yet further inconsistency is introduced into his thought at this point by his attitude to celestial matter, the matter of the bodies of the "visible gods," the sun, moon and stars, which he regards, in accordance with the beliefs of the astral or cosmic piety of his time, as not a principle of evil because it is not a principle of resistance to form but perfectly docile and subdued to it, so that it in no way troubles the life of the celestial intelligences. Cp. II. 1. 4; II. 9. 8.

PREFACE

coherence, as anyone can see who turns from reading the *Enneads* to read the *Hermetica*.

B

It is impossible to read any treatise in the *Enneads* intelligently without some at least elementary understanding of Plotinus's system as a whole, because they are, as has been said already, an unsystematic presentation of a systematic philosophy. I shall therefore try to give here a summary account of how Plotinus conceives his First Principle, the One or Good, and of the stages in the descent or expansion of reality from that Principle, and also to say something about the way of return to the Good, to follow and show which was Plotinus's main object in living, writing, and teaching.

Plotinus insists repeatedly that the One or Good is beyond the reach of human thought or language, and, though he does in fact say a good deal about It, this insistence is to be taken seriously. Language can only point the mind along the way to the Good, not describe, encompass, or present It. As Plotinus himself says (VI. 9. 3), "strictly speaking, we ought not to apply any terms at all to It; but we should, so to speak, run round the outside of It trying to interpret our own feelings about It, sometimes drawing near and sometimes falling away in our perplexities about It." There is, however, a certain amount which ought to be said about the language Plotinus uses about the One if we are not to misunderstand completely the direction in which he is pointing. The One is not, as has sometimes been suggested, conceived as a mere negation, an ultimate void, a

PREFACE

great blank behind the universe in attaining to which the human personality disintegrates into unconscious nothingness, but as a positive reality of infinite power and content and superabundant excellence. The extreme negativity—partly inherited from the school-tradition—of the language which Plotinus uses about Him¹ is designed either to stress the inadequacy of all our ways of thinking and speaking about Him or to make clear the implications of saying that He is absolutely One and Infinite and the source of all defined and limited realities. Building on Plato's remark in Book VI of the *Republic*, Plotinus insists that the Good is "beyond being," that He cannot properly be even said to exist—surely the extreme of negation. But it is perfectly clear from all that Plotinus says about Him, in the very passages where His existence is denied, that He is existent in some sense, and the supreme Existence. What Plotinus is saying is that the unity of the Good is so absolute that no predicates at all can be applied to Him, not even that of existence; and that as the Source of being to all things He is not a thing Himself. Again, Plotinus insists that the One does not think, because thought for him always implies a certain duality of thinking and its object, and it is this that he is concerned to exclude in speaking of the One. But he is anxious to make clear that this does not mean that the life of the One is mere unconsciousness, to show

¹ Though the terms for One and Good are both neuter in Greek, Plotinus when speaking about his First Principle, even in passages where these neuter terms are used, passes over quite naturally from neuter to masculine pronouns and adjectives. I have followed him in this as closely as possible in my translation.

PREFACE

that He is more, not less, than Mind at the highest level at which we can conceive it, and so in some passages he attributes to the One a "super-intellection," a simple self-intuition, an immediate self-consciousness higher than the thought of the Divine Intellect.¹ And when he calls the One "formless" he does so because He is infinite, without limits, and because, precisely as One (here Plotinus follows the school-tradition very closely), He is the principle of form, number, measure, order, and limit; and a source or principle for Plotinus is always other and more than that which it produces.

Plotinus, by his use of negative language, stresses the transcendence of the One to an extreme degree. But he is very careful to exclude all ideas of a quasi-spatial sort about this transcendence. The One is not a God "outside" the world. Nor is He remote from us, but intimately present in the centre of our souls; or rather we are in Him, for Plotinus prefers to speak of the lower as in the higher, rather than the other way round; body is in soul, and soul in Intellect, and Intellect in the One (he is quite aware that whichever way we put it we are using an inadequate spatial metaphor). The hierarchical order of levels of being does not imply the remoteness of the One, because they are not spatially separate or cut off from each other; they are really distinct, but all are present together everywhere. And just because the One is not any particular thing He is present to all things according to their capacity to receive Him.

From the One proceeds the first great derived reality, Intellect, the Divine Mind which is also the

¹ Cp. V. 4. 2; VI. 7. 38-9; VI. 8. 15.

PREFACE

World of Forms or Ideas, and so the totality of true being in the Platonic sense. I have chosen Intellect as the best available translation of Plotinus's word for this second reality, *Noûs*: it should be understood in a sense like that of the Scholastic term *intellectus* as opposed to *ratio*—a distinction which derives from and corresponds exactly to the Greek distinction between *νόησις* (the proper activity of *νοῦς*) and *διάνοια*. So understood, Intellect means the activity of direct mental sight or immediate grasp of the object of thought, or a mind which grasps its object in this direct way and not as the conclusion of a process of discursive reasoning (*ratio* or *διάνοια*). I shall say more shortly about the relation of the Plotinian Intellect to its objects.

The procession of Intellect from the One is necessary and eternal, as are also the procession of Soul from Intellect and the forming and ordering of the material universe by Soul. The way in which Intellect proceeds from the One and Soul in its turn from Intellect is rather loosely and inadequately described as "emanation." The background of Plotinus's thought at this point is certainly a late Stoic doctrine of the emanation of intellect from a divinity conceived as material light or fire, and his favourite metaphor to describe the process is that of the radiation of light or heat from sun or fire (he also uses others of the same sort, the diffusion of cold from snow or perfume from something scented). But he is not content merely to use these traditional analogies and leave it at that, to allow the generation of spiritual beings to be thought of in terms of a materialistically conceived automatism. Intellect proceeds from the One (and Soul from Intellect)

PREFACE

without in any way affecting its source. There is no activity on the part of the One, still less any willing or planning or choice (planning and choice are excluded by Plotinus even on a much lower level when he comes to consider the forming and ruling of the material universe by Soul). There is simply a giving-out which leaves the source unchanged and undiminished. But though this giving-out is necessary, in the sense that it cannot be conceived as not happening or as happening otherwise, it is also entirely spontaneous: there is no room for any sort of binding or constraint, internal or external, in Plotinus's thought about the One. The reason for the procession of all things from the One is, Plotinus says, simply that everything which is perfect produces something else. Perfection is necessarily productive and creative. Here we touch an element in Plotinus's thought which is of great importance, the emphasis on life, on the dynamic, vital character of spiritual being. Perfection for him is not merely static. It is a fullness of living and productive power. The One for him is Life and Power, an infinite spring of power, an unbounded life, and therefore necessarily productive. And as it is one of the axioms which Plotinus assumes without discussion that the product is always less than, inferior to, the producer, what the One produces must be that which is next to Him in excellence, namely Intellect: when Plotinus concentrates his mind on the inferiority of even this derived reality to its source, of any sort of multiplicity to the pure unity to which he aspires, then he comes to think of its production as unfortunate even though necessary, and of the will to separate existence of Intellect and

PREFACE

Soul as a sort of illegitimate self-assertion. But this does not mean that he ever thinks that the One might not produce, that there is any possibility of the derived realities not existing, of all things relapsing back into the original partless unity. Plotinus, when he gives a more precise account of how Intellect proceeds from the One, introduces a psychological element into the process which goes beyond his light-metaphor. He distinguishes two "moments" in this timeless generation; the first in which Intellect is radiated as an unformed potentiality, and the second in which it turns back to the One in contemplation and so is informed and filled with content and becomes the totality of real existence. Here we meet another of the great principles of the philosophy of Plotinus: that all derived beings depend for their existence, their activity, and their power to produce in their turn, on their contemplation of their source. Contemplation always precedes and generates activity and production.

Intellect is for Plotinus also the Platonic World of Forms, the totality of real beings: it is both thought and the object of its thought. This unity of thought and Forms in a single reality obviously derives from the Middle Platonist teaching that the Forms were the "thoughts of God." But it is clear from the opposition which Plotinus's teaching on this point aroused from Porphyry on his entrance into the school and from Longinus¹ that it was by no means universally accepted by contemporary Platonists. And Plotinus's doctrine of the absolute co-equality and unity-in-diversity of thought, life, and being

¹ *Life*, ch. 18 and 20.

PREFACE

goes a good deal beyond anything that we know any of his predecessors to have taught. Plotinus's World of Forms is an organic living community of interpenetrating beings which are at once Forms and intelligences, all "awake and alive," in which every part thinks and therefore in a real sense is the whole; so that the relationship of whole and part in this spiritual world is quite different from that in the material world, and involves no sort of separation or exclusion. This unity-in-diversity is the most perfect possible image of the absolute unity of the One, whom Intellect in its ordinary contemplation cannot apprehend as He is in His absolute simplicity. It represents His infinity as best it can in the plurality of Forms. Intellect is itself infinite in power and immeasurable, because it has no extension and there is no external standard by which it could be measured, but finite because it is a complete whole composed of an actually existing number (all that can possibly exist) of Forms, which are themselves definite, limited realities.

Looked at from the point of view of our own human nature and experience, Intellect, as has already been suggested, is the level of intuitive thought which grasps its object immediately and is always perfectly united to it, and does not have to seek it outside itself by discursive reasoning: and we at our highest are Intellect, or Soul perfectly formed to the likeness of Intellect (this is a point on which there is some variation in Plotinus's thought). Plotinus in some passages at least admits the existence of Forms of individuals, and this enables him to give our particular personalities their place in the world of Intellect, with the eternal

PREFACE

value and status which this implies. And this means that in that world, where the laws of space and time do not apply and the part is the whole, we are Being and the All. This is the explanation of a number of passages in Plotinus which at first reading have a pantheistic sound.¹ In order to understand them correctly we must remember: (i) that they refer to Intellect (Being or the All), not to the One; (ii) that to become Intellect does not involve the destruction or absorption of the particular personality but its return to its perfect archetypal reality, distinguished in unity from all other archetypal realities, individual and universal.

Soul in Plotinus is very much what it is in Plato, the great intermediary between the worlds of intellect and sense and the representative of the former in the latter. It proceeds from Intellect and returns upon it and is formed by it in contemplation as Intellect proceeds from and returns upon the One; but the relationship of Soul to Intellect is a much more intimate one. Soul at its highest belongs to the world of Intellect. Universal Soul has two levels, the higher where it acts as a transcendent principle of form, order, and intelligent direction (without deliberate choice or previous planning), and the lower where it operates as an immanent principle of life and growth. This latter is in fact (though Plotinus is reluctant to admit it) a fourth distinct hypostasis, and has its own name, Nature. It is related to the higher soul as the higher soul is to Intellect and, like it, acts or produces as a necessary result of contemplation; but because its contemplation is the last and lowest sort of contemplation, a

¹ Notably VI. 5. 12.

PREFACE

sort of dream,¹ it is too weak to produce anything which is itself productive. So what it produces is the immanent forms in body, the ultimate level of spiritual being, which are non-contemplative and so sterile, and below which lies only the darkness of matter.

The characteristic of the life of Soul is movement from one thing to another; unlike Intellect, it does not possess being as a whole, but only one part at a time, and must always be moving from one to the other; it is on the level of discursive thought, which does not hold its object in immediate possession but has to seek it by a process of reasoning; and its continual movement from one thing to another produces time, which is "the life of the soul in movement";² this movement of soul is the cause of all physical movement in space and time.

Our individual souls are "Plotinian parts" of Universal Soul, parts, that is, which in the manner proper to spiritual being have the whole in a certain sense present in them and can if they wish expand themselves by contemplation into universality and be the whole because they completely share Universal Soul's detachment from the body it rules. The individual soul's descent into body is for Plotinus both a fall and a necessary compliance with the law of the universe and the plan of Universal Soul.³ The spiritual state of the soul in body depends on its attitude. If it devotes itself selfishly to the interests of the particular body to which it is attached it becomes entrapped in the atomistic particularity of the material world and isolated from the whole. The root sin of the soul is self-isolation, by which it is

¹ III. 8. 4.

² III. 7. 11.

³ IV. 8. 5.

PREFACE

imprisoned in the body and cut off from its high destiny. But the mere fact of being in body does not necessarily imply imprisonment in body. That comes only if the soul surrenders to the body; it is the inward attitude which makes the difference. It is always possible for a man in the body to rise beyond the particularism and narrowness of the cares of earthly life to the universality of transcendent Soul and to the world of Intellect. Universal Soul is in no way hampered by the body of the universe which it contains and administers; and the celestial bodies of the star-gods in no way interfere with their spiritual life.¹ It is not embodiment as such the Platonist regards as an evil and a handicap.

The material universe for Plotinus is a living, organic whole, the best possible image of the living unity-in-diversity of the World of Forms in Intellect. It is held together in every part by a universal sympathy and harmony, in which external evil and suffering take their place as necessary elements in the great pattern, the great dance of the universe. As the work of Soul, that is as a living structure of forms, it is wholly good and everlasting as a whole, though the parts are perishable (the universe of Intellect is of course eternal as a whole and in every part). All in it that is life and form is good; but the matter which is its substratum is evil and the principle of evil, though, paradoxically, it is also the last and lowest stage of procession from the Good. Matter according to Plotinus never really unites with form; it remains a formless darkness upon which form is merely superimposed. It is non-

¹ II. 9. 8.

PREFACE

being in the sense not of a "zero" but a "minus," a force or principle of negation (in criticising the Aristotelian account of matter Plotinus identifies *ὄλη* and *στέργσις*). The pessimistic way of looking at procession from the One which I mentioned before is very much in evidence here. If all procession, because it is necessarily not only a going-out but a falling below the highest, is more or less an evil, then, Plotinus would seem to think, the last and lowest degree of procession will be an absolute falling below any trace of good, a complete negativity which will be the ultimate evil and source of all other evil. (In Plotinus's thought there is no such thing as purely spiritual evil: evil is confined to the material universe.) Matter then is responsible for the evil and imperfection of the material world; but that world is good and necessary, the best possible image of the world of spirit on the material level, where it is necessary that it should express itself for the completion of the whole. It has not the goodness of its archetype, but it has the goodness of the best possible image.

C

The primary object of all Plotinus's philosophical activity is to bring his own soul and the souls of others by way of Intellect to union with the One. His last words¹ "Try to bring back the god in you to the divine in the All" are a summing up of his

¹ According to the text now adopted by P. Henry (see his essay *La Dernière Parole de Plotin; Studi Classici e Orientali* II, pp. 113-30, Pisa, 1953) and which I translate: see note on *Life*, ch. 2. 26-7.

PREFACE

whole life and work. They are also a summing up of his religion—the two are the same, for I think this work of return can properly be called a religious work. Plotinus, like his contemporaries, believed in a great hierarchy of gods and spirits inside and outside the visible universe. But he does not appear to attach much religious importance to the beings in the lower ranks of this hierarchy (though he insists, as against the Gnostics, on proper respect being paid to the high gods of the visible universe, the sun, moon, and stars); nor does he consider that external religious rites are any help to the ascent of the soul. He takes a sacramental view of the visible universe, in that he regards it as a sign, or sacrament in the large sense, of the invisible; but there is no room for sacramentalism in his religion. The process of return is one of turning away from the external world, of concentrating one's powers inwardly instead of dissipating them outwardly, of rediscovering one's true self by the most vigorous intellectual and moral discipline, and then waiting so prepared for the One to manifest His presence. The rediscovery of one's true self is a return to Intellect; for, as we have seen, Plotinus teaches that our selves at their highest belong to the sphere of Intellect. This does not however mean that Plotinus simply reduces spiritual life to intellectual life. Intellect to him means something more than, and something different from, what we usually understand by the term; and in the ascent of the soul the moral life counts for at least as much as the intellectual life. The following passage¹ shows how misleading it would be to describe Plotinus as a

¹ VI. 7. 36, 6-10.

PREFACE

one-sided intellectualist (and his life here confirms his teaching): "We learn about the Good by comparisons and negations and knowledge of the things which proceed from It and intellectual progress by ascending degrees; but we advance towards it by purifications and virtues and adornings of the soul and by gaining a foothold in the world of Intellect and settling ourselves firmly there and feasting on its contents." Here moral and true intellectual life form an indissoluble unity.

The fact that we can only attain to the One when we are firmly established in Intellect has some important consequences, which are not always fully appreciated, for Plotinus's account of the final union. The first is that there is for him no short cut, no mysticism which does not demand moral and intellectual perfection. Union with the One transcends our moral and intellectual life, because in it we ascend to the source of intellect and goodness which is more than they are, but it is only possible because our intellectual and moral life has reached its perfection. We are "carried out by the very surge of the wave of Intellect."¹ It is the completion and confirmation, not the negation and destruction, of all that has been done to bring ourselves to perfection, to the fullest consciousness and activity. And again, because it is as Intellect that we attain to union, it would seem that it is not Plotinus's thought that our individual personalities are finally absorbed and disappear. It is true that in the union we rise above Intellect to a state in which there is no consciousness of difference from the One, in which there is no longer seer and seen,

¹ VI. 7. 36.

PREFACE

but only unity. But universal Intellect, of which we are then a part, exists continually in that state of union without prejudice to its proper life of intuitive thought and unity-in-diversity. There is never any suggestion in Plotinus that all things except the One are illusions or fleeting appearances.

III. TEXT, EDITIONS, TRANSLATIONS

For full information about the history of the text of Plotinus, reference should be made to the Preface of the great critical edition of P. Henry and H.-R. Schwyzer (Vols. I & II Paris & Brussels, Desclée de Brouwer; Vol. III Paris-Brussels-Leiden, Desclée de Brouwer and Brill 1951-73; *editio minor*, extensively revised, *Plotini Opera* I-III Oxford, Clarendon Press 1964-82), whose text is printed and translated in these volumes, and to the massive prolegomena to this edition published by P. Henry under the general title of *Études Plotiniennes* (Vol. I. *Les États du Texte de Plotin* 1938, Vol. II. *Les Manuscrits des Ennéades* 1941 and 1948; both Desclée de Brouwer). Briefly, their conclusions are: (i) The archetype of our present MSS represented the text of Porphyry's edition with remarkable fidelity. This archetype was certainly written after the beginning of the sixth century, and probably between the ninth and twelfth centuries. (ii) The extant MSS cannot safely be divided into *boni* and *deteriores*; in reconstituting the text of the archetype the primary MSS of four of the five families into which the MSS can be grouped (WXYZ)¹ must be used, and no one MS or family can

¹ The fifth family (D) consists of 1 MS (Marcianus Graecus xxviii

PREFACE

be given predominant authority. (iii) As the text of the archetype is believed on good grounds to represent faithfully the text of Porphyry's edition, there is little room for conjectural emendation.

The text presented by the editors is therefore both extremely conservative and eclectic, in the sense that it does not rely exclusively on any one MS or family of MSS. Its conservatism has been criticised, perhaps in some particular cases justifiably. But in the case of Plotinus there are special reasons for ultra-conservatism. We have always to remember Porphyry's words in ch. 8 of the *Life* about his master's method of work "when Plotinus had written anything he could never bear to go over it twice: even to read it through once was too much for him, as his eyesight was not strong enough. In writing he did not form the letters with any regard to appearance or divide his syllables correctly, and he paid no attention to spelling."¹ And anyone who reads the *Enneads* will soon discover that Plotinus writes a Greek very much of his own, which is certainly not bad or barbarous, but is highly unconventional and irregular: it is therefore extremely dangerous to emend him according to any preconceived ideas of Greek, or even late Greek philosophical, usage, and very difficult to establish any reliable internal criteria derived from the *Enneads* themselves which will enable us to state with any confidence what oddities of language were impossible for Plotinus. As a translator, with no pretensions to competence as a textual critic, I can

209) which, though the oldest, is too fragmentary and faulty to be of use in constituting the text.

¹ Cp. also Longinus's experience recorded in *Life*, ch. 19-20.

PREFACE

only say that in most difficult and disputed passages I have found that the Henry-Schwyzler text is easier to understand and gives a better sense than the versions of their predecessors. And since the publication of the first volume in 1951, the editors have been engaged in a continual process of critical (often self-critical) revision of the text, in the freest discussion with other Plotinian scholars, by which it has been greatly improved. Particularly notable contributions to this revision were made by the late Professor Jesus Igal of Bilbao; and it has gone on in continual and fruitful interaction with the Harder-Beutler-Theiler edition of Plotinus (see below). Full account of this revision, at the stage which it has so far reached (H-R. Schwyzler is still continuing it), has been taken in the last four volumes of the Loeb Plotinus (IV-VII, containing *Enneads* IV-VI); on the text of this revision of Vol. I see the Note on page vi; Vols. II and III represent the stage reached when Vol. I of the *editio minor* (= OCT) was published in 1964, with a few later revisions.

A full, severe, and sometimes entertaining account of the previous editions will be found in Henry and Schwyzler's Preface. They are as follows:

- P. Perna. Basel 1580.
- F. Creuzer and G. H. Moser. Oxford 1835.
- A. Kirchhoff. Leipzig 1856.
- H. F. Mueller. Berlin 1878-80.
- R. Volkmann. Leipzig 1883-4.
- E. Bréhier. Paris 1924-38.

Before his death Richard Harder had begun to prepare a Greek text of Plotinus to accompany a revision of his admirable German translation (first published

PREFACE

1930-37). The first volume of his text (containing the treatises 1-21 in the chronological order given in Porphyry's *Life*, which he preferred to Porphyry's later arrangement of them in *Enneads*) was published in 1956. After his death in 1957 the work was continued by R. Beutler and W. Theiler and completed in 1971. (*Plotinus Schriften* V-VI Hamburg, Meiner 1956-71); in spite of Harder's too modest remarks in his preface to the first volume, this ranks as a major critical edition of great value; its relation to the Henry-Schwyzler text is one of friendly independence. After these two great editions, the principal help to students of Plotinus which has appeared in recent years is the *Lexicon Plotinianum*, compiled by J. H. Sleeman and G. Pollet (Leiden, Brill; Leuven, University Press 1980), which accords with the Henry-Schwyzler text.

There are several good commentaries on individual works of Plotinus. I have found the following particularly helpful; all have Greek texts.

- W. Beirwaltes *Plotin. Über Ewigkeit und Zeit* (III 7) Frankfurt, Klostermann 1967; 3rd edition 1981.
- V. Cilento *Paideia antignostica* (III 8, V 8, V 5, II 9, now generally recognised as parts of a single long work) Florence, Le Monnier 1971.
- J. Bertier, L. Brisson and others *Plotin, Traité sur les nombres* (VI 6) Paris, Vrin 1980.
- M. Atkinson *Plotinus: Ennead V 1* Oxford, Clarendon Press 1983.

Since Marsilius Ficinus re-introduced Plotinus to Western Europe with his great Latin translation in 1492, translations of the *Enneads* have played an

PREFACE

important part in Plotinian studies, and their number is rapidly increasing. Harder's German translation has already been referred to. V. Cilento's Italian version with critical commentary (*Plotino: Enneadi* Bari, Laterza 1947-9) is of great scholarly value. J. Igal, whose contributions to the revision of the Henry-Schwyzler text were so great (see above), was engaged on a Spanish translation at the time of his death: two volumes, with a long and excellent introduction, have been published (*Porfirio, Vida de Plotino; Plotino, Eneadas I-II* and *Plotino, Eneadas III-IV* Madrid, Gredos 1982 and 1985), and the third is in active preparation. There is a good Dutch translation by R. Ferwerda (Amsterdam, Ambo Athenaeum—Polak and Van Gennep 1984), and translations into Polish and Hebrew. A Japanese translation is now appearing (*Plotinos Zenshū*, tr. Michitaro Tanaka, Muneaki Mizuchi and Yasuhiko Tanogashira, 5 vols., Tokyo, Chūc-Kōron Sha 1986-7). P. Hadot has published the first volume of an important new French translation, to be completed by various hands under his direction, with extensive introductions and commentaries (*Plotin, Traité 38 (VI7)*, Paris, Editions du Cerf, 1988). The English translation by Stephen MacKenna and B. S. Page (4th edition London, Faber 1969—the third of the one-volume editions revised by Page) is of much scholarly value and will always hold the affection of some readers because of its noble esoteric-majestic style. My debt to it is considerable, but I have had a better critical text at my disposal and have tried to give a plainer version and one closer to the Greek.

Since the appearance of the first volume of the Henry-Schwyzler text in 1951 there has been a great increase in interest in Plotinus and later Platonism;

PREFACE

this is part of the general growth of interest in late antiquity, the period of transition from the ancient to the mediaeval world. The number of scholarly writings on Plotinus and his predecessors and successors is now very large and continues to grow rapidly. Good introductions to these studies are provided by *The Cambridge History of Later Greek and Early Mediaeval Philosophy* (Cambridge University Press 1970, edited by A. H. Armstrong, who also wrote Part III, "Plotinus") and two excellent books in Duckworth's *Classical Life and Letters* series: John Dillon *The Middle Platonists* and R. T. Wallis *Neoplatonism* (London 1977 and 1972). A complete survey of everything published on Plotinus up to 1949 will be found in B. Marien's *Bibliografia critica degli studi Plotiniani* (Bari, Laterza 1949, published with the last volume of Cilento's translation). Two full bibliographical surveys of later publications have been published in *Aufstieg und Niedergang der römischen Welt* (ed. H. Temporini and W. Haase, Berlin-New York, De Gruyter) II.36.1. (1987): the first, by H. J. Blumenthal, covering the period 1951-71, pp. 528-70 and the second, by K. Corrigan and P. O'Cleirigh, covering 1971-86, pp. 571-623.

SIGLA

A = Laurentianus 87, 3.
A' = Codicis A primus corrector.
E = Parisinus Gr. 1976.
B = Laurentianus 85, 15.
R = Vaticanus Reginensis Gr. 97.
J = Parisinus Gr. 2082.
U = Vaticanus Urbinas Gr. 62.
S = Berolinensis Gr. 375.
N = Monacensis Gr. 215.
M = Marcianus Gr. 240.
C = Monacensis Gr. 449.
V = Vindobonensis philosophicus Gr. 226.
Q = Marcianus Gr. 242.
L = Ambrosianus Gr. 667.
D = Marcianus Gr. 209.

W = AE.
X = BRJ.
Y = USM.
Z = QL.

mg = in margine.
ac = ante correctionem.
pc = post correctionem.
γρ = γράφεται.

ORDO ENNEADVIV COMPARATVR
CVM ORDINE CHRONOLOGICO

Enn.	chron.	Enn.	chron.	Enn.	chron.
I 1	53	II 1	40	III 1	3
I 2	19	II 2	14	III 2	47
I 3	20	II 3	52	III 3	48
I 4	46	II 4	12	III 4	15
I 5	36	II 5	25	III 5	50
I 6	1	II 6	17	III 6	26
I 7	54	II 7	37	III 7	45
I 8	51	II 8	35	III 8	30
I 9	16	II 9	33	III 9	13
Enn.	chron.	Enn.	chron.	Enn.	chron.
IV 1	21	V 1	10	VI 1	42
IV 2	4	V 2	11	VI 2	43
IV 3	27	V 3	49	VI 3	44
IV 4	28	V 4	7	VI 4	22
IV 5	29	V 5	32	VI 5	23
IV 6	41	V 6	24	VI 6	34
IV 7	2	V 7	18	VI 7	38
IV 8	6	V 8	31	VI 8	39
IV 9	8	V 9	5	VI 9	9

ORDO CHRONOLOGICVS COMPARATVR
CVM ORDINE ENNEADVIV

chron.	Enn.	chron.	Enn.	chron.	Enn.
1	I 6	19	I 2	37	II 7
2	IV 7	20	I 3	38	VI 7
3	III 1	21	IV 1	39	VI 8
4	IV 2	22	VI 4	40	II 1
5	V 9	23	VI 5	41	IV 6
6	IV 8	24	V 6	42	VI 1
7	V 4	25	II 5	43	VI 2
8	IV 9	26	III 6	44	VI 3
9	VI 9	27	IV 3	45	III 7
10	V 1	28	IV 4	46	I 4
11	V 2	29	IV 5	47	III 2
12	II 4	30	III 8	48	III 3
13	III 9	31	V 8	49	V 3
14	II 2	32	V 5	50	III 5
15	III 4	33	II 9	51	I 8
16	I 9	34	VI 6	52	II 3
17	II 6	35	II 8	53	I 1
18	V 7	35	I 5	54	I 7

ΠΟΡΦΥΡΙΟΥ

ΠΕΡΙ ΤΟΥ ΠΛΩΤΙΝΟΥ ΒΙΟΥ ΚΑΙ ΤΗΣ
ΤΑΞΕΩΣ ΤΩΝ ΒΙΒΛΙΩΝ ΑΥΤΟΥ

1. Πλωτίνος ὁ καθ' ἡμᾶς γεγονώς φιλόσοφος
ἔωκει μὲν αἰσχυνομένῳ ὅτι ἐν σώματι εἶη. Ἀπὸ
δὲ τῆς τοιαύτης διαθέσεως οὔτε περὶ τοῦ γένους
αὐτοῦ διηγείσθαι ἠνείχετο οὔτε περὶ τῶν γονέων
5 οὔτε περὶ τῆς πατρίδος. Ζωγράφου δὲ ἀνασχέσθαι
ἢ πλάστου τοσοῦτον ἀπηξίου ὥστε καὶ λέγειν πρὸς
Ἀμέλιον δεόμενον εἰκόνα αὐτοῦ γενέσθαι ἐπιτρέψαι
οὐ γὰρ ἀρκεῖ φέρειν ὃ ἡ φύσις εἰδῶλον ἡμῖν περι-
τέθεικεν, ἀλλὰ καὶ εἰδῶλου εἰδῶλον συγχωρεῖν
αὐτὸν ἀξιούν πολυχρονιώτερον καταλιπεῖν ὡς δὴ
10 τι τῶν ἀξιοθεάτων ἔργων; Ὅθεν ἀπαγορεύοντος
καὶ καθεδεῖσθαι ἔνεκα τούτου ἀρνούμενου ἔχων
φίλον ὃ Ἀμέλιος Καρτέριον τὸν ἄριστον τῶν τότε
γεγονότων ζωγράφων εἰσιέναι καὶ ἀπαντᾶν εἰς τὰς
συνουσίας ποιήσας—ἐξῆν γὰρ τῷ βουλομένῳ φοιτᾶν
εἰς τὰς συνουσίας—τὰς ἐκ τοῦ ὄραν φαντασίας

¹ Eunapius (p. 6. Boissonade) says Plotinus came from Egypt and that his birthplace was Lyco. David, in his preface to his commentary on Porphyry's *Eisagoge* (4. pp. 91. 23-92. 1), gives the name of Plotinus's birthplace as Lycopolis, probably the town of that name in Upper Egypt (though the town of the same name in the Delta may be meant). But the reliability of this information must remain somewhat suspect. It is

PORPHYRY

ON THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS AND
THE ORDER OF HIS BOOKS

1. PLOTINUS, the philosopher of our times, seemed ashamed of being in the body. As a result of this state of mind he could never bear to talk about his race or his parents or his native country.¹ And he objected so strongly to sitting to a painter or sculptor that he said to Amelius,² who was urging him to allow a portrait of himself to be made, "Why really, is it not enough to have to carry the image in which nature has encased us, without your requesting me to agree to leave behind me a longer-lasting image of the image, as if it was something genuinely worth looking at?" In view of his denial and refusal for this reason to sit, Amelius, who had a friend, Carterius, the best painter of the time, brought him in to attend the meetings of the school—they were open to anyone who wished to come, and accustomed him by pro-

difficult to see what good source of information could have been open to Eunapius which was not available to Porphyry.

² For Amelius Gentilianus from Etruria cp. *Life*, ch. 3, 7, 10, 17 (his epistle dedicatory to Porphyry), 18, and 20. He was, as the *Life* makes clear, the leading member of the school in which he seems to have acted as Plotinus's chief assistant (cp. especially ch. 18). He was extremely pious (ch. 10) and a diffuse and voluminous writer. Nothing survives of the hundred volumes of the notes which he made at the meetings of the school.

15 πληκτικωτέρας λαμβάνειν διὰ τῆς ἐπὶ πλέον προσ-
 οχῆς συνείθισεν. Ἐπειτα γράφοντας ἐκ τοῦ τῆ
 μνήμη ἐναποκειμένου ἰνδάλματος τὸ εἶκασμα καὶ
 συνδιορθούντος εἰς ὁμοιότητα τὸ ἴχνος τοῦ Ἀμε-
 λίου εἰκόνα αὐτοῦ γενέσθαι ἢ εὐφυνία τοῦ Καρτερίου
 παρέσχεν ἀγνοούντος τοῦ Πλωτίνου ὁμοιοτάτην.

2. Κωλικῇ δὲ νόσῳ πολλάκις καταπονούμενος
 οὔτε κλυστήρος ἠνέσχετο, οὐκ εἶναι πρὸς τοῦ
 πρεσβύτου λέγων ὑπομένειν τὰς τοιαύτας θεραπείας,
 οὔτε τὰς θηριακὰς ἀντιδότους λαβεῖν ὑπέμεινε,
 5 μηδὲ τῶν ἡμέρων ζώων τὰς ἐκ τοῦ σώματος
 τροφὰς προσίεσθαι λέγων. Λουτροῦ δὲ ἀπεχόμενος
 καὶ τρίψεσι καθ' ἐκάστην ἡμέραν χρώμενος ἐπὶ
 τῆς οἰκίας, ἐπειδὴ τοῦ λοιμοῦ ἐπιβρίσαντος συνέβη
 τοὺς τρίβοντας αὐτὸν ἀποθανεῖν, ἀμελήσας τῆς
 τοιαύτης θεραπείας κατ' ὀλίγον τὴν τοῦ κυνάγχου
 10 ἀγριότητα κατασκευυζομένην ἔσχε. Κάμου μὲν
 παρόντος οὐδὲν πω τοιοῦτον ὑπεφαίνετο· ἀποπλεύ-
 σαντος δὲ εἰς τοσοῦτον ἠγγιώθη τὸ πάθος, ὡς
 ἔλεγεν ἐπανελθόντι Εὐστόχιος ὁ ἐταῖρος ὁ καὶ
 παραμείνας αὐτῷ ἄχρι θανάτου, ὡς καὶ τῆς φωνῆς
 περιαιρεθῆναι τὸ τορὸν καὶ εὐῆχον βραγχῶντος
 15 αὐτοῦ καὶ τὴν ὄψιν συγχυθῆναι καὶ τὰς χεῖρας καὶ
 τοὺς πόδας ἐκωθῆναι· ὄθεν ἐκτρεπομένων αὐτοῦ
 τὰς συναντήσεις τῶν φίλων διὰ τὸ ἀπὸ στόματος
 πάντας προσαγορεύειν ἔθος ἔχειν, τῆς μὲν πάλειος
 ἀπαλλάττεται, εἰς δὲ τὴν Κάμπανίαν ἐλθὼν εἰς
 Ζήθου χωρίον ἐταῖρου παλαιοῦ αὐτῷ γεγονότος καὶ

¹ A much more highly coloured account of Plotinus's last illness appears in Firmicus Maternus, *Mathesis* I. 7. 14 ff. H. Oppermann (*Plotinus Leben*, Heidelberg 1929, ch. I) regards this as an independent account based on a lost biography by

gressive study to derive increasingly striking mental pictures from what he saw. Then Carterius drew a likeness of the impression which remained in his memory. Amelius helped him to improve his sketch to a closer resemblance, and so the talent of Carterius gave us an excellent portrait of Plotinus without his knowledge.

2. He often suffered from a disease of the bowels, but would not submit to an enema, saying that it was unsuitable for an elderly man to undergo this sort of treatment. He refused also to take medicines containing the flesh of wild beasts, giving as his reason that he did not approve of eating the flesh even of domestic animals. He kept away from the bath and had himself massaged every day at home. When the plague broke out and his masseurs died he gave up treatment of this kind, and soon contracted acutediphtheria. While I was with him no symptoms of this kind appeared, but after I left on my voyage his disease increased so much in violence (as our friend Eustochius, who stayed with him till his death, told me when I returned) that his voice lost its clearness and sonority as his throat grew worse, and his sight became blurred and his hands and feet ulcerated.¹ So, since his friends avoided meeting him because he had the habit of greeting everyone by word of mouth, he left the city and went to Campania, to a property belonging to Zethus, an old friend of his who was

Eustochius prefixed to his edition of Plotinus's writings (cp. *Introduction*, p. ix). Henry (*Plotin et l'Occident*, Louvain, 1934, ch. I) considers it, more probably, as a rhetorical amplification of the account given here by Porphyry. Both agree, however, that the disease described here of which Plotinus died was in fact *elephantiasis Graecorum*, i.e., a form of leprosy.

20 τεθνηκότος κατάγεται. Τὰ δ' ἀναγκαῖα αὐτῷ ἔκ
 τε τῶν τοῦ Ζήθου ἐτελείτο καὶ ἐκ Μητουρνῶν
 ἐκομίζετο ἐκ τῶν Καστρικίου ἐν Μητούρναϊς γὰρ
 ὁ Καστρικίος τὰς κτήσεις εἶχε. Μέλλων δὲ τελευ-
 τᾶν, ὡς ὁ Εὐστόχιος ἡμῖν διηγείτο, ἐπειδὴ ἐν
 25 Ποτιόλοις κατοικῶν ὁ Εὐστόχιος βραδέως πρὸς
 αὐτὸν ἀφίκετο, εἰπὼν ὅτι σὲ ἔτι περιμένω καὶ
 φήσας πειρᾶσθε τὸν ἐν ἡμῖν θεὸν ἀνάγειν πρὸς τὸ
 ἐν τῷ παντὶ θεῖον, δράκοντος ὑπὸ τὴν κλίνην
 διελθόντος ἐν ἧ κατέκειτο καὶ εἰς ὀπήν ἐν τῷ
 τοίχῳ ὑπάρχουσαν ὑποδεδυκότος ἀφήκε τὸ πνεῦμα
 30 ἔτη γεγονώς, ὡς ὁ Εὐστόχιος ἔλεγεν, ἕξ τε καὶ
 ἐξήκοντα, τοῦ δευτέρου ἔτους τῆς Κλαυδίου βασι-
 λείας πληρουμένου. Τελευτῶντι δὲ αὐτῷ ἐγὼ μὲν
 ὁ Πορφύριος ἐτύγχανον ἐν Λιλυβαίῳ, διατρίβων,
 Ἀμέλιος δὲ ἐν Ἀπαμείᾳ τῆς Συρίας, Καστρικίος
 δὲ ἐν τῇ Ῥώμῃ μόνος δὲ παρῆν ὁ Εὐστόχιος.
 35 Ἀναψηφίζουσι δὲ ἡμῖν ἀπὸ τοῦ δευτέρου ἔτους
 τῆς Κλαυδίου βασιλείας εἰς τοῦπίσω ἔτη ἕξ τε καὶ
 ἐξήκοντα ὁ χρόνος αὐτῷ τῆς γενέσεως εἰς τὸ
 τρισκαδέκατον ἔτος τῆς Σεβήρου βασιλείας πίπτει.
 Οὔτε δὲ τὸν μῆνα δεδήλωκέ τι καὶ ὅν γεγέννηται,
 οὔτε τὴν γενέθλιον ἡμέραν, ἐπεὶ οὐδὲ θύειν ἢ
 40 ἐστιῶν τινα τοῖς αὐτοῦ γενεθλίοις ἠξίου, καίπερ ἐν
 τοῖς Πλάτωνος καὶ Σωκράτους παραδεδομένοις
 γενεθλίοις θύων τε καὶ ἐστιῶν τοῖς ἐταίρους, ὅτε
 καὶ λόγον ἔδει τῶν ἐταίρων τοὺς δυνατοὺς ἐπὶ τῶν
 συνελθόντων ἀναγνῶναι.

3. Ἄ μέντοι ἡμῖν αὐτὸς ἀφ' ἑαυτοῦ ἐν ταῖς ὁμι-

dead. His wants were provided for partly from the estate of Zethus and partly from that of Castricius at Minturnae; for Castricius had his property there. When he was on the point of death, Eustochius told us, as Eustochius had been staying at Puteoli and was late in coming to him he said, "I have been waiting a long time for you." Then he said, "Try to bring back the god in us to the divine in the All!" and, as a snake crept under the bed on which he was lying and disappeared into a hole in the wall, he breathed his last. It was the end of the second year of the reign of Claudius, and according to Eustochius he was sixty-six years old. At the time of his death I, Porphyry, was staying at Lilybaeum, Amelius was at Apamea in Syria, and Castricius was in Rome: only Eustochius was with him. If we reckon sixty-six years back from the second year of the reign of Claudius the date of his birth falls in the thirteenth year of the reign of Severus;¹ but he never told anyone the month in which he was born or the day of his birth, because he did not want any sacrifice or feast on his birthday, though he sacrificed and entertained his friends on the traditional birthdays of Plato and Socrates; on these occasions those of his friends who were capable of it had to read a discourse before the assembled company.

3. All the same, he did often in the course of conversation spontaneously tell us something about his

¹ I.e., Plotinus was born in A.D. 205 and died in 270. For a discussion of the chronology of his life see Schwyzer, art. cit. (Introduction, p. xxxii), col. 472-4.

λιαῖς πολλὰ κίς διηγείτο, ἦν τοιαῦτα. Προσφοιτᾶν
 μὲν γὰρ τῇ τροφῷ καίπερ εἰς γραμματοδιδασκάλου
 ἀπιόντα ἄχρις ὀγδόου ἔτους ἀπὸ γενέσεως ὄντα
 5 καὶ τοὺς μαζοὺς γυμνοῦντα θηλάζειν προθυμείσθαι
 ἀκούσαντα δέ ποτε ὅτι ἀτηρόν ἐστι παιδίον,
 ἀποσχέσθαι αἰδεσθέντα. Εἰκοστὸν δὲ καὶ ὀγδοὸν
 ἔτος αὐτὸν ἄγοντα ὀρμήσαι ἐπὶ φιλοσοφίαν καὶ τοῖς
 τότε κατὰ τὴν Ἀλεξάνδρειαν εὐδοκιμοῦσι συστα-
 θέντα κατιέναι ἐκ τῆς ἀκροάσεως αὐτῶν κατηφῆ
 10 καὶ λύπης πλήρη, ὡς καὶ τινι τῶν φίλων διηγείσθαι
 ἃ πάσχοι· τὸν δὲ συνέντι αὐτοῦ τῆς ψυχῆς τὸ
 βούλημα ἀπενέγκαι πρὸς Ἀμμώνιον, οὐ μὴδέπω
 πεπείρατο. Τὸν δὲ εἰσελθόντα καὶ ἀκούσαντα
 φάναι πρὸς τὸν ἑταῖρον· τοῦτον ἐζήτουν. Καὶ ἀπ'
 ἐκείνης τῆς ἡμέρας συνεχῶς τῷ Ἀμμωνίῳ παραμέ-
 15 νοντα τοσαύτην ἔξιν ἐν φιλοσοφίᾳ κτήσασθαι, ὡς
 καὶ τῆς παρὰ τοῖς Πέρσαις ἐπιτηδευομένης πείραν
 λαβεῖν σπεύσαι καὶ τῆς παρ' Ἰνδοῖς κατορθουμένης.
 Γορδιανοῦ δὲ τοῦ βασιλέως ἐπὶ τοὺς Πέρσας παριέ-
 ναι μέλλοντος δοὺς ἑαυτὸν τῷ στρατοπέδῳ συν-
 εἰσῆει ἔτος ἤδη τριακοστὸν ἄγων καὶ ἑννατον.
 20 Ἐνδεκα γὰρ ὄλων ἐτῶν παραμένων τῷ Ἀμμωνίῳ
 συνεσχόλασε. Τοῦ δὲ Γορδιανοῦ περὶ τὴν Μεσο-
 ποταμίαν ἀναιρεθέντος μόλις φεύγων εἰς τὴν
 Ἀντιόχειαν διεσώθη. Καὶ Φιλίππου τὴν βασιλείαν

¹ Ammonius (c. 175–242) was a self-taught philosopher who wrote nothing. We know very little about his teaching: the scanty evidence is fully reported and discussed by Schwyzer,

early life, to the following effect. Up to the age of eight, though he was already going to school, he used to keep going to his nurse and baring her breasts and wanting to suck; but when someone once told him that he was a little pest he was ashamed and stopped. In his twenty-eighth year he felt the impulse to study philosophy and was recommended to the teachers in Alexandria who then had the highest reputation; but he came away from their lectures so depressed and full of sadness that he told his trouble to one of his friends. The friend, understanding the desire of his heart, sent him to Ammonius,¹ whom he had not so far tried. He went and heard him, and said to his friend, "This is the man I was looking for." From that day he stayed continually with Ammonius and acquired so complete a training in philosophy that he became eager to make acquaintance with the Persian philosophical discipline and that prevailing among the Indians. As the Emperor Gordian was preparing to march against the Persians, he joined the army and went on the expedition; he was already in his thirty-ninth year, for he had stayed studying with Ammonius for eleven complete years. When Gordian was killed in Mesopotamia Plotinus escaped with difficulty and came safe to Antioch. After Philip

art. cit. col. 477–81. (See also E. R. Dodds, *Numenius and Ammonius* in *Entretiens Hardt V*). The nickname Saccas and the story that he once earned his living as a porter appears for the first time in Theodore. Porphyry never mentions it. Porphyry (in Eusebius H.E. 6. 19. 7) says that he was brought up a Christian, but later became a pagan. This may be true, but cannot be taken as certain, any more than Eusebius' denial (6. 19. 10). The name Ammonius was common in Egypt, and there may have been some confusion of persons.

PORPHYRY

κρατήσαντος τεσσαράκοντα γεγονώς ἔτη εἰς τὴν
 Ῥώμην ἀνειναι. Ἐρεννίῳ δὲ καὶ Ὀριγένει καὶ
 25 Πλωτίνῳ συνθηκῶν γεγονυῖων μηδὲν ἐκκαλύπτειν
 τῶν Ἀμμωνίου δογματικῶν ἃ δὴ ἐν ταῖς ἀκροάσεσιν
 αὐτοῖς ἀνεκεκάθαρτο, ἔμενε καὶ ὁ Πλωτίνος συνῶν
 μὲν τισι τῶν προσιόντων, τῆρῶν δὲ ἀνέκπυστα τὰ
 παρὰ τοῦ Ἀμμωνίου δόγματα. Ἐρεννίου δὲ
 30 πρώτου τὰς συνθήκας παραβάντος, Ὀριγένης μὲν
 ἠκολούθει τῷ φθάσαντι Ἐρεννίῳ. Ἐγγριψε δὲ
 οὐδὲν πλὴν τὸ "Περὶ τῶν δαιμόνων" σύγγραμμα
 καὶ ἐπὶ Γαλιήνου "Ὅτι μόνος ποιητὴς ὁ βασιλεὺς".
 Πλωτίνος δὲ ἄχρι μὲν πολλοῦ γράφων οὐδὲν
 διετέλεσεν, ἐκ δὲ τῆς Ἀμμωνίου συνουσίας ποιού-
 35 μενος τὰς διατριβάς· καὶ οὕτως ὄλων ἐτῶν δέκα
 διετέλεσε, συνῶν μὲν τισι, γράφων δὲ οὐδέν. Ἦν
 δὲ ἡ διατριβὴ, ὡς ἂν αὐτοῦ ζητεῖν προτροπομένου
 τοὺς συνόντας, ἀταξίας πλήρης καὶ πολλῆς φλυα-
 ρίας, ὡς Ἀμέλιος ἡμῖν διηγείτο. Προσῆλθε δὲ
 αὐτῷ ὁ Ἀμέλιος τρίτον ἔτος ἄγοντι ἐν τῇ Ῥώμῃ
 40 κατὰ τὸ τρίτον ἔτος τῆς Φιλίππου βασιλείας καὶ
 ἄχρι τοῦ πρώτου ἔτους τῆς Κλαυδίου βασιλείας
 παραμείνας ἔτη ὅλα συγγέγονεν εἴκοσι καὶ τέσσαρα,
 ἕξιν μὲν ἔχων ὅτε προσῆλθεν ἀπὸ τῆς Λυσιμάχου

¹ Or, possibly, "With reference to Gallienus, *That the Emperor is the Only Poet*." But it is very difficult to believe that a fellow-philosopher whom Plotinus respected could have perpetrated such a fulsome piece of court flattery as this suggests, and the context leads one to expect a treatise about the teaching of Ammonius. Origen the Christian writer also attended the lectures of Ammonius (Porphyry in Eusebius H.E. 6. 19. 6), but it seems clear to most of those who have studied the question that the Origen mentioned here and in

THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS

had become Emperor he came to Rome, at the age of forty. Erennius, Origen, and Plotinus had made an agreement not to disclose any of the doctrines of Ammonius which he had revealed to them in his lectures. Plotinus kept the agreement, and, though he held conferences with people who came to him, maintained silence about the doctrines of Ammonius. Erennius was the first to break the agreement, and Origen followed his lead; but he wrote nothing except the treatise *On the Spirits* and, in the reign of Gallienus, *That the King is the Only Maker*.¹ Plotinus for a long time continued to write nothing, but began to base his lectures on his studies with Ammonius. So he continued for ten complete years, admitting people to study with him, but writing nothing. Since he encouraged his students to ask questions, the course was lacking in order and there was a great deal of pointless chatter, as Amelius told us. Amelius came to him during his third year in Rome (the third year of the reign of Philip), and stayed with him till the first year of the reign of Claudius, twenty-four years in all. He came with a philosophical training from the school of Lysimachus,

chs. 14 and 20 of the *Life* was quite a different person. Origen was not an uncommon name at Alexandria; there are chronological difficulties against identifying the two (for which see Schwyzer, art. cit., col. 480); there is no trace of the writings mentioned here among the known works of the Christian Origen; and, most important of all, the references in the *Life* clearly imply that the Origen mentioned here was a perfectly normal Platonist, enjoying the friendship and respect of other Platonists and of Plotinus himself. In the passage quoted by Eusebius, Porphyry speaks of the Christian Origen in a very different and thoroughly hostile tone, as one would expect the greatest anti-Christian writer of antiquity to speak of the great Christian apologist.

σπουδασίας, φιλοπονία δὲ ὑπερβαλλόμενος τῶν καθ' αὐτὸν πάντων διὰ τὸ καὶ σχεδὸν πάντα τὰ Νοσημηνίου καὶ γράφαι καὶ συναγαγεῖν καὶ σχεδὸν τὰ πλείστα ἐκμαθεῖν· σχόλια δὲ ἐκ τῶν συνοουσιῶν ποιούμενος ἑκατὸν πού βιβλία συνέταξε τῶν σχολίων, ἃ Οὐστιλιανῶ Ἡσυχίῳ τῷ Ἀπαμεῖ, ὄν υἱὸν ἔθετο, κεχάρισται.

4. Τῷ δεκάτῳ δὲ ἔτει τῆς Γαλιήνου βασιλείας ἐγὼ Πορφύριος ἐκ τῆς Ἑλλάδος μετὰ Ἀντωνίου τοῦ Ῥωδίου γεγονὼς καταλαμβάνω μὲν τὸν Ἀμέλιον οἰκτωκαιδέκατον ἔτος ἔχοντα τῆς πρὸς 5 Πλωτίνου συνοουσίας, μηδὲν δὲ πῶ γράφειν τολμήσαντα πλὴν τῶν σχολίων ἃ οὐδέπω εἰς ἑκατὸν τὸ πλήθος αὐτῷ συνήκτο. Ἦν δὲ ὁ Πλωτίνος τῷ δεκάτῳ ἔτει τῆς Γαλιήνου βασιλείας ἀμφὶ τὰ πενήτηκοντα ἔτη καὶ ἐννέα. Ἐγὼ δὲ Πορφύριος τὸ πρῶτον αὐτῷ συγγέγονα αὐτὸς ὢν τότε ἔτῶν 10 τριάκοντα. Ἀπὸ μέντοι τοῦ πρώτου ἔτους τῆς Γαλιήνου ἀρχῆς προτραπεῖς ὁ Πλωτίνος γράφειν τὰς ἐμπιπτούσας ὑποθέσεις, τὸ δέκατον ἔτος τῆς Γαλιήνου ἀρχῆς, ὅτε τὸ πρῶτον αὐτῷ ἐγὼ ὁ Πορφύριος ἐγνωρίσθην, γράφας εὐρίσκεται εἴκοσι καὶ ἓν βιβλίον ἃ καὶ κατείληφα ἐκδοδομένα ὀλίγοις. 15 Οὐδὲ γὰρ ἦν πῶ ραδία ἢ ἐκδοσις οὐδὲ εὐσυνειδήτως ἐγίνετο οὐδ' ἀπλῶς κακ τοῦ ῥάστου, ἀλλὰ μετὰ πάσης κρίσεως τῶν λαμβανόντων. Ἦν δὲ καὶ τὰ γεγραμμένα ταῦτα ἃ διὰ τὸ μὴ αὐτὸν ἐπιγράφειν ἄλλος ἄλλο ἐκάστῳ τοῦπίγραμμα ἐτίθει. Αἱ δ' οὖν κρατήσασαι ἐπιγραφαὶ εἰσιν αἷδε· θήσω δὲ 20 καὶ τὰς ἀρχὰς τῶν βιβλίων, εἰς τὸ εὐεπίγνωστον εἶναι ἀπὸ τῶν ἀρχῶν ἕκαστον τῶν δηλουμένων βιβλίων.

and was the most industrious of all Plotinus's associates; he wrote out and collected almost all the works of Numenius, and nearly knew the greater part of them by heart. He made notes of the meetings of Plotinus's school and put together about a hundred volumes of these notes, which he has presented to Hostilianus Hesychius of Apamea, his adopted son.

4. In the tenth year of the reign of Gallienus, I, Porphyry, arrived from Greece with Antonius of Rhodes, and found that Amelius, though he had been with Plotinus for eighteen years, had not yet brought himself to write anything except the notebooks, which he had not yet brought up to their total of a hundred. In the tenth year of the reign of Gallienus Plotinus was about fifty-nine years old. I, Porphyry, when I first joined him was thirty. From the first year of Gallienus Plotinus had begun to write on the subjects that came up in the meetings of the school: in the tenth year of Gallienus, when I, Porphyry, first came to know him, I found that he had written twenty-one treatises, and I also discovered that few people had received copies of them. The issuing of copies was still a difficult and anxious business, not at all simple and easy; those who received them were most carefully scrutinised. These were the writings, to which, since he gave them no titles himself, each gave different titles for the several treatises. The following are the titles which finally prevailed. I add the first words of the treatises, to make it easy to recognise from them which treatise is indicated by each title.¹

¹ As is customary in translations of the *Life*, these first words have been omitted here and the Ennead reference substituted.

PORPHYRY

- α' Περὶ τοῦ καλοῦ: [I. 6].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τὸ καλὸν ἔστι μὲν ἐν ἡμῖν πλεῖστον.
- 25 β' Περὶ ψυχῆς ἀθανασίας: [IV. 7].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· εἰ δέ ἐστιν ἀθάνατος ἕκαστος.
- γ' Περὶ εἰμαρμένης: [III. 1].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· πάντα τὰ γινόμενα.
- δ' Περὶ οὐσίας τῆς ψυχῆς: [IV. 2].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τὴν τῆς ψυχῆς οὐσίαν.
- 30 ε' Περὶ νοῦ καὶ τῶν ἰδεῶν καὶ τοῦ ὄντος:
[V. 9].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· πάντες ἄνθρωποι ἐξ ἀρχῆς γενόμενοι.
- ζ' Περὶ τῆς εἰς τὰ σώματα καθόδου τῆς
ψυχῆς: [IV. 8].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· πολλαίκις ἐγειρόμενος.
- 35 ζ' Πῶς ἀπὸ τοῦ πρώτου τὸ μετὰ τὸ πρῶτον
καὶ περὶ τοῦ ἑνός: [V. 4].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· εἴ τι ἐστὶ μετὰ τὸ πρῶτον.
- η' Εἰ αἱ πάσαι ψυχαὶ μία: [IV. 9].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· ἀρα ὡσπερ ψυχῆν.
- 40 θ' Περὶ τάγαθου ἢ τοῦ ἑνός: [VI. 9].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· ἅπαντα τὰ ὄντα.
- ι' Περὶ τῶν τριῶν ἀρχικῶν ὑποστάσεων:
[V. 1].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τί ποτε ἀρα ἐστὶ τὸ πεποιηκὸς τὰς ψυχάς.
- ια' Περὶ γενέσεως καὶ τάξεως τῶν μετὰ τὸ
πρῶτον: [V. 2].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τὸ ἐν πάντα.
- 45 ιβ' Περὶ τῶν δύο ὑλῶν: [II. 4].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τὴν λεγομένην ἕλην.
- ιγ' Ἐπισκέψεις διάφοροι: [III. 9].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τοὺς φησὶν ἐρᾶ ἐνούσας ἰδέας.

THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS

1. On Beauty (I. 6).
2. On the Immortality of the Soul (IV. 7).
3. On Destiny (III. 1).
4. On the Essence of the Soul (IV. 2).
5. On Intellect, the Forms, and Being (V. 9).
6. On the Descent of the Soul into Bodies
(IV. 8).
7. How That which is after the First comes from
the First; and about the One (V. 4).
8. If All Souls are One (IV. 9).
9. On the Good or the One (VI. 9).
10. On the Three Primary Hypostases (V. 1).
11. On the Origin and Order of the Beings which
come after the First (V. 2).
12. On the Two Kinds of Matter (II. 4).
13. Various Considerations (III. 9).

PORPHYRY

- 50 ιδ' Περὶ τῆς κυκλοφορίας· [II. 2].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· διὰ τὴν κύκλῳ κινεῖται.
- ιε' Περὶ τοῦ εἰληχότος ἡμᾶς δαίμονος·
[III. 4].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τῶν μὲν αἰ ὑποστάσεις.
- ισ' Περὶ εὐλόγου ἐξαγωγῆς· [I. 9].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· οὐκ ἐξάξεις, ἵνα μὴ ἐξίη.
- 55 ιζ' Περὶ ποιότητος· [III. 6].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· ἀρα τὸ ὄν καὶ οὐσία.
- ιη' Εἰ καὶ τῶν καθέκαστά εἰσιν ἰδέαι· [V. 7].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· εἰ καὶ τοῦ καθέκαστον.
- ιθ' Περὶ ἀρετῶν· [I. 2].
60 οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· ἐπειδὴ τὰ κακὰ ἐνταῦθα.
- κ' Περὶ διαλεκτικῆς· [I. 3].
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τίς τέχνη ἢ μέθοδος.
- κα' Πῶς ἡ ψυχὴ τῆς ἀμερίστου καὶ μεριστῆς
οὐσίας μέση εἶναι λέγεται· [IV. 1].
65 οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ τῷ νοητῷ.

Ταῦτα μὲν οὖν εἴκοσι καὶ ἐν ὄντα, ὅτε αὐτῷ τὸ πρῶτον προσῆλθον ὁ Πορφύριος, εὔρηται γεγραμμένα· πεντηκοστὸν δὲ καὶ ἑννατὸν ἔτος ἦγε τότε ὁ Πλωτίνος.

5. Συγγεγονῶς δὲ αὐτῷ τοῦτό τε τὸ ἔτος καὶ ἐφεξῆς ἄλλα ἔτη πέντε—ὀλίγον γὰρ ἔτι πρότερον τῆς δεκαετίας ἐγεγόνειν ὁ Πορφύριος ἐν τῇ Ρώμῃ, τοῦ Πλωτίνου τὰς θερινὰς μὲν ἄγοντος ἀργούς,
5 συνόντος δὲ ἄλλως ἐν ταῖς ὁμιλίαις—ἐν δὲ τοῖς ἐξ ἔτεσι τούτοις πολλῶν ἐξετάσεων ἐν ταῖς συνουσίαις γιγνομένων καὶ γράφειν αὐτὸν ἀξιούντων Ἀμελίου τε καὶ ἐμοῦ, γράφει μὲν

THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS

14. On the Circular Motion (II. 2).
15. On our Allotted Guardian Spirit (III. 4).
16. On the Reasonable Departure (I. 9).
17. On Quality (II. 6).
18. Whether there are Ideas of Particulars (V. 7).
19. On Virtues (I. 2).
20. On Dialectic (I. 3).
21. In What Way the Soul is Said to be a Mean between Undivided and Divided Being (IV. 1).

These treatises, twenty-one in all, I, Porphyry, found already written when I first came to him. Plotinus was then in his fifty-ninth year.

5. I, Porphyry, had in fact already been in Rome a little before the tenth year of Gallienus, while Plotinus was taking his summer holiday and only engaging in general conversation with his friends. While I was with him this year and for five years afterwards, in these six years many discussions took place in the meetings of the school and Amelius and I kept urging him to write, so he wrote:

PORPHYRY

Περὶ τοῦ τί τὸ ὄν πανταχοῦ ὄλον εἶναι ἐν
καὶ ταῦτόν βιβλία δύο· [VI. 4 5].

10 α' τούτων δὲ τὸ πρῶτον ἀρχὴν ἔχει· ἄρα γε ἡ ψυχὴ
πανταχοῦ·
β' τοῦ δὲ δευτέρου ἡ ἀρχή· ἐν καὶ ταῦτόν ἀριθμῶ.

Γράφει δὲ ἐφεξῆς ἄλλα δύο, ὧν

γ' τὸ μὲν Περὶ τοῦ τὸ ἐπέκεινα τοῦ ὄντος
μὴ νοεῖν καὶ τί τὸ πρῶτως νοοῦν καὶ τί
τὸ δευτέρως· [V. 6].

15 οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τὸ μὲν ἐστὶ νοεῖν ἄλλο ἄλλο, τὸ δὲ αὐτὸ
αὐτό·

δ' τὸ δὲ Περὶ τοῦ δυνάμει καὶ ἐνεργείᾳ·
[II. 5].

οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· λέγεται τὸ μὲν δυνάμει.

ε' Περὶ τῆς τῶν ἀσωμάτων ἀπαθείας·
[III. 6].

οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τὰς αἰσθήσεις οὐ πάθη λέγοντες.

20 ζ' Περὶ ψυχῆς πρῶτον· [IV. 3].

οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· περὶ ψυχῆς ὅσα ἀπορήσαντας δεῖ.

ζ' Περὶ ψυχῆς δεύτερον· [IV. 4].

οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τί οὖν ἐρεῖ.

η' Περὶ ψυχῆς τρίτον ἢ περὶ τοῦ πῶς
ὁρῶμεν· [IV. 5].

25 οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· ἐπειδὴ περὶ ὑπερεθέμεθα.

θ' Περὶ θεωρίας· [III. 8].

οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· παλίντες τὴν πρῶτην.

ι' Περὶ τοῦ νοητοῦ κάλλους· [V. 8].

οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· ἐπειδὴ φαμεν.

30 ια' Περὶ νοῦ καὶ ὅτι οὐκ ἔξω τοῦ νοῦ τὰ
νοητὰ καὶ περὶ τάγαθου· [V. 5].

οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τὸν νοῦν τὸν ἀληθῆ νοῦν.

THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS

22, 23. On the Reason why Being is every-
where all present, One and the Same
(VI. 4-5).

Next he wrote another two of which the first is the
treatise

24. On the Fact that That Which is beyond
Being does not think, and on What is the
Primary and What the Secondary Think-
ing Principle (V. 6).

and the other

25. On What Exists Potentially and What
Actually (II. 5).

Then came

26. On The Impassibility of Beings without
Body (III. 6).

27. On the Soul I (IV. 3).

28. On the Soul II (IV. 4).

29. On the Soul III, or How we See (IV. 5).

30. On Contemplation (III. 8).

31. On the Intelligible Beauty (V. 8).

32. On Intellect, and That the Intelligibles are
not outside the Intellect and On the
Good (V. 5).

PORPHYRY

- ιβ' Πρὸς τοὺς Γνωστικούς· [II. 9].
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ἐπειδὴ τοίνυν ἐφάνη ἡμῖν.
- 35 ιγ' Περὶ ἀριθμῶν. [VI. 6].
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ἀρ' ἐστὶ πλῆθος.
- ιδ' Πῶς τὰ πόρρω ὁρώμενα μικρὰ φαίνετα·
[II. 8].
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ἀρὰ γε τὰ πόρρω ὁρώμενα.
- ιε' Εἰ ἐν παρατάσει χρόνου τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν;
[I. 5].
- 40 οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν.
- ισ' Περὶ τῆς δι' ὄλων κράσεως· [II. 7].
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· περὶ τῆς δι' ὄλων λεγομένης.
- ιζ' Πῶς τὸ πλῆθος τῶν ἰδεῶν ὑπέστη καὶ
περὶ τἀγαθοῦ· [VI. 7].
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· εἰς γένεσιν πέμπων ὁ θεός.
- 45 ιη' Περὶ τοῦ ἔκονσίου· [VI. 8].
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ἀρ' ἐστὶ περὶ θεῶν.
- ιθ' Περὶ τοῦ κόσμου· [II. 1].
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· τὸν κόσμον αἰεὶ λέγοντες.
- κ' Περὶ αἰσθήσεως καὶ μνήμης. [IV. 6].
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· τὰς αἰσθήσεις οὐ τυπώσεις.
- 50 κα' Περὶ τῶν τοῦ ὄντος γενῶν πρῶτον·
[VI. 1].
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· περὶ τῶν ὄντων πόσα καὶ τίνα.
- κβ' Περὶ τῶν τοῦ ὄντος γενῶν δεύτερον·
[VI. 2].
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ἐπειδὴ περὶ τῶν λεγομένων.
- 55 κγ' Περὶ τῶν τοῦ ὄντος γενῶν τρίτον· [VI. 3].
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· περὶ μὲν τῆς οὐσίας ὅση δοκεῖ.
- κδ' Περὶ αἰῶνος καὶ χρόνου· [III. 7].
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· τὸν αἰῶνα καὶ τὸν χρόνον.

THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS

33. Against the Gnostics (II. 9).
34. On Numbers (VI. 6).
35. How Distant Objects appear Small (II. 8).
36. Whether Well-Being depends on Extension of Time (I. 5).
37. On Complete Intermingling (II. 7).
38. How the Multitude of the Forms came into being and On the Good (VI. 7).
39. On Free Will (VI. 8).
40. On the Universe (II. 1).
41. On Sense-Perception and Memory (IV. 6).
42. On the Kinds of Being I (VI. 1).
43. On the Kinds of Being II (VI. 2).
44. On the Kinds of Being III (VI. 3).
45. On Eternity and Time (III. 7).

PORPHYRY

60 Ταῦτα τὰ εἴκοσι καὶ τέτταρα ὄντα ὅσα ἐν τῷ
 ἔξαέτει χρόνῳ τῆς παρουσίας ἐμοῦ Πορφυρίου
 ἔγραψεν, ἐκ προσκαίρων προβλημάτων τὰς ὑποθέ-
 σεις λαβόντα, ὡς ἐκ τῶν κεφαλαίων ἐκάστου τῶν
 βιβλίων ἐδηλώσαμεν, μετὰ τῶν πρὸ τῆς ἐπιδημίας
 ἡμῶν εἴκοσι καὶ ἐνὸς τὰ πάντα γίνεται τεσσα-
 ρακονταπέντε.

6. Ἐν δὲ τῇ Σικελίᾳ διατρίβοντός μου—ἐκεῖ
 γὰρ ἀνεχώρησα περὶ τὸ πεντεκαίδέκατον ἔτος τῆς
 βασιλείας Γαλιήνου—ὁ Πλωτίνος γράψας πέντε
 βιβλία ἀποστέλλει μοι ταῦτα:

- 5 α' Περὶ εὐδαιμονίας [I. 4].
 οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τὸ εὖ ζῆν καὶ εὐδαιμονεῖν.
 β' Περὶ προνοίας πρῶτον [III. 2].
 οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τὸ μὲν τῷ αὐτομάτῳ.
 10 γ' Περὶ προνοίας δεύτερον [III. 3].
 οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τί τοίνυν δοκεῖ περὶ τούτων.
 δ' Περὶ τῶν γνωριστικῶν ὑποστάσεων καὶ
 τοῦ ἐπέκεινα [V. 3].
 οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· ἀρα τὸ νοοῦν ἑαυτὸ ποικίλον δεῖ εἶναι.
 ε' Περὶ ἔρωτος [III. 5].
 οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· περὶ ἔρωτος πότερα θεός.

15 Ταῦτα μὲν οὖν τῷ πρώτῳ ἔτει τῆς Κλαυδίου
 πέμπτης βασιλείας ἀρχομένου δὲ τοῦ δευτέρου,
 ὅτε καὶ μετ' ὀλίγον θνήσκει, πέμπει ταῦτα:

- α' Τίνα τὰ κακά [I. 8].
 οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· οἱ ζητούντες πόθεν τὰ κακά.
 20 β' Εἰ ποιεῖ τὰ αὐτὰ [II. 3].
 οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· ἡ τῶν ἀστρῶν φορά.

THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS

These twenty-four treatises are those which he
 wrote during the six-year period when I, Porphyry,
 was with him. He took their subjects from problems
 which came up from time to time in the meetings of
 the school, as I have shown in the summaries of the
 several treatises. With the twenty-one treatises
 written before I came to Rome the total comes to
 forty-five.

6. While I was living in Sicily—I went there about
 the fifteenth year of the reign of Gallienus—
 Plotinus wrote and sent me these five treatises:

46. On Well-Being (I. 4).
 47. On Providence I (III. 2).
 48. On Providence II (III. 3).
 49. On the Knowing Hypostases and That
 Which is Beyond (V. 3).
 50. On Love (III. 5).

He sent me these in the first year of the reign of
 Claudius. At the beginning of the second year,
 shortly before his death, he sent these:

51. On the Nature of Evils (I. 8).
 52. Whether the Stars are Causes (II. 3).

PORPHYRY

γ' Τί τὸ ζῶον; [I. 1].

οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ἦδεναι καὶ λῦσαι.

δ' Περὶ εὐδαιμονίας· [I. 7].

25 οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ἀρ' ἂν τις ἕτερον εἴποι.

Ταῦτα μετὰ τεσσαρακονταπέντε τῶν πρώτων
καὶ δευτέρων γραφέντων γίνεται τέτταρι καὶ
πεντήκοντα. Ὡσπερ δὲ ἐγράφη, τὰ μὲν κατὰ
πρώτην ἡλικίαν, τὰ δὲ ἀκμάζοντος, τὰ δὲ ὑπὸ
30 τοῦ σώματος καταπονουμένου, οἷτω καὶ τῆς
δυνάμεως ἔχει τὰ βιβλία. Τὰ μὲν γὰρ πρώτα
εἴκοσι καὶ ἐν ἐλαφροτέρας ἐστὶ δυνάμεως καὶ
οὐδέπω πρὸς εὐτονίαν ἀρκοῦν μέγεθος ἐχούσης,
τὰ δὲ τῆς μέσης ἐκδόσεως τυχόντα τὸ ἀκμαῖον
τῆς δυνάμεως ἐμφαίνει καὶ ἐστὶ τὰ κδ πλὴν τῶν
35 βραχέων τελεώτατα, τὰ μέντοι τελευταῖα ἐννέα
ὑφειμένης ἤδη τῆς δυνάμεως γέγραπται καὶ μᾶλλον
γε τὰ τελευταῖα τέσσαρι ἢ τὰ πρὸ τούτων πέντε.

7. Ἔσχε δὲ ἀκροατὰς μὲν πλείους, ζηλωτὰς δὲ
καὶ διὰ φιλοσοφίαν συνόντας Ἀμελίον τε ἀπὸ τῆς
Τουσκίας, οὗ τὸ ὄνομα ἦν Γεντιλιανὸς τὸ κύριον,
αὐτὸς δὲ διὰ τοῦ ρ Ἀμέριον αὐτὸν καλεῖν ἠξίου
5 ἀπὸ τῆς ἀμερείας ἢ τῆς ἀμελείας πρέπειν αὐτῷ
καλεῖσθαι λέγων. Ἔσχε δὲ καὶ ἰατρικὸν τινα
Σκυθοπολίτην Παυλῖνον ὃν ὁ Ἀμέλιος Μίκκαλον
προσηγόρευε, παρακουσμάτων πλήρη γεγονότα.
Ἄλλὰ μὴν καὶ Ἀλεξανδρέα Εὐστόχιον ἰατρικὸν
ἔσχεν ἕτερον, ὃς περὶ τὰ τελευταῖα τῆς ἡλικίας
10 γνωρισθεὶς αὐτῷ διέμενε θεραπέων ἄχρι τοῦ
θανάτου καὶ μόνοις τοῖς Πλωτίνου σχολάζων
ἔξιν περιβάλλετο γνησίου φιλοσόφου. Συνῆν δὲ
καὶ Ζωτικὸς κριτικὸς τε καὶ ποιητικὸς, ὃς καὶ τὰ

THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS

53. What is the Living Being? (I. 1).

54. On Well-Being (I. 7).

These, with the forty-five of the first and second sets that he wrote, amount to fifty-four. The power of the treatises varies according to the period in which he wrote them, in early life, in his prime, or in his illness. The first twenty-one show a slighter capacity, not yet attaining to the dimensions of his full vigour. Those produced in his middle period reveal his power at its height: these twenty-four, except for the short ones, are of the highest perfection. The last nine were written when his power was already failing, and this is more apparent in the last four than in the five which precede them.

7. He had many hearers, and some who were brought together by a real enthusiasm for philosophy. Among these was Amelius of Tuscany, whose family name was Gentilianus; the master preferred to substitute R for L and call him Amerius, saying that it suited him better to take his name from *amereia* (indivisibility) than *ameleia* (indifference). There was also a medical man, Paulinus of Scythopolis, whom Amelius used to call Mikkalos—he always got things wrong. There was too another medical man, Eustochius of Alexandria, who came to know Plotinus towards the end of his life and stayed with him and tended him till his death. He devoted himself entirely to the thought of Plotinus and acquired the character of a genuine philosopher.¹ Zoticus the critic and poet was also one of the coun-

¹ For the edition which Eustochius made of the writings of Plotinus see Introduction (p. ix) and the references there given.

Ἀντιμάχου διορθωτικὰ πεποιήται καὶ τὸν
 “Ἀτλαντικὸν” εἰς ποιήσω μετέβαλε πάνυ ποιη-
 15 τικῶς, συγχυθεὶς δὲ τὰς ὄψεις πρὸ ὀλίγου τῆς
 Πλωτίνου τελευτῆς ἀπέθανεν. Ἐφθασε δὲ καὶ ὁ
 Παυλῖνος προαποθανὼν τοῦ Πλωτίνου. Ἔσχε δὲ
 καὶ Ζῆθρον ἑταῖρον, Ἀράβιον τὸ γένος, Θεοδοσίου
 τοῦ Ἀμμωνίου γενομένου ἑταίρου εἰς γάμον
 λαβόντα θυγατέρα. Ἦν δὲ καὶ οὗτος ἰατρικὸς
 20 καὶ σφόδρα πεφίλωτο τῷ Πλωτίνῳ· πολιτικὸν
 δὲ ὄντα καὶ ῥοπὰς ἔχοντα πολιτικὰς ἀναστέλλειν
 ὁ Πλωτῖνος ἐπειράτο. Ἐχρήτο δὲ αὐτῷ οἰκείως,
 ὡς καὶ εἰς τοὺς ἀγροὺς πρὸς αὐτὸν ἀναχωρεῖν πρὸ
 ἐξ σημείων Μητουρνῶν ὑπάρχοντας, οὗς Καστρί-
 25 κιος ἐκέκτητο ὁ Φίρμος κεκλημένος, ἀνδρῶν τῶν
 καθ’ ἡμᾶς φιλοκαλώτατος γεγονὼς καὶ τὸν τε
 Πλωτῖνον σεβόμενος καὶ Ἀμελίῳ οἶα οἰκέτης
 ἀγαθὸς ἐν πᾶσιν ὑπηρετούμενος καὶ Πορφυρίῳ
 ἐμοὶ οἶα γνησίῳ ἀδελφῷ ἐν πᾶσι προσεσχηκῶς.
 Καὶ οὗτος οὖν ἐσέβετο Πλωτῖνον τὸν πολιτικὸν
 ἡρῆμένος βίον. Ἦκροῦντο δὲ αὐτοῦ καὶ τῶν ἀπὸ
 30 τῆς συγκλήτου οὐκ ὀλίγοι ὧν ἔργον ἐν φιλοσοφίᾳ
 μάλιστα ἐποίουν Μάρκελλος Ὀρρόντιος καὶ Σαβι-
 νίλλος. Ἦν δὲ καὶ Ῥογατιανὸς ἐκ τῆς συγκλήτου,
 ὃς εἰς τοσοῦτον ἀπουτροφῆς τοῦ βίου τούτου
 προκεχωρήκει ὡς πάσης μὲν κτήσεως ἀποστήναι,
 35 πάντα δὲ οἰκέτην ἀποπέμψασθαι, ἀποστήναι δὲ
 καὶ τοῦ ἀξιώματος· καὶ πραιτωρ προίεναι μέλλων
 παρόντων τῶν ὑπηρετῶν μήτε προελθεῖν μήτε
 φροντίσαι τῆς λειτουργίας, ἀλλὰ μηδὲ οἰκίαν
 ἑαυτοῦ ἐλέσθαι κατοικεῖν, ἀλλὰ πρὸς τινος τῶν
 φίλων καὶ συνήθων φοιτῶντα ἐκεῖ τε δειπνῆν
 40 κάκει καθεῦδεν, σιτεῖσθαι δὲ παρὰ μίαν ἀφ’ ἧς

panions of Plotinus; he corrected the text of Antimachus and made the "Story of Atlantis"¹ into a very good poem. He became blind and died a little before the death of Plotinus: Paulinus also predeceased him. Another of his companions was Zethus, an Arab by race, who married the daughter of Theodosius, a friend of Ammonius. He was another medical man and a close friend of Plotinus, who kept trying to divert him from the affairs of state in which he was active and influential.² Plotinus was on terms of great intimacy with him and used to go and stay at his place in the country, six miles from Minturnae. This had formerly belonged to Castricius, surnamed Firmus, who was the greatest lover of beauty of all of us and venerated Plotinus. He was Amelius's faithful servant and helper in every need and as devoted to me, Porphyry, as if I was his own brother. He was again an admirer of Plotinus who had chosen a public career. A good many members of the Senate also attended his lectures, of whom Marcellus Orrontius and Sabinillus worked hardest at philosophy. There was also Rogatianus, a senator, who advanced so far in renunciation of public life that he gave up all his property, dismissed all his servants, and resigned his rank. When he was on the point of appearing in public as praetor and the lictors were already there, he refused to appear or have anything to do with the office. He would not even keep his own house to live in, but went the round of his friends and acquaintances, dining at one house and sleeping at another (but he only ate every other day). As a

¹ Presumably that in Plato's *Critias*.

² Or, possibly, "for he was fond of them and had leanings towards a statesman's life."

δὴ ἀποστάσεως καὶ ἀφροντιστίας τοῦ βίου ποδα-
 γρώντα μὲν οὕτως, ὡς καὶ δίφρῳ βαστάζεσθαι,
 ἀναρρωσθῆναι, τὰς χεῖρας δὲ ἐκτείνει μὴ οἶόν τε
 ὄντα χρῆσθαι ταύταις πολὺ μᾶλλον εὐμαρῶς ἢ οἱ
 τὰς τέχνας διὰ τῶν χειρῶν μεινόντες. Τοῦτον
 45 ἀπεδέχετο ὁ Πλωτῖνος καὶ ἐν τοῖς μάλιστα
 ἐπαινῶν διετέλει εἰς ἀγαθὸν παράδειγμα τοῖς
 φιλοσοφοῦσι προβαλλόμενος. Συνῆν δὲ καὶ Σερα-
 πίων Ἀλεξανδρεὺς ῥητορικὸς μὲν τὰ πρῶτα, μετὰ
 ταῦτα δὲ καὶ ἐπὶ φιλοσόφοις συνῶν λόγοις, τοῖ
 δὲ περὶ χρήματα καὶ τὸ δανείζειν μὴ δυνηθεῖς
 50 ἀποστήναι ἐλαττώματος. Ἔσχε δὲ καὶ ἐμὲ Πορφύ-
 ριον Τύριον ὄντα ἐν τοῖς μάλιστα ἐταῖρον, ὃν καὶ
 διορθοῦν αὐτοῦ τὰ συγγράμματα ἤξιον.

8. Γράψας γὰρ ἐκεῖνος δις τὸ γραφὲν μεταλα-
 βεῖν οὐδέποτε ἂν ἠνέσχετο, ἀλλ' οὐδέ ἅπαξ γοῦν
 ἀναγνῶναι καὶ διελθεῖν διὰ τὸ τὴν ὄρασιν μὴ
 ὑπηρετεῖσθαι αὐτῷ πρὸς τὴν ἀνάγνωσιν. Ἐγράφε
 5 δὲ οὔτε εἰς κάλλος ἀποτυπούμενος τὰ γράμματα
 οὔτε εὐσήμεως τὰς συλλαβὰς διαιρῶν οὔτε τῆς
 ὀρθογραφίας φροντίζων, ἀλλὰ μόνον τοῦ νοῦ
 ἐχόμενος καί, ὃ πάντες ἐθανμάζομεν, ἐκεῖνο ποιῶν
 ἄχρι τελευτῆς διετέλεσε. Συντελέσας γὰρ παρ'
 ἑαυτῷ ἀπ' ἀρχῆς ἄχρι τέλους τὸ σκέμμα, ἔπειτα
 10 εἰς γραφὴν παραδιδούς ἃ ἐσκέπτετο, συνείρεν
 οὕτω γράφων ἃ ἐν τῇ ψυχῇ διέθηκεν, ὡς ἀπὸ
 βιβλίου δοκεῖν μεταβάλλειν τὰ γραφόμενα· ἐπεὶ
 καὶ διαλεγόμενος πρὸς τινα καὶ συνείρων τὰς
 ὁμιλίας πρὸς τῷ σκέμματι ἦν, ὡς ἅμα ἀποπλη-
 ροῦν τὸ ἀναγκαῖον τῆς ὁμιλίας καὶ τῶν ἐν σκέψει
 15 προκειμένων ἀδιάκοποι τηρεῖν τὴν διάνοιαν
 ἀποστάντος γοῦν τοῦ προσδιαλεγομένου οὐδ'

result of this renunciation and indifference to the
 needs of life, though he had been so gouty that he
 had to be carried in a chair, he regained his health,
 and, though he had not been able to stretch out his
 hands, he became able to use them much more
 easily than professional handicraftsmen. Plotinus
 regarded him with great favour and praised him high-
 ly, and frequently held him up as an example to all
 who practised philosophy. Another companion was
 Serapion of Alexandria, who began as a rhetorician
 and afterwards took to the study of philosophy as well,
 but was unable to free himself from the degradation
 of finance and money-lending. I myself, Porphyry
 of Tyre, was one of Plotinus's closest friends, and
 he entrusted to me the editing of his writings.

8. When Plotinus had written anything he could
 never bear to go over it twice; even to read it
 through once was too much for him, as his eyesight
 did not serve him well for reading. In writing he did
 not form the letters with any regard to appearance or
 divide his syllables correctly, and he paid no attention
 to spelling. He was wholly concerned with thought;
 and, which surprised us all, he went on in this way
 right up to the end. He worked out his train of
 thought from beginning to end in his own mind, and
 then, when he wrote it down, since he had set it all
 in order in his mind, he wrote as continuously as if
 he was copying from a book. Even if he was talking
 to someone, engaged in continuous conversation, he
 kept to his train of thought. He could take his
 necessary part in the conversation to the full, and
 at the same time keep his mind fixed without a
 break on what he was considering. When the person
 he had been talking to was gone he did not go over

ἐπαναλαβῶν τὰ γεγραμμένα, διὰ τὸ μὴ ἐπαρκεῖν αὐτῷ πρὸς ἀνάληψιν, ὡς εἰρήκαμεν, τὴν ὄρασιν, τὰ ἐξῆς ἂν ἐπισυνῆψεν, ὡς μηδένα διαστήσας χρόνον μεταξὺ ὅτε τὴν ὁμιλίαν ἐποιεῖτο. Συνῆν οὖν
 20 καὶ ἑαυτῷ ἅμα καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις, καὶ τὴν γε πρὸς ἑαυτὸν προσοχὴν οὐκ ἂν ποτε ἐχάλασεν, ἢ μόνον ἐν τοῖς ὕπνοις, ὃν ἂν ἀπέκρουεν ἢ τε τῆς τροφῆς ὀλιγότης—οὐδὲ γὰρ ἄρτου πολλάκις ἂν ἤψατο—καὶ ἢ πρὸς τὸν νοῦν αὐτοῦ διαρκῆς ἐπιπροσφύ.

9. Ἔσχε δὲ καὶ γυναῖκας σφόδρα φιλοσοφία προσκειμένας, Γεμίαν τε, ἧς καὶ ἐν οἰκίᾳ κατώκει, καὶ τὴν ταύτης θυγατέρα Γεμίαν, ὁμοίως τῇ μητρὶ καλουμένην, Ἀμφίκλειάν τε τὴν Ἀρίστωνος τοῦ
 5 Ἰαμβλίχου υἱοῦ γεγονυῖαν γυναῖκα[σφόδρα φιλοσοφία προσκειμένας]. Πολλοὶ δὲ καὶ ἄνδρες καὶ γυναῖκες ἀποθνήσκουν μέλλοντες τῶν εὐγενεστάτων φέροντες τὰ ἑαυτῶν τέκνα, ἄρρενάς τε ὁμοῦ καὶ θηλείας, ἐκείνῳ παρεδίδοσαν μετὰ τῆς ἄλλης οὐσίας ὡς ἱερῷ τινι καὶ θεῷ φύλακι. Διὸ
 10 καὶ ἐπεπλήρωτο αὐτῷ ἡ οἰκία παίδων καὶ παρθένων. Ἐν τούτοις δὲ ἦν καὶ Ποτάμων, οὗ τῆς παιδείσεως φροντίζων πολλάκις ἐν καὶ μεταποιούντος ἠκροάσατο. Ἠνεύχετο δὲ καὶ τοὺς λογισμοὺς, ἀναφερόντων τῶν ἐν ἐκείνοις παραμενόντων, καὶ τῆς ἀκριβείας ἐπεμελεῖτο λέγων, ἕως ἂν μὴ
 15 φιλοσοφῶσιν, ἔχειν αὐτοὺς δεῖν τὰς κτήσεις καὶ τὰς προσόδους ἀνεπάφοις τε καὶ ἀσφισόμενας. Καὶ ὅμως τοσοῦτοις ἐπαρκῶν τὰς εἰς τὸν βίον φροντίδας τε καὶ ἐπιμελείας τὴν πρὸς τὸν νοῦν τάσιν οὐδέποτε ἂν ἐργηγορότως ἐχάλασεν. Ἦν δὲ καὶ πρῶτος καὶ

¹ Or, possibly, "repeating the multiplication table." This meaning for *πολλάκις ἐν*, though it does not seem to occur else-

what he had written, because his sight, as I have said, did not suffice for revision. He went straight on with what came next, keeping the connection, just as if there had been no interval of conversation between. In this way he was present at once to himself and to others, and he never relaxed his self-turned attention except in sleep: even sleep he reduced by taking very little food, often not even a piece of bread, and by his continuous turning in contemplation to his intellect.

2. There were women, too, who were greatly devoted to philosophy: Gemina, in whose house he lived, and her daughter Gemina, who had the same name as her mother, and Amphiclea, who became the wife of Ariston, son of Iamblichus. Many men and women of the highest rank, on the approach of death, brought him their children, both boys and girls, and entrusted them to him along with all their property, considering that he would be a holy and god-like guardian. So his house was full of young lads and maidens, including Potamon, to whose education he gave serious thought, and would even listen to him revising the same lesson again and again.¹ He patiently attended to the accounts of their property when their trustees submitted them, and took care that they should be accurate; he used to say that as long as they did not take to philosophy their properties and incomes must be kept safe and untouched for them. Yet, though he shielded so many from the worries and cares of ordinary life, he never, while awake, relaxed his intent concentration upon the intellect. He was gentle, too, and at the where, would give a better sense than any rendering or emendation so far put forward.

20 πᾶσιν ἐκκείμενος τοῖς ὁπωσοῦν πρὸς αὐτὸν
 συνήθειαν ἐσχηκόσι. Διὸ εἴκοσι καὶ ἕξ ἔτων
 ὄλων ἐν τῇ Ῥώμῃ διατρίψας καὶ πλείστοις
 διαιτήσας τὰς πρὸς ἀλλήλους ἀμφισβητήσεις
 οὐδένα τῶν πολιτικῶν ἐχθρὸν ποτε ἔσχε.

10. Ἰῶν δὲ φιλοσοφεῖν προσποιουμένων Ὀλύμ-
 πιος Ἀλεξανδρεὺς, Ἀμμωνίου ἐπ' ὀλίγον μαθητῆς
 γενόμενος, καταφρονητικῶς πρὸς αὐτὸν ἔσχε διὰ
 φιλοπρωτίαν· ὃς καὶ οὕτως αὐτῷ ἐπέθετο, ὥστε
 5 καὶ ἀστροβολῆσαι αὐτὸν μαγεύσας ἐπεχείρησεν.
 Ἐπεὶ δὲ εἰς ἑαυτὸν στρεφομένην ἦσθετο τὴν
 ἐπιχείρησιν, ἔλεγε πρὸς τοὺς συνήθεις μεγάλην
 εἶναι τὴν τῆς ψυχῆς τοῦ Πλωτίνου δύναμιν, ὡς
 ὀποκρούειν δύνασθαι τὰς εἰς ἑαυτὸν ἐπιφορὰς εἰς
 τοὺς κακοῦν αὐτὸν ἐπιχειροῦντας. Πλωτίνος μέν-
 10 ται τοῦ Ὀλυμπίου ἐγχειροῦντος ἀντελαμβάνετο
 λέγων αὐτῷ τὸ σῶμα τότε ὡς τὰ σύσπαστα
 βάλαντια ἔλκεσθαι τῶν μελῶν αὐτῷ πρὸς ἀλλήλα
 συνθλιβομένων. Κινδυνεύσας δὲ ὁ Ὀλύμπιος πολ-
 λάκις αὐτὸς τι παθεῖν ἢ δράσαι τὸν Πλωτίνον
 ἐπαύσατο. Ἦν γὰρ καὶ κατὰ γένεσιν πλέον τι
 15 ἔχων παρὰ τοὺς ἄλλους ὁ Πλωτίνος. Αἰγύπτιος
 γὰρ τις ἱερεὺς ἀνελθὼν εἰς τὴν Ῥώμην καὶ διὰ
 τινος φίλου αὐτῷ γνωρισθεὶς θέλων τε τῆς ἑαυτοῦ
 σοφίας ἀπόδειξιν δοῦναι ἠξίωσε τὸν Πλωτίνον ἐπὶ
 θέαν ἀφικέσθαι τοῦ συνόντος αὐτῷ οἰκείου δαίμονος
 καλουμένου. Τοῦ δὲ ἐτοίμως ὑπακούσαντος γίνεται
 20 μὲν ἐν τῷ Ἰσίῳ ἢ κλήσις· μόνον γὰρ ἐκείνον τὸν

¹ On the details of Porphyry's account of this curious episode see E. R. Dodds, *The Greeks and the Irrational*. Appendix II, iii, *A Séance in the Iseum*. Since Porphyry connects the writing of the treatise *On Our Allotted Guardian Spirit* (III. 4) with the affair, it must have taken place before
 32

disposal of all who had any sort of acquaintance with him. Though he spent twenty-six whole years in Rome and acted as arbitrator in very many people's disputes, he never made an enemy of any of the officials.

10. One of those claiming to be philosophers, Olympius of Alexandria, who had been for a short time a pupil of Ammonius, adopted a superior attitude towards Plotinus out of rivalry. This man's attacks on him went to the point of trying to bring a star-stroke upon him by magic. But when he found his attempt recoiling upon himself, he told his intimates that the soul of Plotinus had such great power as to be able to throw back attacks on him on to those who were seeking to do him harm. Plotinus was aware of the attempt and said that his limbs on that occasion were squeezed together and his body contracted "like a money-bag pulled tight." Olympius, since he was often rather in danger of suffering something himself than likely to injure Plotinus, ceased his attacks. Plotinus certainly possessed by birth something more than other men. An Egyptian priest who came to Rome and made his acquaintance through a friend wanted to give a display of his occult wisdom and asked Plotinus to come and see a visible manifestation of his own companion spirit evoked. Plotinus readily consented, and the evocation took place in the temple of Isis:¹ the Egyptian

his own arrival in Rome, when he found that treatise already written (ch. 4) and his account of it must be based on hearsay evidence. The treatise which Porphyry regards as prompted by it has in fact nothing to do with theurgic conjurations of this sort. As so often in the *Enneads*, Plotinus takes a popular religious or superstitious belief as his starting-point and transforms it into something quite different in bringing it into line with his own philosophy.

τόπον καθαρὸν φῆσαι εὐρεῖν ἐν τῇ Ῥώμῃ τὸν Αἰγύπτιον. Κληθέντα δὲ εἰς αὐτοψίαν τὸν δαίμονα θεὸν ἔλθειν καὶ μὴ τοῦ δαιμόνων εἶναι γένους· ὅθεν τὸν Αἰγύπτιον εἶπεῖν “μακάριος εἰ θεὸν ἔχων τὸν δαίμονα καὶ οὐ τοῦ ὑφειμένου γένους τὸν
 25 συνόντα.” Μήτε δὲ ἐρέσθαι τι ἐκγενέσθαι μήτε ἐπιπλέον ἰδεῖν παρόντα τοῦ συνθεωροῦντος φίλου τὰς ὄρνεις, αἷ κατεῖχε φυλακῆς ἕνεκα, πνίξαντος εἴτε διὰ φθόνου εἴτε καὶ διὰ φόβον τινά. Τῶν οὖν θειοτέρων δαιμόνων ἔχων τὸν συνόντα καὶ αὐτὸς
 30 διετέλει ἀνάγων αὐτοῦ τὸ θεῖον ὄμμα πρὸς ἐκείνον.” Ἔστι γοῦν αὐτῷ ἀπὸ τῆς τοιαύτης αἰτίας καὶ βιβλίον γραφὴν “Περὶ τοῦ εἰληχότου ἡμῶς δαίμονος”, ὅπου πειράται αἰτίας φέρειν περὶ τῆς διαφορᾶς τῶν συνόντων. Φιλοθύτου δὲ γεγονότος τοῦ Ἀμελίου καὶ τὰ ἱερὰ κατὰ νοιμη-
 νίαν καὶ τὰς ἐορτὰς ἐκπεριόντος καὶ ποτε ἀξιούντος
 35 τὸν Πλωτῖνον σὺν αὐτῷ παραλαβεῖν ἔφη· “ἐκεί-
 νους δεῖ πρὸς ἐμὲ ἔρχεσθαι, οὐκ ἐμὲ πρὸς ἐκείνους.”
 Τοῦτο δὲ ἐκ ποίας διανοίας οὕτως ἐμεγαληγόρησεν, οὗτ’ αὐτοὶ συνεῖναι δεδυνήμεθα οὗτ’ αὐτὸν ἐρέσθαι ἐτολμήσαμεν.

¹ If Plotinus had anything more in mind when he said this than a determination to stop Amelius bothering him, it may have been something like the view of the sort of spirits who

said it was the only pure spot he could find in Rome. When the spirit was summoned to appear a god came and not a being of the spirit order, and the Egyptian said, “Blessed are you, who have a god for your spirit and not a companion of the subordinate order.” It was not however possible to ask any questions of the god or even to see him present for longer, as the friend who was taking part in the manifestation strangled the birds which he was holding as a protection, either out of jealousy or because he was afraid of something. So the companion of Plotinus was a spirit of the more god-like kind, and he continually kept the divine eye of his soul fixed on this companion. It was a reason of this kind that led him to write the treatise “On Our Allotted Guardian Spirit,” in which he sets out to explain the differences between spirit-companions. When Amelius grew ritualistic and took to going round visiting the temples at the New Moon and the feasts of the gods and once asked if he could take Plotinus along, Plotinus said, “They ought to come to me, not I to them.”¹ What he meant by this exalted utterance we could not understand and did not dare to ask.

attend sacrifices which is to be found in Porphyry’s *De Abstinencia* II. 37–43; i.e., that they are δαίμονες, sublunary spirits of the lowest rank, and those of them who delight in blood-sacrifices are thoroughly evil δαίμονες. This crowd of lower spirits the philosopher, who lives on the level of Intellect and has the One for his guardian spirit (III. 4. 6), naturally regards as his inferiors, so that it is their duty to attend on him, not his on them. But there are higher ranks of divinities in the Platonic universe, and there is no suggestion, here or in the *Enneads*, that Plotinus thought himself superior to them.

11. Περιῆν δὲ αὐτῷ τοσαύτη περιουσία ἡθῶν
κατανοήσεως, ὡς κλυτῆς ποτε γεγονυίας πολυτε-
λοῦς περιδεραίου Χιόνης, ἣτις αὐτῷ συνώκει μετὰ
τῶν τέκνων σεμνῶς τὴν χηρείαν διεξάγουσα, καὶ
5 ὑπ' ὄψιν τοῦ Πλωτίνου τῶν οἰκετῶν συνηγμένων
ἐμβλέψας ἅπασιν· οὗτος, ἔφη, ἐστὶν ὁ κεκλοφώς,
δείξας ἓνα τινά. Μαστιζόμενος δὲ ἐκεῖνος καὶ
ἐπιπλεῖον ἀρνούμενος τὰ πρῶτα ὑστερον ὠμολόγησε
καὶ φέρων τὸ κλαπέν ἀπέδωκε. Προεῖπε δ' ἂν
καὶ τῶν συνόντων παιδῶν περὶ ἐκάστου οἶος
10 ἀποβήσεται· ὡς καὶ περὶ τοῦ Πολέμωνος οἶος
ἔσται, ὅτι ἐρωτικός ἔσται καὶ ὀλιγοχρόνιος, ὅπερ
καὶ ἀπέβη. Καὶ ποτε ἐμοῦ Πορφυρίου ἡσθετο
ἐξάγειν ἐμαυτὸν διανοουμένου τοῦ βίου· καὶ
ἐξαίφνης ἐπιστάς μοι ἐν τῷ οἴκῳ διατρίβοντι καὶ
εἰπὼν μὴ εἶναι ταύτην τὴν προθυμίαν ἐκ νοεῶς
15 καταστάσεως, ἀλλ' ἐκ μελαγχολικῆς τινος νόσου,
ἀποδημήσαι ἐκέλευε. Πεισθεὶς δὲ αὐτῷ ἐγὼ εἰς
τὴν Σικελίαν ἀφικόμην Πρόβον τινὰ ἀκούων
ἐλλόγιμον ἄνδρα περὶ τὸ Λιλύβαιον διατρίβειν·
καὶ αὐτὸς τε τῆς τοιαύτης προθυμίας ἀπεσχόμεν
τοῦ τε παρῆναι ἄχρι θανάτου τῷ Πλωτίνῳ
ἐνεποδίσθη.

12. Ἐτίμησαν δὲ τὸν Πλωτῖνον μάλιστα καὶ
ἐσεφθησαν Γαλιήνός τε ὁ αὐτοκράτωρ καὶ ἡ
τούτου γυνὴ Σαλωνίνα. Ὁ δὲ τῇ φιλίᾳ τῇ
τούτων καταχρώμενος φιλοσόφων τινὰ πόλιν κατὰ
5 τὴν Καμπανίαν γεγενῆσθαι λεγομένην, ἄλλως δὲ
κατηριπωμένην, ἡξίου ἀνεγείρειν καὶ τὴν πέριξ
χώραν χαρίσασθαι οἰκισθεῖσιν τῇ πόλει, νόμοις δὲ
χρήσθαι τοὺς κατοικεῖν μέλλοντας τοῖς Πλάτωνος

11. He had a surpassing degree of penetration
into character. Once a valuable necklace was stolen,
belonging to Chione, who lived with her children in his
house in honourable widowhood. The slaves of the
house were assembled before the eyes of Plotinus,
and he looked carefully at them all; then, pointing
to one man he said, "This is the thief." The man
was flogged, and persisted at first in denial, but
finally confessed and gave back what he had stolen.
He was, too, in the habit of foretelling how each of
the children who lived with him would turn out;
that Polemon, for instance, would be amorous and
short-lived, as he actually was. He once noticed
that I, Porphyry, was thinking of removing myself
from this life. He came to me unexpectedly while
I was staying indoors in my house and told me that
this lust for death did not come from a settled
rational decision but from a bilious indisposition,
and urged me to go away for a holiday. I obeyed
him and went to Sicily, since I had heard that a dis-
tinguished man called Probus was living near Lily-
baeum. So I was brought to abandon my longing
for death and prevented from staying with Plotinus
to the end.

12. The Emperor Gallienus and his wife Salonina
greatly honoured and venerated Plotinus. He
tried to make full use of their friendship: there
was said to have been in Campania a city of philo-
sophers which had fallen into ruin; this he asked
them to revive, and to present the surrounding
territory to the city when they had founded it.
Those who settled there were to live according to

¹Joint emperor with Valerian 253-60, sole emperor
260-68.

καὶ τὴν προσηγορίαν αὐτῇ Πλατωνόπολιν θέσθαι, ἐκεῖ τε αὐτὸς μετὰ τῶν ἐταίρων ἀναχωρήσειν
 10 ὑπισχνεῖτο. Καὶ ἐγένετ' ἂν τὸ βούλημα ἐκ τοῦ
 ῥάστου τῷ φιλοσόφῳ, εἰ μὴ τινες τῶν συνόντων
 τῷ βασιλεῖ φθονοῦντες ἢ νεμεσῶντες ἢ δι' ἄλλην
 μοχθηρὰν αἰτίαν ἐνεπόδισαν.

13. Γέγονε δ' ἐν ταῖς συνουσίαις φράσαι μὲν
 ἰκανὸς καὶ εὐρεῖν καὶ νοῆσαι τὰ πρόσφορα δυνατώ-
 5 τatos, ἐν δέ τισι λέξεσιν ἁμαρτάνων· οὐ γὰρ ἂν
 εἶπεν “ἀναμνησκέται”, ἀλλὰ “ἀναμνημίσκε-
 5 ται”, καὶ ἄλλα τινὰ παράσημα ὀνόματα ἃ καὶ
 ἐν τῷ γράφειν ἐτήρει. Ἦν δ' ἐν τῷ λέγειν ἢ
 ἔνδειξις τοῦ νοῦ ἄχρι τοῦ προσώπου αὐτοῦ τὸ
 φῶς ἐπιλάμποντος· ἐράσμιος μὲν ὀφθῆναι, καλ-
 λίων δὲ τότε μάλιστα ὁρώμενος· καὶ λεπτός τις
 ἰδρῶς ἐπέθει καὶ ἡ πραότης διέλαμπε καὶ τὸ
 10 προσηγνὲς πρὸς τὰς ἐρωτήσεις ἐδείκνυτο καὶ τὸ
 εὐτονον. Τριῶν γοῦν ἡμερῶν ἐμοῦ Πορφυρίου
 ἐρωτήσαντος, πῶς ἢ ψυχὴ σύνεστι τῷ σώματι,
 παρέτεινε ἀποδεικνύς, ὥστε καὶ Θαυμασίου τινὸς
 τοῦνομα ἐπεισελθόντος τοὺς καθόλου λόγους πρᾶτ-
 15 θέλειν, Πορφυρίου δὲ ἀποκρινομένου καὶ ἐρωτῶντος
 μὴ ἀνασχέσθαι, ὁ δὲ ἔφη· “ἀλλὰ ἂν μὴ Πορ-
 φυρίου ἐρωτῶντος λύσωμεν τὰς ἀπορίας, εἰπεῖν τι
 καθάπαξ εἰς τὸ βιβλίον οὐ δυνασόμεθα.”

14. Ἐν δὲ τῷ γράφειν σύντομος γέγονε καὶ
 πολύνους βραχύς τε καὶ νοήμασι πλεονάζων ἢ

¹ Though *laws* with a small *l* seems to be required in the translation, there can be little doubt that the constitution of Platonopolis was to be that of the “second-best state”

the laws of Plato,¹ and it was to be called Platonopolis; and he undertook to move there with his companions. The philosopher would easily have gained his wish if some of the courtiers, moved by jealousy, spite, or some such mean motive, had not prevented it.

13. In the meetings of the school he showed an adequate command of language and the greatest power of discovering and considering what was relevant to the subject in hand, but he made mistakes in certain words: he did not say *anamnesketai* but *anamnemisketai* and made other slips which he also constantly committed in his writing. When he was speaking his intellect visibly lit up his face: there was always a charm about his appearance, but at these times he was still more attractive to look at: he sweated gently, and kindness shone out from him, and in answering questions he made clear both his benevolence to the questioner and his intellectual vigour. Once I, Porphyry, went on asking him for three days about the soul's connection with the body, and he kept on explaining to me. A man called Thaumasius came in who was interested in general statements and said that he wanted to hear Plotinus speaking in the manner of a set treatise, but could not stand Porphyry's questions and answers. Plotinus said, “But if when Porphyry asks questions we do not solve his difficulties we shall not be able to say anything at all to put into the treatise”.

14. In writing he is concise and full of thought. He puts things shortly and abounds more in ideas described in Plato's *Laws*, rather than the ideal, but in Plato's own opinion unrealisable, constitution of the *Republic*.

λέξεσι, τὰ πολλὰ ἐνθουσιῶν καὶ ἐκπαθῶς φράζων
 † καὶ τὸ συμπαθείας ἢ παραδόσεως †. Ἐμμέμικται
 5 δ' ἐν τοῖς συγγράμμασι καὶ τὰ Στωικὰ λανθάνοντα
 δόγματα καὶ τὰ Περιπατητικά· καταπεπύκνωται
 δὲ καὶ ἡ "Μετὰ τὰ φυσικά" τοῦ Ἀριστοτέλους
 πραγματεία. Ἐλαθε δὲ αὐτὸν οὔτε γεωμετρικόν
 τι λεγόμενον θεώρημα οὔτ' ἀριθμητικόν, οὐ
 μηχανικόν, οὐκ ὀπτικόν, οὐ μουσικόν· αὐτὸς δὲ
 10 ταῦτα ἐξεργάζεσθαι οὐ παρεσκεύαστο. Ἐν δὲ
 ταῖς συνουσίαις ἀνεγινώσκετο μὲν αὐτῷ τὰ
 ὑπομνήματα, εἴτε Σεβήρου εἴη, εἴτε Κρονίου ἢ
 Νουμηνίου ἢ Γαίου ἢ Ἀττικοῦ, κὰν τοῖς Περιπατη-
 τικοῖς τὰ τε Ἀσπασίου καὶ Ἀλεξάνδρου Ἀδράστου
 τε καὶ τῶν ἐμπεσόντων. Ἐλέγετο δὲ ἐκ τούτων
 15 οὐδὲν καθάπαξ, ἀλλ' ἴδιος ἦν καὶ ἐξηλλαγμένος
 ἐν τῇ θεωρίᾳ καὶ τὸν Ἀμμωνίου φέρων νοῦν ἐν
 ταῖς ἐξετάσεσιν. Ἐπληροῦτο δὲ ταχέως καὶ δι'
 ὀλίγων δούς νοῦν βαθέος θεωρήματος ἀνίστατο.
 Ἀναγνωσθέντος δὲ αὐτῷ τοῦ τε "Περὶ ἀρχῶν"
 Λογγίνου καὶ τοῦ "Φιλαρχαίου", "φιλόλογος"
 20 μὲν", ἔφη, "ὁ Λογγίνος, φιλόσοφος δὲ οὐδαμῶς".
 Ὡριγένους δὲ ἀπαντήσαντός ποτε εἰς τὴν συνουσίαν
 πληρωθεὶς ἐρυθήματος ἀνίστασθαι μὲν ἐβούλετο,

¹ On Severus, Cronius, Numenius, Gaius and Atticus, see John Dillon *The Middle Platonists* (Duckworth, London 1977). Atticus was the chief representative of the anti-Aristotelian group among the Middle Platonists. Cronius and Numenius are usually mentioned together and classed as Pythagoreans, though the boundary between Platonists and Pythagoreans was ill-defined, and Porphyry here quite naturally groups them with the Platonists. Numenius (late 2nd century) was

than in words; he generally expresses himself in a tone of rapt inspiration, and states what he himself really feels about the matter and not what has been handed down by tradition. His writings, however, are full of concealed Stoic and Peripatetic doctrines. Aristotle's *Metaphysics*, in particular, is concentrated in them. He had a complete knowledge of geometry, arithmetic, mechanics, optics and music, but was not disposed to apply himself to detailed research in these subjects. In the meetings of the school he used to have the commentaries read, perhaps of Severus, perhaps of Cronius or Numenius or Gaius or Atticus, and among the Peripatetics of Aspasius, Alexander, Adrastus, and others that were available.¹ But he did not just speak straight out of these books but took a distinctive personal line in his consideration, and brought the mind of Ammonius to bear on the investigations in hand. He quickly absorbed what was read, and would give the sense of some profound subject of study in a few words and pass on. When Longinus's² work *On Principles* and his *Lover of Antiquity* were read to him, he said, "Longinus is a scholar, but certainly not a philosopher." When Origen³ once came to a meeting of the school he was filled with embarrassment and one of the most important philosophers of the generation before Plotinus, who was sometimes accused of plagiarising his thought (see below, ch. 17). Alexander of Aphrodisias (head of the Peripatetic school at Athens at the beginning of the 3rd century) was the greatest of the ancient commentators on Aristotle. Aspasius and Adrastus were Aristotelian commentators of the 2nd century. This passage shows clearly how scholarly and professional a philosopher Plotinus was and how he worked, though with great originality, on the basis of an extensive school tradition.

² For Longinus see below, ch. 19 n.1. ³ See note on ch. 3.

λέγειν δὲ ὑπὸ Ὀριγένους ἀξιούμενος ἔφη ἀνίλ-
 λεσθαι τὰς πρυθυμίας, ὅταν ἴδῃ ὁ λέγων, ὅτι
 πρὸς εἰδότας ἐρὶ αὐτὸς λέγειν μέλλει· καὶ
 25 οὕτως ὀλίγα διαλεχθεὶς ἔξανέστη.

15. Ἐμοῦ δὲ ἐν Πλατωνείοις ποίημα ἀναγνόντος
 “Τὸν ἱερὸν γάμον”, καὶ τινος διὰ τὸ μυστικῶς
 πολλὰ μετ’ ἐνθουσιασμοῦ ἐπικεκρυμμένως εἰρησθαι
 εἰπόντος μαίνεσθαι τὸν Πορφύριον, ἐκείνος εἰς
 5 ἐπήκοον ἔφη πάντων· “ἔδειξας ὑμοῦ καὶ τὸν
 ποιητὴν καὶ τὸν φιλόσοφον καὶ τὸν ἱεροφάντην.”
 “Ὅτε δὲ ὁ ῥήτωρ Διοφάνης ἀέγνων ὑπὲρ Ἀλκι-
 βιάδου τοῦ ἐν τῷ “Συμποσίῳ” τοῦ Πλάτωνος
 ἀπολογία ἀποδοξάζων χρήναι ἀρετῆς ἕνεκα μαθή-
 10 σεως εἰς συνουσίαν αὐτὸν παρέχειν ἐρῶντι ἀφρο-
 δισίῳ μίξεως τῷ καθηγεμόνι, ἤιξε μὲν πολλάκις
 ἀναστὰς ἀπαλλαγῆναι τῆς συνόδου, ἐπισχῶν δ’
 ἑαυτὸν μετὰ τὴν διάλυσιν τοῦ ἀκουστηρίου ἐμοὶ
 Πορφυρίῳ ἀντιγράψαι προσέταξε. Μὴ θέλοντος
 δὲ τοῦ Διοφάνους τὸ βιβλίον δοῦναι διὰ τῆς
 15 μνήμης ἀναληφθέντων τῶν ἐπιχειρημάτων ἀντι-
 γράψας ἐγὼ καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν αὐτῶν ἀκροατῶν συνη-
 μένων ἀναγνοὺς τοσοῦτον τὸν Πλωτῖνον ἠΰφρανα,
 ὡς καὶ ταῖς συνουσίαις συνεχῶς ἐπιλέγειν·

“Βάλλ’ οὕτως, αἴ κέν τι φῶς ἄνδρεςσι γένηαι.”
 Γράφοντος δὲ Εὐβούλου Ἀθήνηθεν τοῦ Πλατωνι-
 20 κοῦ διαδόχου καὶ πέμποντος συγγράμματα ὑπὲρ
 τῶν Πλατωνικῶν ζητημάτων ἐμοὶ Πορφυρίῳ
 ταῦτα δίδοσθαι ἐποίει καὶ σκοπεῖν καὶ ἀναφέρειν
 αὐτῷ τὰ γεγραμμένα ἡξίου. Προσείχε δὲ τοῖς
 μὲν περὶ τῶν ἀστέρων κανόνων οὐ πᾶν τι μαθημα-

¹ Iliad 8.282 (with ἄνδρεςσι for Δαναοῖσι).

wanted to stop lecturing, and when Origen urged
 him to continue he said, “It damps one’s enthusiasm
 for speaking when one sees that one’s audience
 knows already what one is going to say”; and after
 talking for a little while he brought the session to an
 end.

15. At Plato’s feast I read a poem, “The Sacred
 Marriage”; and because much in it was expressed
 in the mysterious and veiled language of inspiration
 someone said, “Porphyry is mad.” But Plotinus
 said, so as to be heard by all, “You have shown
 yourself at once poet, philosopher, and expounder
 of sacred mysteries.” The rhetorician Diophanes
 read a defence of Alcibiades in Plato’s “Banquet”
 in which he asserted that a pupil for the sake of
 advancing in the study of virtue should submit
 himself to carnal intercourse with his master if the
 master desired it. Plotinus repeatedly started up
 to leave the meeting, but restrained himself, and
 after the end of the lecture gave me, Porphyry, the
 task of writing a refutation. Diophanes refused to
 lend me his manuscript, and I depended in writing
 my refutation on my memory of his arguments.
 When I read it before the same assembled hearers I
 pleased Plotinus so much that he kept on quoting
 during the meeting, “So strike and be a light to
 men.”¹

Eubulus the Platonic Successor wrote to him from
 Athens and sent treatises on some Platonic questions.
 Plotinus had them given to me, Porphyry, with
 instructions to consider them and submit my notes
 on them to him.

He studied the rules of astronomy, without going
 very far into the mathematical side, but went more

τικῶς, τοῖς δὲ τῶν γενεθλιαλόγων ἀποτελεσμα-
 τικοῖς ἀκριβέστερον. Καὶ φωράσας τῆς ἐπαγγε-
 25 λίας τὸ ἀνεχέγγυον ἐλέγχειν πολλὰ τῶν ἐν τοῖς
 συγγράμμασιν οὐκ ᾤκησε.

16. Γεγόνασι δὲ κατ' αὐτὸν τῶν Χριστιανῶν
 πολλοὶ μὲν καὶ ἄλλοι, αἰρετικοὶ δὲ ἐκ τῆς παλαιᾶς
 φιλοσοφίας ἀνηγμένοι οἱ περὶ Ἀδέλφιον καὶ
 Ἀκυλῖνον οἱ τὰ Ἀλεξάνδρου τοῦ Λίβυος καὶ
 Φιλοκόμου καὶ Δημοστράτου καὶ Λυδοῦ συγ-
 5 γράμματα πλείστα κεκτημένοι ἀποκαλύψεις τε
 προφέροντες Ζωροάστρου καὶ Ζωστριανοῦ καὶ
 Νικουθέου καὶ Ἀλλογενούς καὶ Μέσσου καὶ ἄλλων
 τοιούτων πολλοὺς ἐξηπάτων καὶ αὐτοὶ ἠπατημένοι,
 ὡς δὴ ποῦ Πλάτωνος εἰς τὸ βάθος τῆς νοητῆς
 οὐσίας οὐ πελάσαντος. Ὅθεν αὐτὸς μὲν πολλοὺς
 10 ἐλέγχους ποιούμενος ἐν ταῖς συνουσίαις, γράφας δὲ
 καὶ βιβλίον ὅπερ "Πρὸς τοὺς Γνωστικούς"
 ἐπεγράψαμεν, ἡμῖν τὰ λοιπὰ κρίνειν καταλέλοιπεν.
 Ἀμέλιος δὲ ἄχρι τεσσαράκοντα βιβλίων προκε-
 χάρηκε πρὸς τὸ Ζωστριανοῦ βιβλίον ἀντιγράφειν.
 15 Πορφύριος δὲ ἐγὼ πρὸς τὸ Ζωροάστρου συχνοὺς
 πεπρωίμαι ἐλέγχους. Ὅλως νόθον τε καὶ νέον τὸ
 βιβλίον παραδεικνύς πεπλασμένον τε ὑπὸ τῶν τῆν
 αἵρεσιν συστησαμένων εἰς δόξαν τοῦ εἶναι τοῦ
 παλαιοῦ Ζωροάστρου τὰ δόγματα, ἃ αὐτοὶ εἶλοντο
 πρὸς βεβεῖν.

17. Τῶν δ' ἀπὸ τῆς Ἑλλάδος τὰ Νομηγίου
 αὐτὸν ὑποβάλλεσθαι λεγόντων καὶ τοῦτο πρὸς

¹ Cp. *Enn.* II. 3. *Whether the Stars are Causes.*

² These sectaries were Gnostics. It is very likely that we now have some of the works to which Porphyry here refers.

carefully into the methods of the casters of horo-
 scopes. When he had detected the unreliability
 of their alleged results he did not hesitate to
 attack many of the statements made in their
 writings.¹

16. There were in his time many Christians and
 others, and sectarians who had abandoned the old
 philosophy, men of the schools of Adelfhius and
 Aculinus, who possessed a great many treatises of
 Alexander the Libyan and Philocomus and Demo-
 stratus and Lydus, and produced revelations
 by Zoroaster and Zostrianus and Nicotheus and
 Allogenes and Messus and other people of the kind,²
 deceived themselves and deceiving many, alleging
 that Plato had not penetrated to the depths of in-
 telligible reality. Plotinus hence often attacked
 their position in his lectures, and wrote the treatise
 to which we have given the title "Against the
 Gnostics";³ he left it to us to assess what he
 passed over. Amelius went to forty volumes in
 writing against the book of Zostrianus. I, Porphyry,
 wrote a considerable number of refutations of the
 book of Zoroaster, which I showed to be entirely
 spurious and modern, made up by the sectarians to
 convey the impression that the doctrines which they
 had chosen to hold in honour were those of the
 ancient Zoroaster.

—17. When the people from Greece began to say
 that Plotinus was appropriating the ideas of

The collection of Gnostic books found at Nag Hammadi in Upper Egypt in 1945 includes "Revelations" attributed to Allogenes (the Foreigner, a Gnostic name for Seth), Zostrianus, Messus, and possibly Zoroaster.

³ II. 9.

Ἀμέλιον ἀγγέλλοντος Τρύφωνος τοῦ Στωικοῦ τε
καὶ Πλατωνικοῦ γέγραψεν ὁ Ἀμέλιος βιβλίον ὃ
5 ἐπεγράψαμεν "Περὶ τῆς κατὰ τὰ δόγματα τοῦ
Πλωτίνου πρὸς τὸν Νουμήνιον διαφορᾶς", προσ-
εφώνησε δὲ αὐτὸ Βασιλεῖ ἐμοί· Βασιλεὺς δὲ
τοῦνομα τῷ Πορφυρίῳ ἐμοὶ προσῆν, κατὰ μὲν
πάτριον διάλεκτον Μάλκῳ κεκλημένῳ, ὅπερ μοι
καὶ ὁ πατὴρ ὄνομα κέκλητο, τοῦ δὲ Μάλκου
10 ἐρμηνείαν ἔχοντος βασιλεὺς, εἴ τις εἰς Ἑλληνίδι
διάλεκτον μεταβάλλειν ἐθέλοι. "Ὅθεν ὁ Λογγίνος
μὲν προσφωνῶν τὰ "Περὶ ὁρμῆς" Κλεοδάμῳ
τε καὶ μοὶ Πορφυρίῳ "Κλεοδάμῃ τε καὶ Μάλκῃ"
προῦγραψεν· ὁ δ' Ἀμέλιος ἐρμηνεύσας τοῦνομα,
ὡς ὁ Νουμήνιος τὸν Μάξιμον εἰς τὸν Μεγάλον,
15 οὕτω τὸν Μάλκον οὗτος εἰς τὸν Βασιλέα, γράφει·
"Ἀμέλιος Βασιλεῖ εὖ πράττειν. Αὐτῶν μὲν
ἕνεκα τῶν πανευφήμεων ἀνδρῶν, οὓς διατεθρυλ-
ληκέναι ἐς ἑαυτὸν φῆς, τὰ τοῦ ἐταίρου ἡμῶν
δόγματα εἰς τὸν Ἀπαμέα Νουμήνιον ἀναγόντων,
οὐκ ἂν προηκάμην φωνήν, σαφῶς ἐπίστασο.
20 Δῆλον γὰρ ὅτι καὶ τοῦτο ἐκ τῆς παρ' αὐτοῖς
ἀγαλλομένης προελήλυθεν εὐστομίας τε καὶ εὐγλωτ-
τίας, νῦν μὲν ὅτι πλατὺς φλόγαφος, αὐθις δὲ ὅτι
ὑποβολιμαῖος, ἐκ τρίτων δὲ ὅτι καὶ τὰ φαυλότατα
τῶν ὄντων ὑποβαλλόμενος, τῷ διασιλλαίνειν αὐτὸν

¹ In fact, the system of Numenius, as far as we know it from scattered quotations and references in later authors, shows some resemblances to that of Plotinus, notably in its descending hierarchy of three gods, the Supreme Good or Mind, the Second Mind, and the cosmos conceived as an ensouled divine being. But there are also most important differences in the way Plotinus conceives his Three Hypostases

Numenius,¹ and Trypho the Stoic and Platonist told Amelius, the latter wrote a book to which we gave the title "On the Difference between the Doctrines of Plotinus and Numenius." He dedicated it to me under the name of Basileus [King]. Basileus was in fact my name, for in my native language I was called Malcus (my father's name), and if one translates Malcus into Greek it is interpreted as Basileus. So when Longinus dedicated his work "On Impulse" to me, Porphyry, and Cleodamus, he began his preface "My dear Cleodamus and Malcus." But Amelius translated Malcus into Basileus, as Numenius did Maximus into Megalos.

This is his letter to me.

"Amelius to Basileus, greeting. You may be sure that, for their own sakes, I should never have said a word in reply to their worshippers who have been, you say, pestering you with their continual attempts to attribute our friend's doctrines to Numenius of Apamea. For it is obvious that it is only that glibness and readiness of speech in which they take such pride and delight which makes them say at one time that he is a big driveller, at another that he is a plagiarist, or again that his fundamental principles are the meanest of realities:² they are clearly attacking him in this

and their relation to each other, and as far as we can tell from the evidence available, Amelius and Porphyry seem to be amply justified in claiming originality for their master.

² Possibly this is the result of a misunderstanding (which can be paralleled among modern interpreters of Plotinus) of the extreme negativity of the language which he sometimes uses about the One or Good.

25 δηλαδή κατ' αὐτοῦ λεγόντων. Σοῦ δὲ τῇ προφάσει ταύτῃ οἰομένου δεῖν ἀποχρησθαι πρὸς τὸ καὶ τὰ ἡμῖν ἀρέσκοντα ἔχειν προχειρότερα εἰς ἀνάμνησιν καὶ τὸ ἐπ' ὀνόματι ἑταίρου ἀνδρὸς οἴου τοῦ Πλωτίνου μεγάλου εἰ καὶ πάσαι διαβεβοημένα ὀλοσχερέστερον γνῶναι ὑπήκουσα, καὶ οὖν ἤκω
30 ἀποδιδούς σοι τὰ ἐπηγγελμένα ἐν τρισὶν ἡμέραις, ὡς καὶ αὐτὸς οἶσθα, πεπονημένα. Χρὴ δὲ αὐτὰ ὡς ἂν μὴ ἐκ τῆς τῶν συνταγμάτων ἐκείνων παραθίσεως οὐτ' οὖν συντεταγμένα οὔτε ἐξευλεγμένα, ἀλλ' ἀπὸ τῆς παλαιᾶς ἐντεύξεως ἀναπεπολημένα καὶ ὡς πρῶτα προὔπεσεν ἕκαστα οὕτω
35 ταχθέντα ἐνταῦθα νῦν συγγνώμης δικαίας παρὰ σοῦ τυχεῖν, ἄλλως τε καὶ τοῦ βουλήματος τοῦ ὑπὸ τὴν πρὸς ἡμᾶς ὁμολογίαν ὑπαγομένου πρὸς τινων ἀνδρῶν οὐ μάλα προχείρου ἐλεῖν ὑπάρχοντος διὰ τὴν ἄλλοτε ἄλλως περὶ τῶν αὐτῶν ὡς ἂν δόξεις φορὰν. "Ὅτι δέ, εἴ τι τῶν ἀπὸ τῆς οἰκείας
40 ἐστίας παραχαράττοιτο, διορθώσει εὐμενῶς, εὖ οἶδα. Ἠνάγκασμαι δ' ὡς εἰκεν, ὡς ποῦ φησιν ἢ τραγωδία, ὣν φιλοπράγμων τῇ ἀπὸ τῶν τοῦ καθηγεμόνος ἡμῶν δογμάτων διαστάσει εὐθύνην τε καὶ ἀποποιεῖσθαι. Τοιοῦτον ἄρα ἦν τὸ σοὶ χαρίζεσθαι ἐξ ἅπαντος βούλευθαι." Ἐρρωσο."

18. Ταύτην τὴν ἐπιστολὴν θεῖναι προήχθη οὐ μόνον πίστεως χάριτι τοῦ τοῦς τότε καὶ ἐπ' αὐτοῦ γεγονότας τὰ Νουμηγίου οἰεσθαι ὑποβαλλόμενον κομπάζειν, ἀλλὰ καὶ ὅτι πλατὺν αὐτὸν
5 φλήναφον εἶναι ἠγούντο καὶ κατεφρόνουν τῷ μὴ

¹ Amelius seems to be referring to his use of the word εὐθύνειν which occurs in the tragedians (though not ex-

way just for the sake of mocking and jeering at him. But I have conformed to your idea that we should use the occasion to provide ourselves with a statement of the doctrines which we accept in a form easier to remember, and—even though they have long been famous—to make them more widely known, so as to increase the reputation of a friend as eminent as Plotinus is. So here is the work I promised you, written, as you know yourself, in three days. You must treat it with justified indulgence, as there has been no selection or arrangement corresponding to the order of the original attack; I have simply put down my recollections of our former discussions in the order in which they occurred to me; and besides, the intention of our friend, who is being put on trial for the opinions which he shares with us, is not very easy to grasp, because he treats the same subjects in different ways in different places. I am sure, however, that if I have misrepresented any of the doctrines of our spiritual home, you will have the kindness to correct me. As it says in the tragedy,¹ I must correct and reject, since I am a busy man and far from the teachings of our master. So you can see what a business it was to gratify your request as completely as you wished. Farewell."

18. I thought this letter worth inserting, to demonstrate not only that people in his own time thought that he was making a show on a basis of plagiarism from Numenius, but also that they considered he was a big driveller and despised him because they did not understand what he meant

clusively in them). It is the only trace of tragic diction in the works which follow. Amelius's style throughout this letter is excessively pompous and high-flown.

νοεῖν ἃ λέγει καὶ τῷ πάσης σοφιστικῆς αὐτὸν
 σκηνῆς καθαρῶς καὶ τύφου, ὁμιλοῦντι δὲ
 εἰκέναι ἐν ταῖς σπουδαίαις καὶ μηδενὶ ταχέως
 ἐπιφαίνειν τὰς συλλογιστικὰς ἀνάγκας αὐτοῦ τὰς
 ἐν τῷ λόγῳ λαμβανομένας. Ἐπαθον δ' οὖν τὰ
 ὅμοια ἐγὼ Πορφύριος, ὅτε πρῶτον αὐτοῦ ἠκροασά-
 10 μην. Διὸ καὶ ἀντιγράψας προσήγαγον δεικνύναι
 πειρώμενος ὅτι ἔξω τοῦ νοῦ ὑφέστηκε τὸ νόημα.
 Ἀμέλιον δὲ ποιήσας ταῦτα ἀναγνῶναι, ἐπειδὴ
 ἀνέγνω, μειδιάσας "σὸν ἂν εἴη", ἔφη, "ὦ
 Ἀμέλιε, λύσαι τὰς ἀπορίας, εἰς ἃς δι' ἄγνοιαν
 τῶν ἡμῶν δοκοῦντων ἐμπέτωκε". Γράψαντος
 15 δὲ βιβλίον οὐ μικρὸν τοῦ Ἀμελίου πρὸς τὰς τοῦ
 Πορφυρίου ἀπορίας, καὶ αὐτὸ πάλιν πρὸς τὰ
 γραφέντα ἀντιγράψαντός μου, τοῦ δὲ Ἀμελίου
 καὶ πρὸς ταῦτα ἀντειπόντος, ἐκ τρίτων μόλις
 συνεῖς τὰ λεγόμενα ἐγὼ ὁ Πορφύριος μετεθέμην
 καὶ παλινοῦσαν γράψας ἐν τῇ διατριβῇ ἀνέγνω
 20 καὶ κείθεν λοιπὸν τὰ τε βιβλία τὰ Πλωτίνου
 ἐπιστεύθη, καὶ αὐτὸν τὸν διδάσκαλον εἰς φιλο-
 τιμίαν προήγαγον τοῦ διαρθροῦν καὶ διὰ πλείονων
 γράφειν τὰ δοκούντα. Οὐ μὲν ἄλλα καὶ Ἀμέλιος
 εἰς τὸ συγγράφειν πρόθυμος ἐποίησεν.

19. Ἦν δὲ ἔσχε καὶ Λογγίνος περὶ τοῦ Πλωτί-
 νου δόξαν ἐξ ἧν μάλιστα πρὸς αὐτὸν ἐγὼ γράφων
 ἐσήμαινον, δηλώσει μέρος ἐπιστολῆς γραφείσης
 πρὸς με ἐπέχει τοῦτον τὸν τρόπον. Ἀξίων γάρ

¹ Longinus (c. 213-272), scholar, rhetorician, and chief minister of Zenobia of Palmyra till her defeat and his execution by Aurelian, had been a pupil of Ammonius, and maintained a philosophical position opposed to that of Plotinus, especially disagreeing with him about the Platonic Forms or

and because he was so completely free from the staginess and windy rant of the professional speechifier: his lectures were like conversations, and he was not quick to make clear to anybody the compelling logical coherence of his discourse. I, Porphyry, experienced something of the sort when I first heard him. The result was that I wrote against him in an attempt to show that the object of thought existed outside the intellect. He made Amelius read this essay to him, and when the reading was finished smiled and said, "You shall have the task of solving these difficulties, Amelius. He has fallen into them because he does not know what we hold." Amelius wrote a lengthy treatise "In Answer to Porphyry's Difficulties"; I replied to what he had written; Amelius answered my reply; and the third time I with difficulty understood the doctrine, changed my mind and wrote a recantation which I read in the meeting of the school. After this I believed in Plotinus's writings, and tried to rouse in the master himself the ambition to organise his doctrine and write it down more at length; and Amelius also stimulated his desire to write books.

19. The opinion which Longinus,¹ too, had of Plotinus, derived mainly from what I had told him in my letters, will appear from part of a letter written to me, as follows. He is asking me to come from

Ideas, which he thought of as external to the Divine Mind (cp. chs. 18, 20). Plotinus called him "a scholar, not a philosopher" (ch. 14), which may mean that he stuck closer to the text in his interpretation of Plato and objected to Plotinus's speculative flights on the basis of a small number of passages. It is generally agreed by modern scholars, perhaps for not quite conclusive reasons, that he was not the author of the famous extant critical treatise *On the Sublime*.

5 με ἀπὸ τῆς Σικελίας κατιέναι πρὸς αὐτὸν εἰς τὴν
Φοινίκην καὶ κομίζειν τὰ βιβλία τοῦ Πλωτίνου
φήσί:

“Καὶ σὺ μὲν ταῦτά τε πέμπειν, ὅταν σοι δοκῇ,
μᾶλλον δὲ κομίζειν· οὐ γὰρ ἂν ἀποσταίην τοῦ
πολλάκις δεῖσθαί σου τὴν πρὸς ἡμᾶς ὁδὸν τῆς
10 ἐτέρωσε προκρίναι, κἄν εἰ μὴδὲν δι’ ἄλλο—τί γὰρ
ἂν καὶ σοφὸν παρ’ ἡμῶν προσδοκῶν ἀφίκοιο;—
τὴν τε παλαιὰν συνήθειαν καὶ τὸν ἀέρα μετριώ-
τατον ὄντα πρὸς ἣν λέγεις τοῦ σώματος ἀσθένειαν·
κἄν ἄλλο τι τύχῃς οἰηθεῖς, παρ’ ἐμοῦ δὲ μὴδὲν
προσοδοκᾶν καυότερον, μὴδ’ οὖν τῶν παλαιῶν
15 ὅσα φῆς ἀπολωλέκεναι. Τῶν γὰρ γραβάντων
τοσαύτη σπάνις ἐνταῦθα καθέστηκεν, ὥστε νῆ
τοῦς θεοὺς πάντα τὸν χρόνον τοῦτον τὰ λειπόμμενα
τῶν Πλωτίνου κατασκευάζων μόλις αὐτῶν ἐπε-
κράτησα τὸν ὑπογραφέα τῶν μὲν εἰωθότων ἀπάγων
ἔργων, πρὸς ἐνὶ δὲ τούτῳ τάξας γενέσθαι. Καὶ
20 κέκτημαι μὲν ὅσα δοκεῖν πάντα καὶ τὰ νῦν ὑπὸ
σοῦ πεμφθέντα, κέκτημαι δὲ ἡμιτελῶς· οὐ γὰρ
μετρίως ἦν διημαρτημένα, καίτοι τὸν ἐταῖρον
Ἀμέλιον ᾤμην ἀναλήψεσθαι τὰ τῶν γραφέων
πταισμάτα· τῷ δ’ ἦν ἄλλα προυργιαίτερα τῆς
τοιαύτης προσεδρείας. Οὐκ οὖν ἔχω τίνα χρῆ
25 τρόπον αὐτοῖς ὁμιλῆσαι καίπερ ὑπερεπιθυμῶν τὰ
τε ‘Περὶ ψυχῆς’ καὶ τὰ ‘Περὶ τοῦ ὄντος’
ἐπισκέψασθαι· ταῦτα γὰρ οὖν καὶ μάλιστα
διημαρτηται. Καὶ πάνυ βουλοίμην ἂν ἐλθεῖν μοι
παρὰ σοῦ τὰ μετ’ ἀκριβείας γεγραμμένα τοῦ
παραναγνῶναι μόνον, εἶτα ἀποπέμψαι πάλιν.
30 Ἀδῆθις δὲ τὸν αὐτὸν ἐρῶ λόγον, ὅτι μὴ πέμπειν,

Sicily to join him in Phoenicia and bring Plotinus's works with me. He says:

“Send them when you like, or, better, bring them: for I shall never stop asking you to give the journey to us the preference over any other, if for no other reason—for surely there is no wisdom which you could expect to learn from us as a result of your visit—for the sake of our old friendship and of the climate, which is particularly good for the ill-health of which you speak. Whatever else you think you may find, do not expect anything new from me, or even the old works which you say you have lost. There is such a shortage of copyists here that really all this time I have been trying to complete my set of Plotinus, and have only just managed it by taking my manuscript-writer away from his usual tasks and setting him to this one only. I have everything, as far as I know, including what you have just sent me; but I have it only half complete, because the manuscripts are extremely full of faults. I thought our friend Amelius would have corrected the mistakes of the copyists, but he had other more urgent duties than this sort of supervision. So I do not see how I am to get acquainted with them, though I am extremely anxious to examine *On The Soul*¹ and *On Being*:² for it is just these that are the most faulty. I should be very glad if you could send me the accurately written copies, simply to read for the purpose of comparison and then return; though I again repeat my request to you not to send, but to come yourself

¹ Probably the treatise which now appears as *Enneads* IV. 3-5.

² Probably *Enneads* VI. 1-3, another single treatise split up by Porphyry.

ἀλλ' αὐτὸν ἤκειν ἔχοντα μᾶλλον ἀξιώ ταῦτά τε
καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν εἴ τι διαπέφευγε τὸν Ἀμέλιον.
Ἄ μὲν γὰρ ἤγαγεν, ἅπαντα διὰ σπουδῆς ἐκτησάμην.
Πῶς δ' οὐκ ἔμελλον ἀνδρὸς ὑπομνήματα πάσης
ἰδοῦς ἀξίου καὶ τιμῆς κτήσασθαι; Τοῦτο γὰρ
35 οἶν καὶ παρόντι σοι καὶ μακρὰν ἀπόντι καὶ περὶ
τὴν Τύρον διατρίβοντι τυγχάνω δῆπουθεν ἐπεσταλ-
κῶς ὅτι τῶν μὲν ὑποθέσεων οὐ πᾶν με τὰς πολλὰς
προσίεσθαι συμβέβηκε· τὸν δὲ τύπον τῆς γραφῆς
καὶ τῶν ἐνοιῶν ἀνδρὸς τὴν πυκνότητα καὶ τὸ
φιλόσοφον τῆς τῶν ζητημάτων διαθέσεως ὑπερβαλ-
40 λόντως ἀγαμαι καὶ φιλῶ καὶ μετὰ τῶν ἔλλογιμω-
τάτων ἀγειν τὰ τούτου βιβλία φαίην ἂν δεῖν τοὺς
ζητητικούς.”

20. Ταῦτα ἐπιπλέον παρατέθεικα τοῦ καθ' ἡμᾶς
κριτικωτάτου γενομένου καὶ τὰ τῶν ἄλλων
σχεδὸν πάντα τῶν καθ' αὐτὸν διελέξαντος
δεικνύς οἷα γέγονεν ἡ περὶ Πλωτίνου κρίσις·
5 καίτοι τὰ πρῶτα ἐκ τῆς τῶν ἄλλων ἀμαθίας
κατιφρονητικῶς ἔχων πρὸς αὐτὸν διετέλει. Ἐδό-
κει δὲ ἃ ἐκτήσατο ἐκ τῶν Ἀμελίου λαβῶν
ἡμαρτήσθαι διὰ τὸ μὴ νοεῖν τοῦ ἀνδρὸς τὴν
συνήθη ἐρμηνείαν. Εἰ γὰρ τινα καὶ ἄλλα, καὶ τὰ
παρ' Ἀμελίῳ διώρθωτο ὡς ἂν ἐκ τῶν αὐτογράφων
10 μετελημμένα. Ἐπι δεῦρο Λογγίνου ἃ ἐν συγ-
γράμματι γέγραφε περὶ Πλωτίνου τε καὶ Ἀμελίου
καὶ τῶν καθ' ἑαυτοῦ γεγονότων φιλοσόφων ἀναγ-
καίον παραθεῖναι, ἵνα καὶ πλήρης γένηται ἡ περὶ
αὐτῶν κρίσις οἷα γέγονε τοῦ ἔλλογιμωτάτου ἀνδρὸς
καὶ ἔλεγκτικωτάτου. Ἐπιγράφεται δὲ τὸ βιβλίον
15 Λογγίνου πρὸς Πλωτίνον καὶ Γεντιλιανὸν Ἀμέλιον
“ Περὶ τέλους.” Ἐχει δὲ τοιοῦδε προοίμιον·

and bring better copies of these and of any others
which Amelius may have overlooked. I eagerly
acquired all he brought; of course I should want
to possess works of Plotinus, who deserves every
possible honour and respect. It is true of course that
I have given you word, when you were here, when you
were far away, and especially at the time when you
werestaying in Tyre, that I cannot go very far in agree-
ing with most of his theories; but I feel the utmost
admiration and affection for the general character of
his writing, the closeness of his thinking, and the
philosophical way in which he deals with his en-
quiries; and I think that seekers after truth
must rank his works among the most important.”

20. I have inserted at length this judgement by
the most discerning critic of our times, a man who
subjected practically all the works of his other
contemporaries to drastic investigation, to show what
conclusion he came to about Plotinus—though at
first, as a result of the stupidity of others, he per-
sisted in despising him. He seems to have mis-
judged the manuscripts which he received from
Amelius because he did not understand Plotinus's
usual manner of expressing himself; for if there ever
were any carefully corrected copies they were those
of Amelius, which were transcribed from the author's
own originals. I must also insert what Longinus
wrote in a book about Plotinus, Amelius, and the
philosophers of his time, to give a complete account
of the judgement passed on them by this most out-
standing man and extremely severe critic. The
title of the book is *On The End: by Longinus in
answer to Plotinus and Gentilianus Amelius*. This is
its preface:

“ Πολλῶν καθ’ ἡμᾶς, ὦ Μάρκελλε, γεγενημένων
 φιλοσόφων οὐχ ἥκιστα παρὰ τοὺς πρώτους τῆς
 ἡλικίας ἡμῶν χρόνους· ὁ μὲν γὰρ νῦν καιρὸς
 20 οὐδ’ εἰπεῖν ἔστιν ὅσσην σπάνιν ἐσχῆκε τοῦ πράγμα-
 τος· ἔτι δὲ μειρακίων ὄντων ἡμῶν οὐκ ὀλίγοι τῶν
 ἐν φιλοσοφίᾳ λόγων προέστησαν, οὓς ἅπαντας μὲν
 ὑπῆρξεν ἰδεῖν ἡμῖν διὰ τὴν ἐκ παιδῶν ἐπὶ πολλοὺς
 τόπους ἅμα τοῖς γονεῦσιν ἐπιδημίαν, συγγενέσθαι
 δὲ αὐτῶν τοῖς ἐπιβιώσουσι κατὰ ταῦτ’ οὐκ ὀλίγοις
 25 ἔθνεσι καὶ πόλεσιν ἐπιμίξαντας· οἱ μὲν καὶ διὰ
 γραφῆς ἐπεχείρησαν τὰ δοκοῦντα σφίσι πραγ-
 τεύεσθαι καταλιπόντες τοῖς ἐπιγιγνομένοις τῆς
 παρ’ αὐτῶν ὠφελείας μετασχεῖν, οἱ δ’ ἀποχρήναι
 σφίσι ἠγγήσαντο τοὺς συνόντας προβιβάζειν εἰς
 τὴν τῶν ἀρεσκόντων ἑαυτοῖς κατάληψιν. Ὡς τοῦ
 30 μὲν προτέρου γεγονάσι τρόπου Πλατωνικοὶ μὲν
 Εὐκλείδης καὶ Δημόκριτος καὶ Προκλῖνος ὁ περὶ
 τὴν Τρωάδα διατρίψας οἱ τε μέχρι νῦν ἐν τῇ
 Ῥώμῃ δημοσιεύοντες, Πλωτῖνος καὶ Γεντιλιανὸς
 Ἀμέλιος ὁ τούτου γνώριμος, Στωικῶν δὲ Θεμι-
 στοκλῆς καὶ Φοιβίαν οἱ τε μέχρι πρώην ἀκμάσαντες
 35 Ἄννιος τε καὶ Μήδιος, Περιπατητικῶν δὲ ὁ
 Ἀλεξάνδρεὺς Ἡλιόδωρος. Τοῦ δὲ δευτέρου Πλα-
 τωνικοὶ μὲν Ἀμμώνιος καὶ Ὠριγένης, οἷς ἡμεῖς
 τὸ πλεῖστον τοῦ χρόνου προσεφοιτήσαμεν, ἀνδράσιν
 οὐκ ὀλίγω τῶν καθ’ ἑαυτοὺς εἰς σύνεσιν διενεγ-
 κούσιν, οἱ τε Ἀθήνησι διάδοχοι Θεόδοτος καὶ
 40 Εὐβούλος· καὶ γὰρ εἴ τι τούτων γέγραπται τισιν,
 ὡς περὶ Ὠριγένει μὲν τὸ ‘Περὶ τῶν δαιμόνων’,
 Εὐβούλῳ δὲ τὸ ‘Περὶ τοῦ Φιλήβου καὶ τοῦ
 Γοργίου καὶ τῶν Ἀριστοτέλει πρὸς τὴν Πλάτωνος
 πολιτείαν ἀντειρημένων’, οὐκ ἐχέγγυα πρὸς τὸ

“ There have been in our time, Marcellus, many
 philosophers, especially in the early part of our life ; I
 say this because at the present moment there is an
 indescribable shortage of philosophy. When I was a
 boy there were not a few masters of philosophical
 argument, all of whom I was enabled to see because
 from childhood I travelled to many places with my
 parents, and became acquainted in the same way
 with those who had lived on later in my intercourse
 with a great number of peoples and cities. Some of
 them undertook to set down their doctrines in writ-
 ing, so as to give posterity the chance of deriving
 some benefit from them ; others thought that all that
 was required of them was to lead the members of their
 school to an understanding of what they held. Of
 the first kind were the Platonists Eucleides and
 Democritus,¹ and Proclinus, who lived in the Troad,
 and Plotinus and his friend Gentilianus Amelius,
 who are still teaching publicly at Rome, and the
 Stoics Themistocles and Phoebion and the two
 who were in their prime a little while ago, Annius
 and Medius, and the Peripatetic Heliodorus, the
 Alexandrian. Of the second were the Platonists
 Ammonius and Origen, with whom I studied regu-
 larly for a very long time, men who much sur-
 passed their contemporaries in wisdom, and the
 Successors at Athens, Theodotus and Eubulus.
 Some of these did write something, for instance
 Origen, *On The Spiritus* and Eubulus, *On the
 Philebus and the Gorgias and Aristotle's objections
 to Plato's 'Republic'* ; but these are not enough to

¹ The philosophers contemporary with Plotinus mentioned in this preface are only names to us.

45 μετὰ τῶν ἐξεργασμένων τὸν λόγον αὐτοὺς ἀριθμεῖν ἂν γένοιτο πάρεργον τῇ τοιαύτῃ χρησιμῶν σπουδῇ καὶ μὴ προηγουμένην περὶ τοῦ γράφειν ὀρμὴν λαβόντων. Τῶν δὲ Στωικῶν Ἑρμίνος καὶ Λυσίμαχος οἳ τε ἐν ἄστει καταβίωσαντες Ἀθηναῖος καὶ Μουσώνιος, καὶ Περιπατητικῶν Ἀμμώνιος καὶ Πτολεμαῖος φιλολογώ-
 50 τατοι μὲν τῶν καθ' ἑαυτοὺς ἄμφω γενόμενοι καὶ μάλιστα ὁ Ἀμμώνιος· οὐ γὰρ ἔστιν ὅστις ἐκεῖνῳ γέγονεν εἰς πολυμαθίαν παραπλήσιος. οὐ μὴν καὶ γράψαντές γε τεχνικὸν οὐδὲν, ἀλλὰ ποιήματα καὶ λόγους ἐπιδεικτικούς, ἅπερ οὖν καὶ σωθῆναι τῶν
 55 ἀνδρῶν τούτων οὐχ ἐκόντων οἶμαι· μὴ γὰρ ἂν αὐτοὺς δέξασθαι διὰ τοιούτων βιβλίων ὑστερον γενέσθαι γνωρίμους, ἀφέντας σπουδαιότεροις συγγράμμασι τὴν ἑαυτῶν ἀποθησαυρίσαι διάνοιαν. Τῶν δ' οὖν γραψάντων οἳ μὲν οὐδὲν πλέον ἢ συναγωγὴν καὶ μεταγραφὴν τῶν τοῖς πρεσβυτέροις
 60 συντεθέντων ἐποίησαντο, καθάπερ Εὐκλείδης καὶ Δημόκριτος καὶ Προκλίνος, οἳ δὲ μικρὰ κομιδῇ πράγματα τῆς τῶν παλαιῶν ἱστορίας ἀπομνημονεύσαντες εἰς τοὺς αὐτοὺς τόπους ἐκείνοις ἐπεχείρησαν συντιθέναι βιβλία, καθάπερ Ἄννιος τε καὶ Μήδιος καὶ Φοιβίων, οὗτος μὲν ἀπὸ τῆς ἐν τῇ
 65 λέξει κατασκευῆς γνωρίζεσθαι μᾶλλον ἢ τῆς ἐν τῇ διανοίᾳ συντάξεως ἀξιών· οἳς καὶ τὸν Ἡλιόδωρον συγκατανεμίει τις ἂν, οὐδ' ἐκεῖνον παρὰ τὰ τοῖς πρεσβυτέροις ἐν ταῖς ἀκροάσεσιν εἰρημένα πλέον τι συμβαλλόμενον εἰς τὴν τοῦ λόγου διάρθρωσιν. Οἳ δὲ καὶ πλήθει προβλημάτων ἃ
 70 μετεχειρίσαντο τὴν σπουδὴν τοῦ γράφειν ἀποδείξά-

justify us in counting them among those who have written extensively on philosophy; they are occasional works of men whose interest was in teaching, not writing, and who did not make authorship their main concern. Of Stoics in this group there are Herminus and Lysimachus and the two who lived in town,¹ Athenaeus and Musonius, and among Peripatetics Ammonius and Ptolemaeus, both the greatest scholars of their time, especially Ammonius; there has been no one who has come near him in learning: but they did not write any work of professional philosophy, only poems and show-speeches which I believe to have been preserved without their consent; they would not have wanted to be known in later times by works of this kind when they had neglected to store up their thought in more serious treatises. Of those who wrote, some produced nothing except compilations and transcriptions of what their predecessors had composed, like Euclides and Democritus and Proclinus; others recalled to mind quite small points of the investigations of the ancients and set to work to compose treatises on the same subjects as they, like Annius and Medius and Phoebion; this last chose to be distinguished for elegance of style rather than coherence of thought. One might class Heliodorus with these, for he too contributed nothing to the ordered exposition of philosophical thought beyond what his elders had said in their lectures. Those who have shown the seriousness with which they took their writing by the multitude of problems which

¹ ἐν ἄστει: probably at Athens, assuming that Longinus is being a little archaistic and literary in his usage. In Hellenistic Egypt the phrase could mean Alexandria.

μενοι καὶ τρόπῳ θεωρίας ἰδίῳ χρησάμενοι Πλωτίνος εἰσι καὶ Γεντιλιανὸς Ἀμέλιος· ὃς μὲν τὰς Πυθαγορείους ἀρχὰς καὶ Πλατωνικὰς, ὡς ἔδῳκει, πρὸς σαφεστέραν τῶν πρὸ αὐτοῦ καταστησάμενος ἐξήγησιν· οὐδὲ γὰρ οὐδὲν ἐγγύς τι τὰ Νομηνίου καὶ Κρονίου καὶ Μοδεράτου καὶ Θρασύλλου τοῖς Πλωτίνου περὶ τῶν αὐτῶν συγγράμμασιν εἰς ἀκρίβειαν· ὁ δὲ Ἀμέλιος κατ' ἴχνη μὲν τούτου βαδίζειν προαιρούμενος καὶ τὰ πολλὰ μὲν τῶν αὐτῶν δογμάτων ἐχόμενος, τῇ δὲ ἐξεργασίᾳ πολὺς ὢν καὶ τῇ τῆς ἐρμηνείας περιβολῇ πρὸς τὸν ἐναντίον ἐκείνῳ ζῆλον ὑπαγόμενος. Ὡς καὶ μόνων ἡμεῖς ἀξίον εἶναι νομίζομεν ἐπισκοπεῖσθαι τὰ συγγράμματα. Τοὺς μὲν γὰρ λοιποὺς τί τις ἂν κινεῖν οἴοιτο δεῖν ἀφείς ἐξετάζειν ἐκείνους, παρ' ὧν ταῦτα λαβόντες οὗτοι γεγράφεσιν οὐδὲν αὐτοὶ παρ' αὐτῶν προυθέντες οὐχ ὅτι τῶν κεφαλαίων, ἀλλ' οὐδὲ τῶν ἐπιχειρημάτων, οὐδ' οὖν ἢ συναγωγῆς τῶν παρὰ τοῖς πλείοσιν ἢ κρίσεως τοῦ βελτίονος ἐπιμεληθέντες; Ἦδη μὲν οὖν καὶ δι' ἄλλων τουτὶ πεποιήκαμεν, ὥσπερ καὶ τῷ μὲν Γεντιλιανῷ περὶ τῆς κατὰ Πλάτωνα δικαιοσύνης ἀντειπόντες, τοῦ δὲ Πλωτίνου τὸ Ἐπερὶ τῶν ἰδεῶν ἐπισκεψάμενοι· τὸν μὲν γὰρ κοινὸν ἡμῶν τε κακείνων ἑταῖρον ὄντα, Βασιλέα τὸν Τύριον, οὐδ' αὐτὸν ὀλίγα πεπραγματευμένον κατὰ τὴν Πλωτίνου μίμησιν, ὃν ἀποδεξάμενος μᾶλλον τῆς παρ' ἡμῖν ἀγωγῆς ἐπεχείρησε διὰ συγγράμματος ἀποδείξει βελτίω δόξαν περὶ τῶν ἰδεῶν τῆς ἡμῖν ἀρεσκούσης ἔχοντα, μετρίως ἀντιγραφῆ διελέγξαι δοκοῦμεν οὐκ εὖ παλινωδήσαντα κἀν τούτοις οὐκ ὀλίγας τῶν ἀνδρῶν τούτων κενικη-

60

they treated and have had an original way of thinking are Plotinus and Gentilianus Amelius. Plotinus, it would seem, has expounded the principles of Pythagorean and Platonic philosophy more clearly than anyone before him. The works of Numenius and Cronius and Moderatus and Thrasyllus come nowhere near the accuracy of Plotinus's treatises on the same subjects. Amelius chooses to walk in his footsteps, and mostly holds the same doctrines, but is diffuse in exposition, and in his roundabout method of explanation is led by an inclination opposed to that of Plotinus. Their treatises are the only ones which I consider worth attention. Why should anyone think he ought to turn over the works of the rest and neglect the authors from whom they derived what they wrote, when they did not add anything of their own, even in the arguments, to say nothing of the chief points, and did not try to do anything but collect the opinions of the majority or select the best?

"I have already expressed my own opinions elsewhere, for instance in my reply to Gentilianus about righteousness in Plato, and my examination of Plotinus, *On The Ideas*:¹ for my friend and theirs, Basileus of Tyre,² who has himself written a good deal in the manner of Plotinus, whose direction he has preferred to my own, tried to demonstrate in a treatise that the doctrine of Plotinus about the Ideas was better than that which I approve. I think I showed fairly thoroughly in my reply that his change of mind was a mistake; and I dealt with a con-

¹ Possibly *Enneads* VI. 7.

² I.e., Porphyry, cp. *Life*, ch. 17.

κότες δόξας, ὡσπερ κὰν τῇ πρὸς τὸν Ἀμέλιον ἐπιστολῇ, μέγεθος μὲν ἐχούσῃ συγγράμματος, ἀποκρινομένη δὲ πρὸς ἅττα τῶν ὑπ' αὐτοῦ πρὸς 100 ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ τῆς Ῥώμης ἐπεσταλμένων, ἦν αὐτὸς μὲν ἐπιστολὴν 'Περὶ τοῦ τρόπου τῆς Πλωτίνου φιλοσοφίας' (ἐπ)έγραψεν, ἡμεῖς δὲ αὐτὸ μόνον προσηρκέσθημεν τῇ κοινῇ τοῦ συγγράμματος ἐπιγραφῇ 'Πρὸς τὴν Ἀμελίου ἐπιστολὴν' αὐτὸ προσαγορεύσαντες."

21. Ἐν δὴ τούτοις τότε ὠμολόγησε μὲν πάντων τῶν ἐπ' αὐτοῦ γεγονότων "πλήθει τε προβλημάτων διενεγκεῖν Πλωτίνον τε καὶ Ἀμέλιον, τρόπῳ δὲ θεωρίας ἰδίῳ μάλιστα τούτους χρῆσασθαι, τὰ 5 Νουμηρίου δὲ οὐχ ὅτι ὑποβάλλεσθαι καὶ τὰ κείνου πρεσβεύειν δόγματα, ἀλλὰ τὰ τῶν Πυθαγορείων αὐτοῦ τε ἐλομένου μετιέναι δόγματα, καὶ οὐδ' ἐγγὺς εἶναι τὰ Νουμηρίου καὶ Κρονίου καὶ Μοδεράτου καὶ Θρασύλλου τοῖς Πλωτίνου περὶ τῶν αὐτῶν συγγράμμασιν εἰς ἀκρίβειαν". Εἰπὼν 10 δὲ περὶ Ἀμελίου, ὅτι "κατ' ἔχνη μὲν τοῦ Πλωτίνου ἐβάδιζες, τῇ δὲ ἐξεργασίᾳ πολὺς ὢν καὶ τῇ τῆς ἐρμηνείας περιβολῇ πρὸς τὸν ἐναντίον ἐκείνῳ ζῆλον ὑπήγετο", ὁμῶς μνησθεὶς ἐμοῦ Περφυρίου ἔτι ἀρχὰς ἔχοντος τῆς πρὸς τὸν Πλωτίνον συνουσίας φησὶν ὅτι "ὁ δὲ κοινὸς ἡμῶν τε κακείνων 15 ἑταῖρος Βασιλεὺς ὁ Τύριος οὐδ' αὐτὸς ὀλίγα πεπραγματευμένος κατὰ τὴν Πλωτίνου μίμησιν." Συνέθηκε ταῦτα ὄντως κατιδὼν, ὅτι τῆς Ἀμελίου περιβολῆς τὸ ἀφιλόσοφον παντελῶς ἐφυλαξάμην καὶ πρὸς ζῆλον τὸν Πλωτίνου γράφων ἀφεώρων. Ἀρκεῖ τοίνυν ὁ τοσοῦτος ἀνὴρ καὶ ἐν κρίσει 20 πρῶτος ὢν καὶ ὑπειλημμένος ἄχρι νῦν τοιαῦτα

siderable number of the opinions of these philosophers in this and in my letter to Amelius, which is as long as a book, and answers a number of the points in the letter which he addressed to me from Rome, which he entitled *On The Method of the Philosophy of Plotinus*. I was satisfied to give my treatise the ordinary title, calling it *In Answer to the Letter of Amelius*."

21. Longinus, then, admitted at that time in this preface "that among all his contemporaries Plotinus and Amelius were outstanding in the number of problems which they treated and had a particularly original way of thinking, and were so far from plagiarising from Numenius and giving his views the first place in their system that Plotinus deliberately propounded Pythagorean views, and the works of Numenius and Cronius and Moderatus and Thrasyllus come nowhere near the accuracy of Plotinus's treatises on the same subjects." He said of Amelius that "he walked in Plotinus's footsteps, but was diffuse in exposition and in his roundabout method of exposition was led by an inclination opposed to that of Plotinus"; and at the same time, in referring to me, Porphyry, when I was still at the beginning of my association with Plotinus, he says, "my friend and theirs, Basileus of Tyre, who has himself written a good deal in the manner of Plotinus." He put it in this way because he really recognised that I altogether avoided the unphilosophical circuitousness of Amelius and looked to the manner of Plotinus as my standard in writing. The opinion which so great a man, who is, and is recognised as the foremost critic of our time, expressed in writing like this about

γράφων περὶ Πλωτίνου, ὡς, εἰ καὶ καλοῦντί με
τὸν Πορφύριον συνέβη δυνηθῆναι συμμῖξαι αὐτῷ,
οὐδ' ἂν ἀντέγραφην, ἅ πρὶν ἀκριβῶσαι τὸ δόγμα
γράψαι ἐπεχείρησεν.

22. Ἄλλὰ τῆ μοι ταῦτα περὶ δρῖν ἢ περὶ
πέτραν—φησὶν ὁ Ἡσίοδος—λέγειν; Εἰ γὰρ δεῖ
ταῖς μαρτυρίαις χρῆσθαι ταῖς παρὰ τῶν σοφῶν
γεγενημέναις, τίς ἂν εἴη σοφώτερος θεοῦ, καὶ
5 θεοῦ τοῦ ἀληθῶς εἰρηκότος:

Οἶδα δ' ἐγὼ ψάμμου τ' ἀριθμὸν καὶ μέτρα
θαλάσσης
καὶ κωφοῦ ξυνήμι καὶ οὐ λαλέοντος ἀκούω;

Ὁ γὰρ δὴ Ἀπόλλων ἐρομένου τοῦ Ἀμελίου,
ποῦ ἢ Πλωτίνου ψυχὴ κεχώρηκεν, ὁ τοσοῦτον
10 εἰπὼν περὶ Σωκράτους:

Ἄνδρῶν ἀπάντων Σωκράτης σοφώτατος,
ἐπάκουσον, ὅσα καὶ οἶα περὶ Πλωτίνου ἐθέσπισεν:

Ἄμβροτα φορμίζειν ἀναβάλλομαι ὕμνον ἀοιδῆς
ἀμφ' ἀγανοῖο φίλιου μελιχροτάτοισιν ὑφαίνων
15 φωναῖς εὐφήμου κιθάρης χρυσεῶ ὑπὸ πλήκτρῳ.
Κλήζω καὶ Μούσας ξυνὴν ὅπα γηρύσασθαι
παμφώνοις ἰαχαῖσι παναρμονίαισί τ' ἔρωαῖς,
οἶον ἐπ' Αἰακίδῃ στήσαι χορὸν ἐκλήχθεν
ἀθανάτων μανίαισιν Ὀμηρείαισί τ' ἀοιδαῖς.
20 Ἄλλ' ἄγε Μουσάων ἱερὸς χορὸς, ἀπύσωμεν
εἰς ἐν ἐπιπνεύοντες ἀοιδῆς τέρματα πάσης
ὑμμι καὶ ἐν μέσσαισι ἐγὼ Φοῖβος βαθυ-
χαίτης:

Plotinus is enough to indicate that if I, Porphyry, had been able to converse with him, as he invited me to, he would not have written in opposition things which he took it upon himself to write before arriving at a sufficiently accurate understanding of the doctrine of Plotinus.

22. But "Why should I talk of oak and rock?"¹ as Hesiod says; for if one wants to appeal to the evidence of the wise, who could be wiser than a god, and that god who truly said,

"I know the number of the sand, the measure of the sea.
I understand the dumb, and hear him who does not speak."²

For when Amelius asked where the soul of Plotinus had gone, Apollo, who said of Socrates,

"Socrates is the wisest of men"³

—hear what a great and noble oracle he uttered about Plotinus: "I begin to strike upon my lyre an immortal song, in honour of a gentle friend, weaving it of the sweetest notes of the tuneful harp struck by the golden plectrum. And I call the Muses to raise their voices with me in a full-noted crying of triumph, a sweep of universal melody, as when they were summoned to set the dance going for Aeacides with divine inspiration in the verses of Homer. Come, sacred company of Muses, let us unite our voices to accomplish the fullness of all song, I, Phoebus of the thick hair, singing in the midst of you.

¹Theogony 35. ²Herodotus I. 47. ³Diogenes Laertius II. 5. 37. Cp. Plato, Apology 21A 6-7.

25 δαίμων, ἄνερ τὸ πάροιθεν, ἀτὰρ νῦν δαίμονος αἴση
 θειοτέρη πελάων, ὅτ' ἐλύσαιο δεσμὸν ἀνάγκης
 ἀνδρομέης, ρεθέων δὲ πολυφλοίσβοιο κυδοιμοῦ
 ῥωσάμενος πραπίδεσσιν ἐς ἡῶνα νηχύτου ἀκτῆς
 νήχε' ἐπειγόμενος δήμου ἀπο νόσφιν ἀλιτρῶν
 στηρίξαι καθαρῆς ψυχῆς εὐκαμπέα οἴμην,
 30 ἦχι θεοῖο σέλας περιλάμπεται, ἦχι θέμιστες
 ἐν καθαρῷ ἀπάτερθεν ἀλιτροσύνης ἀθεμίστου.
 Καὶ τότε μὲν σκαίροντι πικρὸν κύμ' ἐξυπαλύξαι
 αἰμοβότου βιότοιο καὶ ἀσηρῶν εἰλίγγων
 ἐν μεσάτοισι κλύδωνος ἀνωίστου τε κυδοιμοῦ
 πολλάκις ἐκ μακάρων φάνθη σκαπὸς ἐγγύθι
 ναίων.
 35 Πολλάκι σεῖο νόοιο βολὰς λοξῆσιν ἀταρποῖς
 ἱεμένας φορέεσθαι ἐρωῆσι σφετέρησιν
 ὀρθοπόρους ἀνὰ κύκλα καὶ ἄμβροτον οἶμον ἄειραν
 ἀθάνατοι θαμινῆν φαέων ἀκτῖνα πορόντες
 ὅσσοισιν δέρκεσθαι ἀπαὶ σκυτῆς λυγαίης.
 40 Οὐδέ σε παμπήδιον βλεφάρων ἔχε νήδυμος ὕπνος·
 ἀλλ' ἄρ' ἀπὸ βλεφάρων πετάσας κληῖδα βαρεῖαν
 ἀχλύος ἐν δίνῃσι φορεύμενος ἔδρακες ὅσσοις
 πολλὰ τε καὶ χαρίεντα, τὰ κεν ρέα οὔτις ἴδοιτο
 45 ἀνθρώπων, ὅσσοι σοφίης μαιήτορες ἔπλευν.
 Νῦν δ' ὅτε δὴ σκῆνος μὲν ἐλύσαιο, σῆμα δ'
 ἔλειψας
 ψυχῆς δαιμονίης, μεθ' ὁμήγυριν ἔρχεται ἤδη
 δαιμονίην ἐρατοῖσιν ἀναπνεύουσιν ἀήταις,

¹ The oracle is full of Homeric tags: here we have a reminiscence of *Odyssey* 5, 399 *νήχε δ' ἐπειγόμενος*, and this whole passage seems to be based on an allegorical interpretation of *Odysseus's* swim ashore after the wreck of his raft. For the interpretation (common in late antiquity and adopted by the

"Spirit, man once, but now nearing the diviner lot of a spirit, as the bond of human necessity has been loosed for you, and strong in heart, you swam swiftly¹ from the roaring surge of the body to that coast where the stream flows strong, far apart from the crowd of the wicked, there to set your steps firm in the easy path of the pure soul, where the splendour of God shines round you and the divine law abides in purity far from lawless wickedness.

"Then too, when you were struggling to escape from the bitter wave of this blood-drinking life, from its sickening whirlpools, in the midst of its billows and sudden surges, often the Blessed Ones showed you the goal ever near. Often when your mind was thrusting out by its own impulse along crooked paths the Immortals raised you by a straight path to the heavenly circuits, the divine way, sending down a solid shaft of light so that your eyes could see out of the mournful darkness. Sweet sleep never held your eyes, but scattering the heavy cloud that would have kept them closed, borne in the whirl you saw many fair sights which are hard for human seekers after wisdom to see.

"But now that you have been freed from this tabernacle² and have left the tomb³ which held your heavenly soul, you come at once to the com-

Christians) of the voyages of *Odysseus* as a symbol of the journey of the soul cp. *Enneads*, I. 6. 8.

² The word *σκῆνος* is used of the body in a highly pessimistic and dualistic passage of the pseudo-Platonic *Axiochus* 366 A1.

³ A reference to the *σῶμα-σῆμα* play on words (of Orphic origin) in Plato *Gorgias* 493 A3, where again it is said that life in the body is really death, and separation from it true life for the soul.

ἐνθ' ἔνι μὲν φιλότης, ἐν δ' ἵμερος ἀβρὸς
 ἰδέσθαι,
 εὐφροσύνης πλείων καθυμῆς, πληρούμενος αἰὲν
 50 ἀμβροσίων ὕχετῶν θεόθεν ὅθεν ἐστὶν ἐρώτων
 πείσματα, καὶ γλυκερῆ πνοιῇ καὶ νήνεμος αἰθήρ,
 χρυσεῖης γενεῆς μεγάλου Διὸς ἧχι νέμονται
 Μίνως καὶ Ῥαδάμανθυς ἀδελφεοί, ἧχι δίκαιος
 Αἰακός, ἧχι Πλάτων, ἱερῇ ἴς, ἧχι τε καλὸς
 55 Πυθαγόρης ὅσσοι τε χορὸν στήριξαν ἔρωτος
 ἀθανάτου, ὅσσοι γενεὴν ξινήν ἐλάχοντο
 δαίμοσιν ὀλβίοις, ὅθι τοι κέαρ ἐν θαλίῃσιν
 αἰὲν εὐφροσύνησιν τ' ἰαίνεται. Ἄ μάκαρ, ὅσσους
 ὀτλήσας ἀριθμούς ἀέθλων μετὰ δαίμονας ἀγνοῦς
 60 πωλέει ζαμενῆσι κορυσσάμενος ζωῆσι.
 Στήσαιμεν μολπήν τε χοροῦ τ' εὐδίνεα κύκλον
 Πλωτίνου, Μοῦσαι, πολυγηθέος· αὐτὰρ ἐμείο
 χρυσεῖη κιθάρη τόσσον φράσεν εὐαίωνι.

23. Ἐν δὴ τούτοις εἴρηται μὲν ὅτι ἀγανὸς
 γέγονε καὶ ἦπιος καὶ πρᾶός γε μάλιστα καὶ
 μείλιχος, ἅπερ καὶ ἡμεῖς οὕτως ἔχοντι συνήδειμεν·
 εἴρηται δ' ὅτι ἄγρυπνος καὶ καθαρὰν τὴν ψυχὴν
 5 ἔχων καὶ αἰεὶ σπεύδων πρὸς τὸ θεῖον, οὐ διὰ
 πάσης τῆς ψυχῆς ἦρα, ὅτι τε πάντ' ἐποίει ἀπαλ-
 λαγήναι, πικρὸν κύμ' ἐξυπαλύξαι τοῦ αἰμοβότου
 τῆδε βίου. Οὕτως δὲ μάλιστα τούτῳ τῷ δαιμονίῳ
 φωτὶ πολλάκις ἐνάγοντι ἑαυτὸν εἰς τὸν πρῶτον
 καὶ ἐπέκειντο θεὸν ταῖς ἐνοσίαις καὶ κατὰ τὰς ἐν
 10 τῷ "Συμποσίῳ" ὑφηγημένας ὁδοὺς τῷ Πλάτῳ
 ἐφάνη ἐκεῖνος ὁ θεὸς ὁ μήτε μορφὴν μήτε τινα
 ἰδέαν ἔχων, ὑπὲρ δὲ νοῦν καὶ πᾶν τὸ νοητὸν
 ἰδρυμένος. Ὡς δὴ καὶ ἐγὼ Πορφύριος ἅπαξ λέγω

pany of heaven, where winds of delight blow, where
 is affection and desire that charms the sight, full of
 pure joy, brimming with streams of immortality
 from the gods which carry the allurements of the
 Loves, and sweet breeze and the windless brightness
 of high heaven. There dwell Minos and Rhada-
 manthus, brethren of the golden race of great
 Zeus, there righteous Aeacus and Plato, the sacred
 power, and noble Pythagoras and all who have set
 the dance of immortal love and won kinship with
 spirits most blessed, there where the heart keeps
 festival in everlasting joy. O blessed one, you have
 borne so many contests, and now move among holy
 spirits, crowned with mighty life.

"Muses, let us set going our song and the
 gracefully winding circle of our dance in honour of
 Plotinus the happy. My golden lyre has this much
 to tell of his good fortune."

23. The oracle says that he was mild and kind,
 most gentle and attractive, and we knew ourselves
 that he was like this. It says too that he sleep-
 lessly kept his soul pure and ever strove towards the
 divine which he loved with all his soul, and did
 everything to be delivered and "escape from the
 bitter wave of blood-drinking life here." So to this
 god-like man above all, who often raised himself in
 thought, according to the ways Plato teaches in the
Banquet,¹ to the First and Transcendent God, that God
 appeared who has neither shape nor any intelligible
 form, but is throned above intellect and all the
 intelligible. I, Porphyry, who am now in my sixty-

¹ 210-11: the second part of Diotima's speech, the
 "Greater Mysteries," which describes the ascent of the mind
 to the Absolute Beauty, identical with the Good.

πλησιάσαι καὶ ἐνωθῆναι ἔτος ἄγων ἐξηκοστὸν τε
 καὶ ὄγδοον. Ἐφάνη γοῦν τῷ Πλωτίνῳ σκοπὸς
 15 ἐγγύθι ναίων. Τέλος γὰρ αὐτῷ καὶ σκοπὸς ἦν
 τὸ ἐνωθῆναι καὶ πελάσαι τῷ ἐπὶ πᾶσι θεῷ.
 Ἐτυχε δὲ τετράκις που, ὅτε αὐτῷ συνήμην, τοῦ
 σκοποῦ τούτου ἐνεργεῖα ἀρρήτῳ καὶ οὐ δυνάμει.
 Καὶ ὅτι λοξῶς φερόμενον πολλάκις οἱ θεοὶ κατ-
 εύθυναν θαμινὴν φαέων ἀκτίνα πορόντες, ὡς
 20 ἐπισκέφει τῇ παρ' ἐκείνων καὶ ἐπιβλέπει γραφῆναι
 τὰ γραφέντα, εἴρηται. Ἐκ δὲ τῆς ἀγρύπνου
 ἔσωθεν τε καὶ ἔξωθεν θέας ἔδρακες, φησὶν, ὅσοις
 πολλά τε καὶ χαρίεντα, τὰ κεν βέα οὔτις ἴδοιτο
 ἀνθρώπων τῶν φιλοσοφία προσεχόντων. Ἡ γὰρ
 25 δὴ τῶν ἀνθρώπων θεωρία ἀνθρωπίνης μὲν ἂν
 γέναιτο ἀμείνων· ὡς δὲ πρὸς τὴν θείαν γνώσιν
 χαρίεσσα μὲν ἂν εἴη, οὐ μὴν ὥστε τὸ βάθος ἐλεῖν
 ἂν δυναθῆναι, ὥσπερ αἰροῦσιν οἱ θεοί. Ταῦτα μὲν
 οὖν ὃ τι ἔτι σῶμα περικείμενος ἐνήργει καὶ
 τίνων ἐτύγχανε δεδήλωκε. Μετὰ δὲ τὸ λυθῆναι
 30 ἐκ τοῦ σώματος ἐλθεῖν μὲν αὐτὸν φησιν εἰς τὴν
 δαιμονίαν ὁμήγυριν, πολιτεύεσθαι δ' ἐκεῖ φιλότητα,
 ἡμερον, εὐφροσύνην, ἔρωτα ἐξημμένον τοῦ θεοῦ,
 τετάχθαι δὲ καὶ τοὺς λεγομένους δικαστὰς τῶν
 ψυχῶν, παῖδας τοῦ θεοῦ, Μίνω καὶ Ραδάμανθυν
 καὶ Αἰακόν, πρὸς οὓς οὐ δικασθησόμενον οἴχεσθαι,
 35 συνεσόμενον δὲ τούτοις, οἷς καὶ οἱ ἄλλοι ὅσοι
 ἄριστοι. Σύνεισι δὲ τοιοῦτοι Πλάτων, Πυθαγόρας
 ὅποσοι τε ἄλλοι χορὸν στήριζον ἔρωτος ἀθανάτου·
 ἐκεῖ δὲ τὴν γέμεσιν τοὺς ὀλβίστους δαίμονας ἔχειν

eighth year, declare that once I drew near and was
 united to him. To Plotinus "the goal ever near was
 shown": for his end and goal was to be united to,
 to approach the God who is over all things. Four
 times while I was with him he attained that goal,
 in an unspeakable actuality and not in potency
 only. Also it is said that the gods often set him
 straight when he was going on a crooked course
 "sending down a solid shaft of light," which means
 that he wrote what he wrote under their inspection
 and supervision.¹ Through inward and outward
 wakefulness, the god says, "you saw many fair
 sights, hard to see" for men who study
 philosophy. The contemplation of men may certain-
 ly become better than human, but as compared with
 the divine knowledge it may be fair and fine, but not
 enough to be able to grasp the depths as the gods
 grasp them. Thus much the oracle has told about
 Plotinus's activity and fortunes while he was still in
 the body. After his deliverance from the body the
 god says that he came to "the company of heaven,"
 and that there affection rules and desire and joy and
 love kindled by God, and the sons of God hold their
 stations, who are judges of the souls, as we are told,
 Minos and Rhadamanthus and Aeacus; to them,
 the god says, he went not to be judged but to be
 their companion, as are the other noblest
 of mankind. Such are their companions, Plato,
 Pythagoras, and all who "set the dance of
 immortal love." There, he says, the most blessed

¹ Note that Porphyry attributes his master's achievement
 predominantly to divine inspiration and guidance. This has
 little support from the *Enneads*. Plotinus normally thinks
 that the philosopher can attain to the divine level without this
 sort of special assistance.

βίον τε μετιέναι τὸν ἐν θαλείαις καὶ εὐφροσύναις
καταπεπυκνωμένον καὶ τούτου διατελεῖν καὶ ὑπὸ
40 θεῶν μακαρίζομενον.

24. Τοιοῦτος μὲν οὖν ὁ Πλωτίνου ἡμῖν ἱστόρηται
βίος. Ἐπεὶ δὲ αὐτὸς τὴν διάταξιν καὶ τὴν
διόρθωσιν τῶν βιβλίων ποιῆσαι ἡμῖν ἐπέτρεψεν,
ἐγὼ δὲ κάκεινῳ ζῶντι ὑπεσχόμην καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις
5 ἑταίροις ἐπηγγειλάμην ποιῆσαι τούτου, πρῶτον μὲν
τὰ βιβλία οὐ κατὰ χρόνους εἶσαι φύρδην ἐκδεδομένα
ἐδικαίωσα, μιμησάμενος δ' Ἀπολλόδωρον τὸν
Ἀθηναῖον καὶ Ἀνδρόνικον τὸν Περιπατητικόν,
ὧν ὁ μὲν Ἐπίχαρμον τὸν κωμωδιογράφον εἰς
δέκα τόμους φέρων συνήγαγεν, ὁ δὲ τὰ Ἀριστοτέ-
10 λους καὶ Θεοφράστου εἰς πραγματείας διεῖλε τὰς
οἰκείας ὑποθέσεις εἰς ταῦτον συναγαγών· οὕτω
δὴ καὶ ἐγὼ νῦν ὄντα ἔχων τὰ τοῦ Πλωτίνου βιβλία
διείλον μὲν εἰς ἕξ ἐννεάδας τῇ τελειότητι τοῦ ἕξ
ἀριθμοῦ καὶ ταῖς ἐννεάδων ἀσμένως ἐπιτυχῶν,
15 ἐκάστη δὲ ἐννεάδι τὰ οἰκεία φέρων συνεφόρησα
δοὺς καὶ τάξιν πρῶτην τοῖς ἐλαφροτέροις προβλή-
μασιν. Ἡ μὲν γὰρ πρώτη ἐννεάς ἔχει τὰ
ἠθικώτερα τάδε·

I. 1. α' Τί τὸ ζῶον καὶ τίς ὁ ἄνθρωπος·
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ἡδοναὶ καὶ λύπαι.

20 I. 2. β' Περὶ ἀρετῶν·
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ἐπειδὴ τὰ κακὰ ἐνταῦθα.

¹ Born c. 180 B.C.: chronologist and scholar; a pupil of the great Aristarchus.

² Of Rhodes; 1st century B.C. It was his edition (c. 40 B.C.) that brought the mature philosophical works of Aristotle back into general circulation.

spirits have their birth and live a life filled full of festivity and joy; and this life lasts for ever, made blessed by the gods.

24. This, then, is my account of the life of Plotinus. He himself entrusted me with the arrangement and editing of his books, and I promised him in his lifetime and gave undertakings to our other friends that I would carry out this task. So first of all I did not think it right to leave the books in confusion in order of time as they were issued. I followed the example of Apollodorus of Athens,¹ who collected the works of Epicharmus the comedian into ten volumes, and Andronicus the Peripatetic,² who classified the works of Aristotle and Theophrastus according to subject, bringing together the discussions of related topics. So I, as I had fifty-four treatises of Plotinus, divided them into six sets of nine (Enneads)—it gave me pleasure to find the perfection of the number six along with the nines. I put related treatises together in each Ennead, giving the first place to the less difficult questions.³

The First Ennead contains the treatises mainly concerned with morals, as follows:

I. 1. What is the Living Being, and what is Man?⁴

I. 2. On Virtues.

³ On Porphyry's editorial methods see Introduction (pp. ix-xi).

⁴ Again, as in the chronological list, the first words of the treatise have been omitted in the translation. For the variations of the titles in Porphyry's two lists, in the MSS of the *Enneads* themselves, and in references to the treatises by other authors, see the complete table (with commentary) in P. Henry, *États du Texte de Plotin*, ch. I.

PORPHYRY

- 25 I. 3. γ' Περὶ διαλεκτικῆς·
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· τίς τέχνη ἢ μέθοδος.
- I. 4. δ' Περὶ εὐδαιμονίας·
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· τὸ εἰ ζῆν καὶ τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν.
- I. 5. ε' Εἰ ἐν παρατάσει χρόνου τὸ εὐδαι-
μονεῖν·
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· εἰ τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν ἐπίδοσιν.
- I. 6. ζ' Περὶ τοῦ καλοῦ·
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· τὸ καλὸν ἔστι μὲν ἐν ὄψει.
- 30 I. 7. ζ' Περὶ τοῦ πρώτου ἀγαθοῦ καὶ τῶν
ἄλλων ἀγαθῶν·
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ἀρ' ἂν τις ἕτερον εἴποι ἀγαθὸν
ἐκάστω.
- I. 8. η' Πόθεν τὰ κακά·
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· οἱ ζητοῦντες πόθεν τὰ κακά.
- I. 9. θ' Περὶ τῆς ἐκ τοῦ βίου εὐλόγου
ἐξαγωγῆς·
35 οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· οὐκ ἐξάξεις ἵνα μὴ ἐξέλθῃ.

Ἡ μὲν οὖν πρώτη ἐννεὰς τάδε περιέχει ἠθικωτέ-
ρας ὑποθέσεις περιλαβοῦσα. Ἡ δὲ δευτέρα τῶν
φυσικῶν συναγωγῆν ἔχουσα τὰ περὶ κόσμου καὶ
τὰ τῷ κόσμῳ ἐνήκοντα περιέχει. Ἔστι δὲ
ταῦτα·

- 40 II. 1. α' Περὶ τοῦ κόσμου·
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· τὸν κόσμον αἰεὶ λέγοντες καὶ πρόσθεν
εἶναι.
- II. 2. β' Περὶ τῆς κυκλοφορίας·
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· διὰ τί κύκλῳ κινεῖται.
- 45 II. 3. γ' Εἰ ποιεῖ τὰ ἄστρα·
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ὅτι ἡ τῶν ἄστρον φορὰ σημαίνει.

THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS

- I. 3. On Dialectic.
- I. 4. On Well-Being.
- I. 5. Whether Well-Being depends on Extension of Time.
- I. 6. On Beauty.
- I. 7. On the First Good and the other goods.
- I. 8. On the Origin of Evils.
- I. 9. On the Reasonable Departure from Life.

These are the treatises contained in the First Ennead, which includes mainly ethical subject-matter. The Second contains a collection of the treatises on natural philosophy, including those on the physical universe and subjects connected with it. They are:

- II. 1. On the Universe.
- II. 2. On the Circular Motion.
- II. 3. Whether the Stars are Causes.

PORPHYRY

- II. 4. δ' Περὶ τῶν δύο ἰλῶν.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· τὴν λεγομένην ἕλην.
- II. 5. ε' Περὶ τοῦ δυνάμει καὶ ἐνεργείᾳ.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· λέγεται· τὸ μὲν δυνάμει, τὸ δὲ ἐνεργείᾳ.
- 50 II. 6. ζ' Περὶ ποιότητος καὶ εἶδους.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ἀρα τὸ ὄν καὶ ἡ οὐσία ἕτερον.
- II. 7. ζ' Περὶ τῆς δι' ὄλων κράσεως.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· περὶ τῆς δι' ὄλων.
- II. 8. η' Πῶς τὰ πόρρω ὀρώμενα μικρὰ
φαίνεται.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ἀρα τὰ πόρρω ἐλάττω φαίνεται.
- 55 II. 9. θ' Πρὸς τοὺς κακὸν τὸν δημιουργὸν τοῦ
κόσμου καὶ τὸν κόσμον κακὸν
εἶναι λέγοντας.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ἐπειδὴ τοῖνυν ἐφάνη ἡμῖν.

Ἡ δὲ τρίτη ἐννεὰς ἔτι τὰ περὶ κόσμον ἔχουσα
60 περιέλιψε τὰ περὶ τῶν κατὰ τὸν κόσμον θεωρου-
μένων ταῦτα.

- III. 1. α' Περὶ εἰμαρμένης.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ἀπαντα τὰ γιγνώμενα.
- III. 2. β' Περὶ προνοίας πρῶτον.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· τὸ μὲν τῶ αὐτομάτῃ.
- 65 III. 3. γ' Περὶ προνοίας δεύτερον.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· τί τοῖνυν δοκεῖ περὶ τούτων.
- III. 4. δ' Περὶ τοῦ εἰληχότος ἡμᾶς δαίμονος.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· τῶν μὲν αἰ ὑποστάσεις.
- III. 5. ε' Περὶ ἔρωτος.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· περὶ ἔρωτος πότερα θεός τις.
- 70 III. 6. ζ' Περὶ τῆς ἀπαθείας τῶν ἀσωμάτων.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· τὰς αἰσθήσεις οὐ λέγοντες πάθη.

THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS

- II. 4. On the Two Kinds of Matter.
- II. 5. On What Exists Potentially and What
Actually.
- II. 6. On Quality and Form.
- II. 7. On Complete Intermingling.
- II. 8. How Distant Objects appear Small.
- II. 9. Against those who say that the Universe
and its Maker are Evil.

The contents of the Third Ennead are still con-
cerned with the physical universe; it includes the
following treatises dealing with considerations
about the universe:

- III. 1. On Destiny.
- III. 2. On Providence I.
- III. 3. On Providence II.
- III. 4. On Our Allotted Guardian Spirit.
- III. 5. On Love.
- III. 6. On the Impassibility of Beings without
Body.

PORPHYRY

- III. 7. ζ' Περὶ αἰῶνος καὶ χρόνου.
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τὸν αἰῶνα καὶ τὸν χρόνον.
- 75 III. 8. η' Περὶ φύσεως καὶ θεωρίας καὶ τοῦ
ἐνός.
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· παίζοντες δὴ τὴν πρώτην.
- III. 9. θ' Ἐπισκέψεις διάφοροι.
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· νοῦς φησιν ὄρᾳ ἐνούσιος.
25. Ταύτας τὰς τρεῖς ἐννεάδας ἡμῖς ἐν ἐνὶ
σωματίῳ τάξαντες κατεσκευάσαμεν. Ἐν δὲ τῇ
τρίτῃ ἐννεάδι ἐτάξαμεν καὶ τὸ "Περὶ τοῦ εἰληχό-
τος ἡμῶν δαίμονος", ὅτι καθόλου θεωρεῖται τὰ
5 περὶ αὐτοῦ καὶ ἔστι τὸ πρόβλημα καὶ παρὰ τοῖς
τὰ κατὰ τὰς γενέσεις τῶν ἀνθρώπων σκεπτο-
μένοις. Ὁμοίως δὲ καὶ ὁ "Περὶ ἔρωτος" τόπος.
Τὸ δὲ "Περὶ αἰῶνος καὶ χρόνου" διὰ τὸ περὶ
τοῦ χρόνου ἐνταῦθα ἐτάξαμεν. Τὸ δὲ "Περὶ
φύσεως καὶ θεωρίας καὶ τοῦ ἐνός" διὰ τὸ περὶ
10 φύσεως κεφάλαιον ἐνταῦθα τέτακται. Ἡ δὲ
τετάρτη ἐννεὰς μετὰ τὰ περὶ κόσμου τὰ περὶ
ψυχῆς εἰληχε συγγράμματα. Ἐχει δὲ τάδε:
- IV. 1. α' Περὶ οὐσίας ψυχῆς πρώτην.
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τὴν τῆς ψυχῆς οὐσίαν τίς ποτέ
ἔστι.
- IV. 2. β' Περὶ οὐσίας ψυχῆς δεύτερον.
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ τῷ νοητῷ.
- 15 IV. 3. γ' Περὶ ψυχῆς ἀποριῶν πρώτην.
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· περὶ ψυχῆς ὅσα ἀπορήσαντας δεῖ εἰς
εὐπορίαν καταστήναι.
- IV. 4. δ' Περὶ ψυχῆς ἀποριῶν δεύτερον.
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τί οὖν ἐρεῖ.

THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS

- III. 7. On Eternity and Time.
- III. 8. On Nature and Contemplation and the
One.
- III. 9. Various Considerations.

25. We have arranged these three Enneads to form a single volume. We placed the treatise *On Our Allotted Guardian Spirit* in the Third Ennead because the subject is treated in a general way and the question is one of those which people consider when dealing with the origins of man. The same applies to the treatise entitled *On Love*. We included *Time and Eternity* here because of the discussion of time. *On Nature and Contemplation and the One* is placed here because of the section on Nature. After the treatises on the physical universe comes the Fourth Ennead, containing those dealing with the soul. Its contents are as follows:

- IV. 1. On the Essence of the Soul I.
- IV. 2. On the Essence of the Soul II.
- IV. 3. On Difficulties about the Soul I.
- IV. 4. On Difficulties about the Soul II.

PORPHYRY

- IV. 5. ε' Περὶ ψυχῆς ἀποριῶν τρίτον ἢ περὶ
ὄψιν·
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· ἐπειδὴ ὑπερεθέμεθα σκέψασθαι.
- IV. 6. ζ' Περὶ αἰσθήσεως καὶ μνήμης·
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τὰς αἰσθήσεις οὐ τυπώσεις.
- 25 IV. 7. ζ' Περὶ ἀθανασίας ψυχῆς·
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· εἰ δὲ ἔστιν ἀθάνατος ἕκαστος.
- IV. 8. η' Περὶ τῆς εἰς τὰ σώματα καθόδου τῆς
ψυχῆς·
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· πολλακίς ἐγειρόμενος.
- IV. 9. θ' Εἰ αἱ πᾶσαι ψυχαὶ μία·
30 οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· ἄρα ὡς περὶ τὴν ψυχὴν ἕκαστου φαμέν.
- Ἡ μὲν οὖν τετάρτη ἐννεὰς τὰς περὶ ψυχῆς
αὐτῆς ὑποθέσεις πάσας. Ἡ δὲ πέμπτη ἔχει μὲν
τὰς περὶ νοῦ, περιέχει δὲ ἕκαστον τῶν βιβλίων ἐν
τισι καὶ περὶ τοῦ ἐπέκεινα καὶ περὶ τοῦ ἐν ψυχῇ
35 νοῦ καὶ περὶ τῶν ἰδεῶν. Ἔστι δὲ τάδε·
- V. 1. α' Περὶ τῶν τριῶν ἀρχικῶν ὑποστάσεων·
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τί ποτέ ἔστω ἄρα τὸ πεποιηκός.
- V. 2. β' Περὶ γενέσεως καὶ τάξεως τῶν μετὰ
τὸ πρῶτον·
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· τὸ ἐν πάντα.
- 40 V. 3. γ' Περὶ τῶν γνωριστικῶν ὑποστάσεων
καὶ τοῦ ἐπέκεινα·
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· ἄρα τὸ νοοῦν ἑαυτὸ ποικίλον δεῖ
εἶναι.
- V. 4. δ' Πῶς ἀπὸ τοῦ πρώτου τὸ μετὰ τὸ
πρῶτον καὶ περὶ τοῦ ἐνός·
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχή· εἴ τι ἔστι μετὰ τὸ πρῶτον, ἀνάγκη ἐξ
ἐκείνου εἶναι.

THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS

- IV. 5. On Difficulties about the Soul III, or On
Vision.
- IV. 6. On Sense-Perception and Memory.
- IV. 7. On the Immortality of the Soul.
- IV. 8. On the Descent of the Soul into Bodies.
- IV. 9. If All Souls are One.

So the Fourth Ennead contains all the treatises whose subject is the soul itself. The fifth includes those on Intellect, and all books in which there is also reference to That Which is beyond Intellect and to the intellect in the soul, and to the Ideas. They are as follows:

- V. 1. On the Three Primary Hypostases.
- V. 2. On the Origin and Order of the Beings which came after the First.
- V. 3. On the Knowing Hypostases and That Which is Beyond.
- V. 4. How That which is after the First comes from the First, and on the One.

PORPHYRY

- 45 V. 5. ε' Ὅτι οὐκ ἔξω τοῦ νοῦ τὰ νοητὰ καὶ
περὶ τὰγαθοῦ.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· τὸν νοῦν τὸν ἀληθῆ νοῦν.
- V. 6. ζ' Περὶ τοῦ τὸ ἐπέκεινα τοῦ ὄντος μὴ
νοεῖν καὶ τί τὸ πρῶτως νοοῦν καὶ
τί τὸ δευτέρως.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· τὸ μὲν ἐστὶ νοεῖν.
- 50 V. 7. ζ' Περὶ τοῦ εἰ καὶ τῶν κατέκαστά ἐστιν
εἶδη.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· εἰ καὶ τοῦ κατέκαστον.
- V. 8. η' Περὶ τοῦ νοητοῦ κάλλους.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ἐπειδὴ φαμεν τὸν ἐν θεῶ τοῦ νοητοῦ.
- V. 9. θ' Περὶ νοῦ καὶ τῶν ἰδεῶν καὶ τοῦ ὄντος.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· πάντες ἀνθρωποὶ ἐξ ἀρχῆς γενόμενοι.
- 55 26. Καὶ τὴν τετάρτην οὖν καὶ πέμπτην ἐννεάδα
εἰς ἓν σωματίον κατελέξαμεν. Λοιπὴν δὲ τὴν ἕκτην
ἐννεάδα εἰς ἄλλο σωματίον, ὡς διὰ τριῶν σωματίων
γεγράφθαι τὰ Πλωτίνου πάντα, ὧν τὸ μὲν
5 πρῶτον σωματίον ἔχει τρεῖς ἐννεάδας, τὸ δὲ
δεύτερον δύο, τὸ δὲ τρίτον μίαν. Ἔστι δὲ τὰ τοῦ
τρίτου σωματίου, ἐννεάδος δὲ ἕκτης, ταῦτα·
- VI. 1. α' Περὶ τῶν γενῶν τοῦ ὄντος πρῶτον.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· περὶ τῶν ὄντων πόσα καὶ τίνα.
- 10 VI. 2. β' Περὶ τῶν γενῶν τοῦ ὄντος δεύτερον.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· ἐπειδὴ περὶ τῶν λεγομένων δέκα γενῶν
ἐπέσκεπται.
- VI. 3. γ' Περὶ τῶν γενῶν τοῦ ὄντος τρίτον.
οὐ ἡ ἀρχή· περὶ μὲν τῆς οὐσίας ὅση δοκεῖ.

THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS

- V. 5. That the Intelligibles are not outside the
Intellect and on the Good.
- V. 6. On the Fact that That Which is beyond
Being does not think, and on What is
the Primary and What the Secondary
Thinking Principle.
- V. 7. On whether there are Forms of
Particulars.
- V. 8. On the Intelligible Beauty.
- V. 9. On Intellect, the Forms, and Being.

26. So we arranged the Fourth and Fifth Enneads
to form one volume. The remaining, Sixth, Ennead
we made into another volume, so that all of Plotinus's
writings were distributed in three volumes, of which
the first contains three Enneads, the second two, and
the third one. The contents of the third volume,
the Sixth Ennead, are these:

- VI. 1. On the Kinds of Being I.
- VI. 2. On the Kinds of Being II.
- VI. 3. On the Kinds of Being III.

PORPHYRY

- 15 VI. 4. δ' Περὶ τοῦ τὸ ὄν ἐν καὶ ταὐτὸ ὄν ἅμα
πανταχοῦ εἶναι ὅλον πρῶτον·
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχὴ· ἀρὰ γὰρ ἡ ψυχὴ πανταχοῦ τῷ παντὶ
πᾶρεστι.
- VI. 5. ε' Περὶ τοῦ τὸ ὄν ἐν καὶ ταὐτὸ ὄν ἅμα
πανταχοῦ εἶναι ὅλον δεύτερον·
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχὴ· τὸ ἐν καὶ ταὐτὸν ἀριθμῶ πανταχοῦ ἅμα
ὅλον εἶναι.
- 20 VI. 6. ζ' Περὶ ἀριθμῶν·
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχὴ· ἀρὰ ἐστὶ τὸ πλῆθος ἀπόστασις τοῦ
ἐνός.
- VI. 7. ζ' Πῶς τὸ πλῆθος τῶν ἰδεῶν ὑπέστη
καὶ περὶ τὰγαθοῦ·
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχὴ· εἰς γένεσιν πέμπων ὁ θεός.
- VI. 8. η' Περὶ τοῦ ἐκονισίου καὶ θελήματος
τοῦ ἐνός·
25 οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχὴ· ἀρὰ ἐστὶν ἐπὶ θεῶν εἶ τι ἔστιν ἐπὶ
αὐτοῖς ζητεῖν.
- VI. 9. θ' Περὶ τὰγαθοῦ ἢ τοῦ ἐνός·
οὐδ' ἡ ἀρχὴ· ἅπαντα τὰ ὄντα τῷ ἐνὶ ἐστὶν ὄντα.

30 Τὰ μὲν οὖν βιβλία εἰς ἕξ ἐννεάδας τοῦτον τὸν
τρόπον κατετάξαμεν τέσσαρα καὶ πενήκοντα
ὄντα· καταβεβλήμεθα δὲ καὶ εἰς τινὰ αὐτῶν
ὑπομνήματα ἀτάκτως διὰ τοὺς ἐπείξαντας ἡμᾶς
ἐταίρους γράφειν εἰς ἅπερ αὐτοὶ τὴν σαφήνειαν
αὐτοῖς γενέσθαι ἠξίου. Ἀλλὰ μὴν καὶ τὰ
κεφάλαια τῶν πάντων πλὴν τοῦ "Περὶ τοῦ
καλοῦ" διὰ τὸ λῆσαι ἡμῖν πεποιήμεθα κατὰ τὴν
35 χρονικὴν ἔκδοσιν τῶν βιβλίων· ἀλλ' ἐν τούτῳ οὐ
τὰ κεφάλαια μόνον καθ' ἕκαστον ἔκκεται τῶν
βιβλίων, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐπιχειρήματα, ἃ ὡς κεφάλαια

THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS

- VI. 4. On the Presence of Being, One and the
Same, Everywhere as a Whole I.
- VI. 5. On the Presence of Being, One and the
Same, Everywhere as a Whole II.
- VI. 6. On Numbers.
- VI. 7. How the Multitude of the Forms came
into being and On the Good
- VI. 8. On Free Will and the Will of the One.
- VI. 9. On the Good or the One.

So we arranged the fifty-four books in this way in
six Enneads; and we have included commentaries
on some of them, irregularly, because friends
pressed us to write on points they wanted cleared
up for them. We also composed headings for all
of them except *On Beauty*, because it was not
available to us, following the chronological order in
which the books were issued; and we have pro-
duced not only the headings for each book but also
summaries of the arguments, which are numbered

PORPHYRY

συναριθμείται. Νυνὶ δὲ πειρασόμεθα ἕκαστον τῶν
βιβλίων διερχόμενοι τάς τε στιγμὰς αὐτῶν
προσθεῖναι καὶ εἴ τι ἡμαρτημένον εἴη κατὰ λέξιν
40 διορθοῦν· καὶ ὅ τι ἂν ἡμᾶς ἄλλο κινήσῃ, αὐτὸ
σημαίνει τὸ ἔργον.

THE LIFE OF PLOTINUS

in the same way as the headings.¹ Now we shall try to revise all the books and put in the punctuation and correct any verbal errors: anything else that may occur to us the work itself will make clear.

¹ On the attempts of modern scholars to discover traces of the commentaries, headings, and summaries which Porphyry mentions here in the text of the *Enneads* see Schwyzer, art. cit., col. 495-499. The marginal numbers which appear in some MSS may be references to Porphyry's lost commentaries: cp. Henry, *États du Texte de Plotin*, pp. 312-332 and Henry-Schwyzzer I, Preface, p. xxxvii. The curious "table of contents" which forms the second part of the Arabic *Theology of Aristotle* may be a translation of Porphyry's "headings" for the first 34 chapters of IV 4: cp. Henry-Schwyzzer II, Preface pp. xxvii-xxviii. The English translation of these "headings" is printed under the text of IV 4, 1-34.

SVMMARIVM

Τάδε ἔνεστιν ἑνεάδος πρώτης Πλωτίνου φιλοσό-
φου·

- I. 1. α' Περὶ τοῦ τί τὸ ζῶον καὶ τίς ὁ ἄνθρωπος.
- I. 2. β' Περὶ ἀρετῶν.
- I. 3. γ' Περὶ διαλεκτικῆς.
- I. 4. δ' Περὶ εὐδαιμονίας.
- I. 5. ε' Περὶ τοῦ εἰ τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν ἐπίδοσιν
χρόνω λαμβάνει.
- I. 6. ς' Περὶ τοῦ καλοῦ.
- I. 7. ζ' Περὶ τοῦ πρώτου ἀγαθοῦ καὶ τῶν
ἄλλων ἀγαθῶν.
- I. 8. η' Περὶ τοῦ τίνα καὶ πόθεν τὰ κακά.
- I. 9. θ' Περὶ ἐξαγωγῆς.

ENNEAD I. 1

I. 1. WHAT IS THE LIVING BEING, AND WHAT IS MAN?

Introductory Note

THIS treatise, though placed first by Porphyry in his edition, is the last but one (No. 53) in his chronological order, and was written by Plotinus shortly before his death (*Life*, ch. 6). Its purpose is to establish the impassibility of our higher soul or true self and its separateness from our animal nature, the compound of body and lower soul, which desires and fears, sins and suffers. This Plotinus does by a critical examination of Peripatetic and Stoic doctrine about the nature and functions of soul and its relationship to body, in which he adopts a great deal of Aristotle's teaching in the *De Anima*, but adapts it to his own views. He concludes by discussing the difficulties which arise for his view from Plato's teaching about the transmigration of souls and their judgement and punishment for sin after death.

Synopsis

What is it in us that feels and thinks—soul or body or a compound of both (ch. 1)? First of all what do we mean by soul? Is it a kind of Form? If so it will be impassible and transcend bodily life, giving to body and receiving nothing from it. How then is soul related to body? Our conclusion, after examining various views that have been put forward, is that our higher soul, our true self, is in fact entirely unaffected by the sensations and passions of bodily life; these belong to the compound of lower soul, a sort of emanation from the higher soul, and body; reason, on the other hand, is an activity of our true self

WHAT IS THE LIVING BEING

(chs. 2-7). The higher realities, Intellect and God, the One or Good who is beyond Intellect, we possess as "ours" in a sense but yet transcending us (ch. 8). Error and sin belong to our lower nature; and so do the moral virtues which result from habit and training; true reasoning and the intellectual virtues belong to our true, higher self (chs. 9-10). After a brief consideration of children's consciousness and the consciousness of transmigrated human souls in animal bodies (ch. 11) we come to the serious problem of how to reconcile our view of the sinlessness of the true self with Plato's teaching about judgement and punishment after death; we conclude that it is the lower soul, the "image" of the higher soul, which sins and is punished and goes to Hades (ch. 12). This investigation, being a properly intellectual activity, has been carried out by our true self or higher soul, and in carrying it out it has moved with a motion which is not that of bodies but its own life (ch. 13).

I. 1. (53) ΠΕΡΙ ΤΟΥ ΤΙ ΤΟ ΖΩΙΟΝ ΚΑΙ
ΤΙΣ Ο ΑΝΘΡΩΠΟΣ

1. Ἡδοναὶ καὶ λύπαι φόβοι τε καὶ θάρρη ἐπιθυ-
μῖαι τε καὶ ἀποστροφαὶ καὶ τὸ ἀλγεῖν τίνος ἂν
εἶεν; Ἡ γὰρ ψυχῆς, ἢ χρωμένης ψυχῆς σώματι,
ἢ τρίτου τινὸς ἐξ ἀμφυῖν. Διχῶς δὲ καὶ τοῦτο ἢ
5 γὰρ τὸ μίγμα, ἢ ἄλλο ἕτερον ἐκ τοῦ μίγματος.
Ὅμοίως δὲ καὶ τὰ ἐκ τούτων τῶν παθημάτων
γινόμενα καὶ πραττόμενα καὶ δοξαζόμενα. Καὶ
οὖν καὶ διάνοια καὶ δόξα ζητητέαι, πότερα ὦν τὰ
πάθη, ἢ αἱ μὲν οὕτως, αἱ δὲ ἄλλως. Καὶ τὰς
νοήσεις δὲ θεωρητέον, πῶς καὶ τίνος, καὶ δὴ καὶ
10 αὐτὸ τοῦτο τὸ ἐπισκοποῦν καὶ περὶ τούτων τὴν
ζήτησιν καὶ τὴν κρίσιν ποιούμενον τί ποτ' ἂν εἴη.
Καὶ πρότερον τὸ αἰσθάνεσθαι τίνος; Ἐντεῦθεν
γὰρ ἄρχεσθαι προσήκει, ἐπεὶ τὰ πάθη ἢ εἰσι
αἰσθήσεις τινὲς ἢ οὐκ ἀνευ αἰσθήσεως.

2. Πρῶτον δὲ ψυχὴν ληπτέον, πότερον ἄλλο μὲν
ψυχῆ, ἄλλο δὲ ψυχῆ εἶναι. Εἰ γὰρ τοῦτο, σύνθετόν
τι ἢ ψυχῆ καὶ οὐκ ἄτοπον ἤδη δέχεσθαι αὐτὴν καὶ

¹ The starting-point of the discussion seems to be a passage of Aristotle, *De Anima* A. 4. 408b 1 ff., where Aristotle raises the question whether the soul is really "moved" when it has these affections. It is possible also that Plotinus has in mind (as Aristotle most probably has) Plato's description at *Laus* X 897A of the motions of soul which are prior to and the cause of the motions of body: this seems more relevant to the present

I. 1. WHAT IS THE LIVING BEING,
AND WHAT IS MAN?

1. Pleasures and sadnesses, fears and assurances, desires and aversions and pain—whose are they?¹ They either belong to the soul or the soul using a body or a third thing composed of both (and this can be understood in two ways, either as meaning the mixture or another different thing resulting from the mixture). The same applies to the results of these feelings, both acts and opinions. So we must investigate reasoning and opinion, to see whether they belong to the same as the feelings, or whether this is true of some reasonings and opinions, and something different of others. We must also consider intellectual acts and see how they take place and who or what they belong to, and observe what sort of thing it is that acts as overseer and carries out the investigation and comes to a decision about these matters. And, first of all, who or what does sensation belong to? That is where we ought to begin, as feelings are either a sort of sensations or do not occur without sensation.

2. First we must consider soul. Is soul one thing and essential soulness another? If this is so, soul will be a composite thing and there will be nothing

discussion than the passages (*Republic* 429C–D and 430A–B; *Phaedo* 83B) cited by Henry-Schwyzler in their *apparatus fontium*. (They also cite the Aristotle passage.)

αὐτῆς εἶναι τὰ πάθη τὰ τοιαῦτα, εἰ ἐπιτρέψει καὶ
 5 οὕτως ὁ λόγος, καὶ ὅλως ἕξεις καὶ διαθέσεις
 χείρους καὶ βελτίους. Ἡ, εἰ ταῦτόν ἐστι ψυχὴ
 καὶ τὸ ψυχῆ εἶναι, εἰδὸς τι ἂν εἴη ψυχὴ ἀδεκτον
 τούτων ἀπασῶν τῶν ἐνεργειῶν, ὧν ἐπιστικὸν
 ἄλλῃ, ἐαυτῷ δὲ συμφυᾶ ἔχον τὴν ἐνέργειαν ἐν ἐαυ-
 10 τῷ, ἦντινα ἂν φήνῃ ὁ λόγος. Οὕτω γὰρ καὶ τὸ
 ἀθάνατον ἀληθὲς λέγειν, εἴπερ δεῖ τὸ ἀθάνατον καὶ
 ἀφθαρτον ἀπαθὲς εἶναι, ἄλλω ἑαυτοῦ πως διδόν,
 αὐτὸ δὲ παρ' ἄλλου μηδὲν ἢ ὅσον παρὰ τῶν πρὸ
 αὐτοῦ ἔχειν, ὧν μὴ ἀποτεμῆται κρειττόνων
 ὄντων. Τί γὰρ ἂν καὶ φοβοῖτο τοιοῦτον ἀδεκτον
 15 ὄν παντὸς τοῦ ἔξω; Ἐκείνο τοίνυν φοβείσθω, ὃ
 δύναται παθεῖν. Οὐδὲ θαρρεῖ τοίνυν τοῦτοις γὰρ
 θάμνος, οἷς ἂν τὰ φοβερά μὴ παρῆ; Ἐπιθυμῶμαι
 τε, αἶ διὰ σώματος ἀποπληροῦνται κενουμένου καὶ
 πληρουμένου, ἄλλου τοῦ πληρουμένου καὶ κενουμέ-
 20 νου ὄντος; Πῶς δὲ μίξεως; Ἡ τὸ οὐσιώδες
 ἄμικτον. Πῶς δὲ ἐπεισαγωγῆς τινῶν; Οὕτω
 γὰρ ἂν σπεύδοι εἰς τὸ μὴ εἶναι ὃ ἐστι. Τὸ δ'
 ἀλγεῖν ἔτι πόρρω. Λυπεῖσθαι δὲ πῶς ἢ ἐπὶ τίνι;
 Αὐταρκες γὰρ τό γε ἀπλοῦν ἐν οὐσίᾳ, οἷόν ἐστι
 μένον ἐν οὐσίᾳ τῇ αὐτοῦ. Ἡδεταὶ δὲ προσγε-
 νομένου τίνος, οὐδενὸς οὐδ' ἀγαθοῦ προσιόντος;

¹ Cp. Aristotle, *Metaphysics* H. 2. 1043 b. 3. Ψυχὴ μὲν γὰρ καὶ ψυχῆ εἶναι ταῦτόν, ἀνθρώπῳ δὲ καὶ ἄνθρωπος οὐ ταῦτόν, εἰ μὴ καὶ ἡ ψυχὴ ἄνθρωπος λεχθήσεται. "For 'soul' and 'to be soul' are the same, but 'to be man' and 'man' are not the same, unless even the bare soul is to be called man" (Ross). For Plotinus, on this point in opposition to Aris-
 96

strange in its admitting and possessing feelings of this kind (if the argument turns out to require this), and in general better and worse states and dispositions. If on the other hand soul and essential soulness are one and the same,¹ soul will be a kind of Form, which will not admit of all these activities which it imparts to something else, but has an immanent connatural activity of its own, whatever the discussion reveals that activity to be. If this is so, we can really call it immortal, if the immortal and incorruptible must be impassive, giving something of itself somehow to another thing, but receiving nothing from anything else, except what it has from the principles prior to it, those higher principles from which it is not cut off. What could a thing of this kind fear, since it admits nothing at all from outside? Let that fear which is capable of being affected! Nor does it feel assurance. How can there be assurance for those who never encounter anything frightening? And how can there be desires, which are satisfied by the body when it is emptied and filled, since that which is emptied and filled is different from the soul? And how could it admit of mixture? Substantial being is unmixed. How could there be any sort of addition? If there was, it would be hastening to be no more what it is. Pain is far from it too; and how could it feel sad, and what about? For that which is essentially simple is sufficient for itself, inasmuch as it stays set in its own essential nature. And will it be pleased at any increase, when nothing, not even any good, can accrue to it? It is

totle, the rational soul is the "true man," the "man within" (ch. 10); our lower nature is "another man" which has attached itself to the first man, our true self (VI. 4. 14).

25 Ὁ γάρ ἐστιν, ἔστιν αἰεί. Καὶ μὴν οὐδὲ αἰσθίηται
οὐδὲ διάνοια οὐδὲ δόξα περὶ αὐτό· αἰσθησις γὰρ
παραδοχὴ εἶδους ἢ καὶ πάθους σώματος, διάνοια
δὲ καὶ δόξα ἐπ' αἰσθησιν. Περὶ δὲ νοήσεως
ἐπισκεπτέον πῶς, εἰ ταύτην αὐτῇ καταλείψομεν.
30 καὶ περὶ ἡδονῆς αὐ καθαρᾶς, εἰ συμβαίνει περὶ
αὐτὴν μόνην οὖσαν.

3. Ἀλλὰ γὰρ ἐν σώματι θετέον ψυχὴν, οὖσαν
εἴτε πρὸ τούτου, εἴτ' ἐν τούτῳ, ἐξ οὗ καὶ αὐτῆς
ζῶον τὸ σύμπαν ἐκλήθη. Χρωμένη μὲν οὖν
σώματι οἷα ὄργανῳ οὐκ ἀναγκάζεται δέξασθαι τὰ
5 διὰ τοῦ σώματος παθήματα, ὥσπερ οὐδὲ τὰ τῶν
ὀργάνων παθήματα οἱ τεχνίται· αἰσθησιν δὲ τάχ'
ἂν ἀναγκαίως, εἴπερ δεῖ χρῆσθαι τῷ ὄργανῳ
γινωσκούσῃ τὰ ἐξωθεν παθήματα ἐξ αἰσθήσεως·
ἐπεὶ καὶ τὸ χρῆσθαι ὄμμασιν ἐστὶν ὄραν. Ἀλλὰ
καὶ βλάβαι περὶ τὸ ὄραν, ὥστε καὶ λῦπαι καὶ τὸ
10 ἀλγείν καὶ ὄλως ὅ τι περ ἂν περὶ τὸ σῶμα πᾶν
γίγνηται· ὥστε καὶ ἐπιθυμίαι ζητούσης τὴν
θεραπείαν τοῦ ὀργάνου. Ἀλλὰ πῶς ἀπὸ τοῦ
σώματος εἰς αὐτὴν ἦξει τὰ πάθη; Σῶμα μὲν γὰρ
σώματι ἄλλῳ μεταδώσει τῶν ἑαυτοῦ. Σῶμα δὲ
15 ψυχῇ πῶς; Τοῦτο γὰρ ἐστὶν οἷον ἄλλου παθόντος
ἄλλο παθεῖν. Μέχρι γὰρ τοῦ τὸ μὲν εἶναι τὸ
χρῶμενον, τὸ δὲ ὧ χρῆται, χωρὶς ἐστὶν ἐκότερον·
χωρίζεται γοῦν ὁ τὸ χρῶμενον τὴν ψυχὴν διδοῦς.
Ἀλλὰ πρὸ τοῦ χωρίσαι διὰ φιλοσοφίας αὐτὸ πῶς
εἶχεν; Ἡ ἐμέμικτο. Ὡς ἂν εἰ ἐμέμικτο, ἢ κρᾶσίς

¹ This is Aristotelian; cp. *De Anima* B. 12. 24a 18.

² The phrase is taken from Plato, *Phaedrus* 246C5: the idea of the soul using the body as a tool comes from *Alcibiades* 129C-E.

always what it is. Furthermore it will have no sensations and reasoning and opinion will have no connection with it; for sensation is the reception of a form or of an affection of a body,¹ and reasoning and opinion are based on sensation. We must enquire how it is with intelligence, whether we are going to allow this to the soul; and also whether it experiences pure pleasure when it is alone.

3. We must certainly too consider soul as being in body (whether it does in fact exist before it or in it) since it is from the combination of body and soul that "the complete living creature takes its name."² Now if soul uses body as a tool it does not have to admit the affections which come through the body; craftsmen are not affected by the affections of their tools. Perhaps one might suggest that it would necessarily have sensation, if a necessary accompaniment of using the tool is knowing by sensation the ways in which it is affected from outside; for using the eyes is just seeing. But there can be harm in seeing, and it can bring sadness and pain and in general anything that may happen to the whole body; and so desire, when the soul seeks the service of its tool. But how will the affections which come from body manage to reach the soul? Body can give of its own to another body, but how can body give to soul? This amounts to saying that if one thing is affected, so must another different thing be. For insofar as one is the user and the other what it uses, they are two separate things. At any rate anyone who states that the soul uses the body as a tool separates the two. But what was their relationship before the separation of soul by philosophy? There was a mixture. But if there was a mixture, there was

20 τις ἦν, ἢ ὡς διαπλακεῖου, ἢ ὡς εἶδος οὐ
 κεχωρισμένον, ἢ εἶδος ἐφαπτόμενον, ὥσπερ ὁ
 κυβερνήτης, ἢ τὸ μὲν οὕτως αὐτοῦ, τὸ δὲ ἐκείνως·
 λέγω δὲ ἢ τὸ μὲν κεχωρισμένον, ὅπερ τὸ χρώμενον,
 τὸ δὲ μεμιγμένον ὅπως οὖν καὶ αὐτὸ ὄν ἐν τάξει
 25 τοῦ ᾧ χρῆται, ἵνα τοῦτο ἢ φιλοσοφία καὶ αὐτὸ
 ἐπιστρέφῃ πρὸς τὸ χρώμενον καὶ τὸ χρώμενον
 ἀπάγῃ, ὅσον μὴ πᾶσα ἀνάγκη, ἀπὸ τοῦ ᾧ χρῆται,
 ὡς μὴ αἰεὶ μηδὲ χρῆσθαι.

4. Θῶμεν τοίνυν μεμίχθαι. Ἄλλ' εἰ μέμικται,
 τὸ μὲν χεῖρον ἔσται βέλτιον, τὸ σῶμα, τὸ δὲ
 χεῖρον, ἢ ψυχὴ· καὶ βέλτιον μὲν τὸ σῶμα ζωῆς
 μεταλαβόν, χεῖρον δὲ ἢ ψυχὴ θανάτου καὶ ἀλογίας.
 5 Τὸ δὲ ἀφαιρεθὲν ὅπως οὖν ζωῆς πῶς ἂν προσθήκη
 λάβοι τὸ αἰσθάνεσθαι; Τούναντίον δ' ἂν τὸ σῶμα
 ζωὴν λαβὼν τοῦτο ἂν εἴη τὸ αἰσθήσεως καὶ τῶν ἐξ
 αἰσθήσεως παθημάτων μεταλαμβάνον. Τοῦτο τοί-
 νυν καὶ ὀρέγεται—τοῦτο γὰρ καὶ ἀπολαύσει ὡν
 10 ὀρέγεται—καὶ φοβήσεται περὶ αὐτοῦ· τοῦτο γὰρ
 καὶ οὐ τεύξεται τῶν ἡδέων καὶ φθαρήσεται.
 Ζητητέον δὲ καὶ τὸν τρόπον τῆς μίξεως, μήποτε
 οὐ δυνατὸς ἦ, ὥσπερ ἂν εἴ τις λέγοι μεμίχθαι
 λευκῶ γραμμῆν, φύσιν ἄλλην ἄλλη. Τὸ δὲ
 “διαπλακεῖσα” οὐ ποιεῖ ὁμοιοπαθῆ τὰ διαπλακέντα,
 ἀλλ' ἔστιν ἀπαθὲς εἶναι τὸ διαπλακέν καὶ ἔστι

¹ So Plato describes the soul of the universe as “woven through” its body, *Timaeus* 36E2.

either a sort of intermingling, or the soul was in some way “woven through”¹ the body, or it was like a form not separated from the matter, or a form handling the matter as the steersman steers the ship, or one part of it was related in one way and another in another. I mean that one part is separate, the part which uses the body, and the other somehow mixed with body and on a level with that which it uses. In this case philosophy should turn this lower part towards the using part, and draw the using part away from that which it uses, insofar as the connection is not absolutely necessary, so that it may not always have even to use it.

4. Let us assume, then, that there is a mixture. But, if this is so, the worse element, the body, will be improved and the other element, the soul, will be made worse. The body will be improved by sharing in life, the soul made worse by sharing in death and unreason. How then can that which has its life reduced in any way whatever acquire thereby an additional faculty, that of sense-perception? The opposite is true; it is the body which receives life, and so the body which shares in sensation and the affections which come from sensation. So too, it will be the body that desires—for it is the body which is going to enjoy the objects of desire—and is afraid for itself—for it is going to miss its pleasures and be destroyed. And we must investigate the way in which this “mixture” takes place, and see if it is not really impossible; it is like talking about a line being mixed with white, one kind of thing with another kind of thing.

The idea of “being interwoven” does not imply that the things interwoven are affected in the same

15 ψυχὴν διαπεφοιτηκυῖαν μήτοι πάσχειν τὰ ἐκείνου
 πάθη, ὡσπερ καὶ τὸ φῶς, καὶ μάλιστα, εἰ οὕτω,
 δι' ὅλου ὡς διασπλέχθαι οὐ παρὰ τοῦτο οὐδὲν
 πείσεται τὰ σώματος πάθη, ὅτι διαπέλεκται.
 Ἄλλ' ὡς εἶδος ἐν ὕλῃ ἔσται ἐν τῷ σώματι; Πρῶτον
 μὲν ὡς χωριστὸν εἶδος ἔσται, εἴπερ οὐσία, καὶ
 20 μᾶλλον ἂν εἶη κατὰ τὸ χρώμενον. Εἰ δὲ ὡς τῷ
 πελέκει τὸ σχῆμα τὸ ἐπὶ τῷ σιδήρῳ, καὶ τὸ
 συναμφοτέρων ὁ πέλεκυς ποιήσῃ ἢ ποιήσῃ ὁ
 σίδηρος ὁ οὕτως ἐσχηματισμένος, κατὰ τὸ σχῆμα
 μέντοι, μᾶλλον ἂν τῷ σώματι διδοῖμεν ὅσα κοινὰ
 25 πάθη, τῷ μέντοι τοιούτῳ, τῷ φυσικῷ, ὀργανικῷ,
 δυνάμει ζωῆν ἔχοντι. Καὶ γὰρ ἄτοπὸν φησι
 τὴν ψυχὴν ὑφαίνειν λέγειν, ὥστε καὶ ἐπι-
 θυμεῖν καὶ λυπεῖσθαι· ἀλλὰ τὸ ζῶον μᾶλλον.
 5. Ἄλλὰ τὸ ζῶον ἢ τὸ σῶμα δεῖ λέγειν τὸ
 τοιόνδε, ἢ τὸ κοινόν, ἢ ἕτερόν τι τρίτον ἐξ
 ἀμφοῖν γεγεννημένον. Ὅπως δ' ἂν ἔχη, ἥτοι ἀπαθῆ
 δεῖ τὴν ψυχὴν φυλάττειν αὐτὴν αἰτίαν γενομένην
 5 ἄλλῳ τοῦ τοιούτου, ἢ συμπάσχειν καὶ αὐτὴν· καὶ
 ἢ ταῦτὸν πάσχουσαν πάθημα πάσχειν, ἢ ὁμοίον

¹This comparison is taken from Aristotle, *De Anima* B. 1. 412b. 12.

²These phrases are quotations from *De Anima* B. 1. 412a. 27-8. The reference to Aristotle which follows is to the key passage already quoted, *De Anima* A. 4. 408b. 12-13. Plotinus is here using Aristotle's doctrine of the soul as the immanent (and, except for the intellect, inseparable) form of the body as a starting-point from which to develop his own really very different doctrine of the relationship of soul and body.

way: it is possible for the principle interwoven to be unaffected and for the soul to pass and repass through the body without being touched by its affections, just like light, especially if it is interwoven right through the whole; this sort of interweaving will not make it subject to the affections of the body. Will it then be in the body like form in matter? First of all, it will be like a separable form, assuming it to be a substantial reality, and so will correspond still more exactly to the conception of it as a "user." But if we assume it to be like the shape of an axe imposed on the iron¹ (in this case it is the compound of matter and form, the axe, which performs its functions, that is to say the iron shaped in this particular way, though it is in virtue of the shape that it does so) we shall attribute all the common affections rather to the body, but to a body "of a specific kind," "formed by nature," "adapted to the use of the soul," "having life potentially."² Aristotle says that it is absurd "to talk about the soul weaving," and it follows that it is also absurd to talk about it desiring or grieving; we should attribute these affections rather to the living being.

5. But we must define the living being as either the body of this special kind, or the community of body and soul, or another, third, thing, the product of both.³ However that may be, the soul must either remain unaffected and only cause affections in something else or must be affected itself along with the body: and, if it is affected, it must either be

³The question raised here is discussed in the *Alcibiades* 130A7-C7, a passage which Plotinus seems to have in mind at this point (the word *συναμφοτέρων* is used of the compound of body and soul 130A9).

τι, οἷον ἄλλως μὲν τὸ ζῶον ἐπιθυμεῖν, ἄλλως δὲ τὸ ἐπιθυμητικὸν ἐνεργεῖν ἢ πάσχειν. Τὸ μὲν οὖν σῶμα τὸ τοιόνδε ὕστερον ἐπισκεπτέον· τὸ δὲ συναμφότερον οἷον λυπεῖσθαι πῶς; Ἄρα ὅτι τοῦ
 10 σώματος οὕτως διατεθέντος καὶ μέχρις αἰσθήσεως διελθόντος τοῦ πάθους τῆς αἰσθήσεως εἰς ψυχὴν τελευτώσης; Ἄλλ' ἢ αἰσθησις οὕτω δῆλον πῶς. Ἄλλ' ὅταν ἡ λύπη ἀρχῆν ἀπὸ δόξης καὶ κρίσεως λάβῃ τοῦ κακόν τι παρεῖναι ἢ αὐτῷ ἢ τινι τῶν οἰκείων, εἴτ' ἐντεῦθεν τροπὴ λυπηρὰ ἐπὶ τὸ
 15 σῶμα καὶ ὅλως ἐπὶ πᾶν τὸ ζῶον γένηται; Ἄλλὰ καὶ τὸ τῆς δόξης οὕτω δῆλον τίς, τῆς ψυχῆς ἢ τοῦ συναμφότερου· εἴτα ἢ μὲν δόξα ἢ περί του κακόν τὸ τῆς λύπης οὐκ ἔχει πάθος· καὶ γὰρ καὶ δυνατὸν τῆς δόξης παρουσίας μὴ πάντως ἐπιγίνε-
 20 σθαι τὸ λυπεῖσθαι, μηδ' αὖ τὸ ὀργίζεσθαι δόξης τοῦ ὀλιγωρεῖσθαι γενομένης, μηδ' αὖ ἀγαθοῦ δόξης κινεῖσθαι τὴν ὄρεξιν. Πῶς οὖν κοινὰ ταῦτα; Ἡ, ὅτι καὶ ἡ ἐπιθυμία τοῦ ἐπιθυμητικοῦ καὶ ὁ θυμὸς τοῦ θυμικοῦ καὶ ὅλως τοῦ ὀρεκτικοῦ ἢ ἐπὶ τι ἔκστασις; Ἄλλ' οὕτως οὐκέτι κοινὰ ἔσται, ἀλλὰ
 25 τῆς ψυχῆς μόνης· ἢ καὶ τοῦ σώματος, ὅτι δεῖ αἷμα καὶ χολὴν ζέσαι καὶ πῶς διατεθὲν τὸ σῶμα

subjected to the same affection or a similar one (as for instance, if the living being desires in one way, the desiring part of the soul may be active or affected in a different one). We will consider this special kind of body later. But in what way is the compound of body and soul, for instance, capable of grief? Is it that the body is disposed in this particular way, and its affection penetrates to sense-perception, and sense-perception ends in the soul? But this leaves it still obscure how sense-perception comes about. Or alternatively, does grief originate from an opinion, a judgement¹ that there is some evil there for the person concerned himself or something belonging to him, and does this result in an unpleasant change in the body and the living being as a whole? But then it is not yet clear which the opinion belongs to, the soul or the compound. Besides, the opinion about someone's evil does not contain the feeling of grief. It is possible to have the opinion without being grieved at all in consequence, as it is possible not to be angry when we have the opinion that we have been slighted, and for our appetite not to be stirred when we have the opinion that a good is present. How then are affections common to body and soul? Is it because desire belongs to the desiring part of the soul and passion to the passionate part, and in general the movement out towards anything to the appetitive part? But then they are no longer common to body and soul but belong to soul alone. Or do they belong to the body too, because blood and bile must boil and the body be in

¹ This idea of the emotions as judgements or opinions is Stoic (Chrysippus); cp. *Stoicorum Veterum Fragmenta* III. 459.

τὴν ὄρεξιν κινήσαι, οἷον ἐπὶ ἀφροδιυίων. Ἡ δὲ τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ ὄρεξις μὴ κοινὸν πάθημα ἀλλὰ ψυχῆς ἔστω, ὡσπερ καὶ ἄλλα, καὶ οὐ πάντα τοῦ κοινοῦ δίδωσά τις λόγος. Ἄλλὰ ὄρεγομένου ἀφροδιυίων
 30 τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἔσται μὲν ὁ ἄνθρωπος ὁ ἐπιθυμῶν, ἔσται δὲ ἄλλως καὶ τὸ ἐπιθυμητικὸν ἐπιθυμοῦν. Καὶ πῶς; Ἄρα ἄρξει μὲν ὁ ἄνθρωπος τῆς ἐπιθυμίας, ἐπακολουθήσει δὲ τὸ ἐπιθυμητικόν; Ἄλλὰ πῶς ὅλως ἐπεθύμησεν ὁ ἄνθρωπος μὴ τοῦ ἐπιθυμητικοῦ κεκινημένου; Ἄλλ' ἄρξει τὸ ἐπιθυμητικόν. Ἄλλὰ
 35 τοῦ σώματος μὴ πρότερον οὕτωσὶ διατεθέντος πόθεν ἄρξεται;

6. Ἄλλ' ἴσως βέλτιον εἰπεῖν καθόλου τῷ παρεῖναι τὰς δυνάμεις τὰ ἔχοντα εἶναι τὰ ἐνεργοῦντα κατ' αὐτάς, αὐτάς δὲ ἀκινήτους εἶναι χορηγούσας τὸ δύνασθαι τοῖς ἔχουσιν. Ἄλλ' εἰ τοῦτο, ἔστι
 5 πᾶσχιοντος τοῦ ζῴου τὴν αἰτίαν τοῦ ζῆν τῷ συναμφοτέρῳ δοῦσαν αὐτὴν ἀπαθῆ εἶναι τῶν παθῶν καὶ τῶν ἐνεργειῶν τοῦ ἔχοντος ὄντων. Ἄλλ' εἰ τοῦτο, καὶ τὸ ζῆν ὅλως οὐ τῆς ψυχῆς, ἀλλὰ τοῦ συναμφοτέρου ἔσται. Ἡ τὸ τοῦ συναμφοτέρου ζῆν οὐ τῆς ψυχῆς ἔσται· καὶ ἡ δύναμις δὲ ἡ
 10 αἰσθητικὴ οὐκ αἰσθήσεται, ἀλλὰ τὸ ἔχον τὴν δύναμιν. Ἄλλ' εἰ ἡ αἰσθησις διὰ σώματος κινήσει οὐσα εἰς ψυχὴν τελευτᾶ, πῶς ἡ ψυχὴ οὐκ αἰσθήσεται; Ἡ τῆς δυνάμεως τῆς αἰσθητικῆς παρούσης τῷ ταύτην παρεῖναι αἰσθήσεται (ὅ)τι αἰσθήσεται
 15 τὸ συναμψύτερον. Ἄλλ' εἰ ἡ δύναμις μὴ κινήσει-

a certain state to stir appetite, as in the case of sexual passion? Let us grant anyhow that the appetite for the good is not an affection of both, but of the soul, and this is true of other affections too; a reasoned examination does not attribute them all to the joint entity. But when man has an appetite for sexual pleasures, it will be the man that desires, but in another way it will be the desiring part of the soul that desires. How will this come about? Will the man start the desire and the desiring part of soul follow on? But how could the man manage to desire at all if the desiring part was not moved? Perhaps the desiring part will start. But where will it start from, if the body is not previously disposed in the appropriate way?

6. But perhaps it is better to say that, in general, as a result of the presence of the powers of soul it is their possessors which act by them, and the powers themselves are unmoved and only impart the power to act to their possessors. But if this is so, when the living being is affected, the cause of its life, which gave itself to the compound, can remain unaffected, and the affections and activities belong to the possessor. But if this is so, life will belong altogether, not to the soul, but to the compound. Certainly the life of the compound will not be that of the soul: and the power of sense-perception will not perceive, but that which has the power. But if sense-perception is a movement through the body which ends in the soul, how will the soul not perceive? When the power of sense-perception is present the compound will perceive whatever it perceives by its presence. But if the power is not going to be moved, how will it still be the compound

ται, πῶς ἔτι τὸ συναμφότερον μὴ συναριθμουμένης
ψυχῆς μηδὲ τῆς ψυχικῆς δυνάμεως;

7. Ἡ τὸ συναμφότερον ἔστω τῆς ψυχῆς τῷ
παρεῖναι οὐχ αὐτὴν δούσης τῆς τοιαύτης εἰς τὸ
συναμφότερον ἢ εἰς θάτερον, ἀλλὰ ποιούσης ἐκ τοῦ
σώματος τοῦ τοιοῦτου καὶ τως οἶον φωτὸς τοῦ
5 παρ' αὐτὴν δοθέντος τὴν τοῦ ζώου φύσιν ἕτερόν
τι, οὐ τὸ αἰσθάνεσθαι καὶ τὰ ἄλλα ὅσα ζώου πάθη
εἴρηται. Ἀλλὰ πῶς ἡμεῖς αἰσθανόμεθα; Ἡ, ὅτι
οὐκ ἀπηλλάγημεν τοῦ τοιοῦτου ζώου, καὶ εἰ ἄλλα
ἡμῖν τιμιώτερα εἰς τὴν ὅλην ἀνθρώπου οὐσίαν ἐκ
πολλῶν οὐσαν πάρεστι. Τὴν δὲ τῆς ψυχῆς τοῦ
10 αἰσθάνεσθαι δύναμιν οὐ τῶν αἰσθητῶν εἶναι δεῖ,
τῶν δὲ ἀπὸ τῆς αἰσθήσεως ἐγγιγνομένων τῷ ζώῳ
τύπων ἀντιληπτικὴν εἶναι μᾶλλον νοητὰ γὰρ ἤδη
ταῦτα ὡς τὴν αἰσθησιὶ τὴν ἔξω εἰδωλον εἶναι
ταύτης, ἐκείνην δὲ ἀληθευτέραν τῇ οὐσίᾳ οὐσαν
εἰδῶν μόνων ἀπαθῶς εἶναι θεωρίαν. Ἀπὸ δὲ
15 τούτων τῶν εἰδῶν, ἀφ' ὧν ψυχὴ ἤδη παραδέχεται
μόνη τὴν τοῦ ζώου ἡγεμονίαν, διάνοιαι δὲ καὶ
δόξαι καὶ νοήσεις· ἐνθα δὲ ἡμεῖς μάλιστα. Τὰ δὲ
πρὸ τούτων ἡμέτερα, ἡμεῖς δὲ τὸ ἐντεῦθεν ἄνω
ἐφεστηκότες τῷ ζώῳ. Κωλύσει δὲ οὐδὲν τὸ
σύμπαν ζῶον λέγειν, μικτὸν μὲν τὰ κάτω, τὸ δὲ
20 ἐντεῦθεν ὁ ἀνθρώπος ὁ ἀληθὴς σχεδόν· ἐκεῖνα δὲ

¹That is "below"; sensation and emotion belong to the body-soul compound, the "living being"; the true self begins where thought begins.

that perceives if neither soul nor soul-power are reckoned as included in it?

7. Let us say that it is the compound which perceives, and that the soul by its presence does not give itself qualified in a particular way either to the compound or to the other member of it, but makes, out of the qualified body and a sort of light which it gives of itself, the nature of the living creature, another different thing to which belong sense-perception and all other affections which are ascribed to the living body. But then, how is it we who perceive? It is because we are not separated from the living being so qualified, even if other things too, of more value than we are, enter into the composition of the whole essence of man, which is made up of many elements. And soul's power of sense-perception need not be perception of sense-objects, but rather it must be receptive of the impressions produced by sensation on the living being; these are already intelligible entities. So external sensation is the image of this perception of the soul, which is in its essence truer and is a contemplation of forms alone without being affected. From these forms, from which the soul alone receives its lordship over the living being, come reasonings, and opinions and acts of intuitive intelligence; and this precisely is where "we" are. That which comes before¹ this is "ours" but "we," in our presidency over the living being, are what extends from this point upwards. But there will be no objection to calling the whole thing "living being"; the lower parts of it are something mixed, the part which begins on the level of thought is, I suppose, the true man: those lower parts are

τὸ λεοντώδες καὶ τὸ πικίλον ὅλως θηρίον. Συνδρόμου γὰρ ὄντος τοῦ ἀνθρώπου τῇ λογικῇ ψυχῇ, ὅταν λογιζώμεθα, ἡμεῖς λογιζόμεθα τῷ τοῦς λογισμοῦς ψυχῆς εἶναι ἐνεργήματα.

8. Πρὸς δὲ τὸν νοῦν πῶς; Νοῦν δὲ λέγω οὐχ ἣν ἢ ψυχῇ ἔχει ἕξιν οὐσαν τῶν παρὰ τοῦ νοῦ, ἀλλ' αὐτὸν τὸν νοῦν. Ἡ ἔχομεν καὶ τοῦτον ὑπεράνω ἡμῶν. Ἐχομεν δὲ ἢ κοινὸν ἢ ἴδιον, ἢ καὶ κοινὸν
5 πάντων καὶ ἴδιον· κοινὸν μὲν, ὅτι ἀμέριστος καὶ εἰς καὶ πανταχοῦ ὁ αὐτός, ἴδιον δέ, ὅτι ἔχει καὶ ἕκαστος αὐτὸν ὅλον ἐν ψυχῇ τῇ πρώτῃ. Ἐχομεν οὖν καὶ τὰ εἶδη διχῶς, ἐν μὲν ψυχῇ ὅσον ἀνειλεγμένα καὶ ὅσον κεχωρισμένα, ἐν δὲ νῷ ὁμοῦ τὰ πάντα. Τὸν δὲ θεὸν πῶς; Ἡ ὡς ἐποχούμενον τῇ νοητῇ
10 φύσει καὶ τῇ οὐσίᾳ τῇ ὄντως, ἡμᾶς δὲ ἐκείθεν τρίτους ἐκ τῆς ἀμερίστου, φησί, τῆς ἀνωθεν καὶ ἐκ τῆς περὶ τὰ σώματα μεριστῆς, ἣν δὴ δεῖ νοεῖν οὕτω μεριστῆν περὶ τὰ σώματα, ὅτι δίδωσιν ἑαυτὴν τοῖς σώματις μεγέθεσιν, ὅποσον ἂν ζῶον
15 ἢ ἕκαστον, ἐπεὶ καὶ τῷ παντὶ ὅλω, οὐσα μία· ἢ, ὅτι φαντάζεται τοῖς σώμασι παρεῖναι ἐλλάμπουσα εἰς αὐτὰ καὶ ζῶα ποιούσα οὐκ ἐξ αὐτῆς καὶ

¹ Plotinus is here quoting *Republic* IX 590A9 and 588C7. The "lion" in Plato symbolises the higher emotions, the "various beast" (a sort of many-headed dragon) the carnal lusts and desires. It is noteworthy that the difference in quality and value of these two lower parts of the soul, which is so important in the psychology of the *Republic* and *Phaedrus*, has little significance for Plotinus.

² The "true reality" is the world of Forms which is identical with Intellect. God (the One or Good) is beyond Intellect and Reality.

³ Plotinus is again quoting from Plato's description of the making of the world-soul in *Timaeus* 35A: in what

the "lion-like," and altogether "the various beast."¹ Since man coincides with the rational soul, when we reason it is really we who reason because rational processes are activities of soul.

8. But how are we related to the Intellect? I mean by "Intellect" not that state of the soul, which is one of the things which derive from Intellect, but Intellect itself. We possess this too, as something that transcends us. We have it either as common to all or particular to ourselves, or both common and particular; common because it is without parts and one and everywhere the same, particular to ourselves because each has the whole of it in the primary part of his soul. So we also possess the forms in two ways, in our soul, in a manner of speaking unfolded and separated, in Intellect all together.

But how do we possess God? He rides mounted on the nature of Intellect and true reality—that is how we possess him;² "we" are third in order counting from God, being made, Plato says, "from the undivided," that which is above, "and from that which is divided in bodies";³ we must consider this part of soul as being divided in bodies in the sense that it gives itself to the magnitudes of bodies, in proportion to the size of each living being, since it gives itself to the whole universe, though the soul is one: or because it is pictured as being present to bodies since it shines into them and makes

follows he gives an interpretation of Plato's phrase in terms of his own doctrine of the lower soul and its powers as emanations of the higher soul, which "gives itself" to bodies by illuminating, forming, and vivifying them, remaining itself undiminished and unaffected.

σώματος, ἀλλὰ μένουσα μὲν αὐτῇ, εἰδῶλα δὲ αὐτῆς διδοῦσα, ὥσπερ πρόσωπον ἐν πολλοῖς κατοπτροῖς. Πρῶτον δὲ εἰδῶλον αἰσθησις ἢ ἐν τῷ κοινῷ: εἶτα ἀπὸ ταύτης αὐτῶν <ὁ> ἄλλο εἶδος 20 λέγεται ψυχῆς, ἕτερον ἀφ' ἑτέρου αἰεί, καὶ τελευτᾶ μέχρι γεννητικοῦ καὶ ἀξήσεως καὶ ὅλως ποιήσεως ἄλλον καὶ ἀποτελεστικοῦ ἄλλου παρ' αὐτὴν τὴν ποιούσαν ἐπεστραμμένης αὐτῆς τῆς ποιούσης πρὸς τὸ ἀποτελούμενον.

9. Ἔσται τοίνυν ἐκείνης ἡμῖν τῆς ψυχῆς ἡ φύσις ἀπηλλαγμένη αἰτίας κακῶν, ὅσα ἄνθρωπος ποιεῖ καὶ πάσχει· περὶ γὰρ τὸ ζῶον ταῦτα, τὸ κοινόν, [καὶ κοινόν], ὡς εἴρηται. Ἄλλ' εἰ δόξα τῆς ψυχῆς 5 καὶ διάνοια, πῶς ἀναμάρτητος; Ψευδῆς γὰρ δόξα καὶ πολλὰ κατ' αὐτὴν πράττεται τῶν κακῶν. Ἡ πράττεται μὲν τὰ κακὰ ἠτιωμένων ἡμῶν ὑπὸ τοῦ χείρονος—πολλὰ γὰρ ἡμεῖς—ἢ ἐπιθυμίας ἢ θυμοῦ ἢ εἰδώλου κακοῦ· ἢ δὲ τῶν ψευδῶν λεγομένη διάνοια φαντασία οὐσα οὐκ ἀνέμεινε τὴν τοῦ 10 διανοητικοῦ κρίσιν, ἀλλ' ἐπράξαμεν τοῖς χείροσι πεισθέντες, ὥσπερ ἐπὶ τῆς αἰσθήσεως πρὶν τῷ διανοητικῷ ἐπικρῖναι ψευδῆ ὁρᾶν συμβαίνει τῇ κοινῇ αἰσθήσει. Ὁ δὲ νοῦς ἢ ἐφήψατο ἢ οὐ, ὥστε ἀναμάρτητος. Ἡ οὕτω δὲ λεκτέον, ὡς ἡμεῖς ἢ ἐφηψάμεθα τοῦ ἐν τῷ νῷ νοητοῦ ἢ οὐ. Ἡ τοῦ ἐν 15 ἡμῖν δυνατὸν γὰρ καὶ ἔχειν καὶ μὴ πρόχειρον ἔχειν. Διείλομεν δὴ τὰ κοινὰ καὶ τὰ ἴδια τῶν τὰ μὲν σωματικὰ καὶ οὐκ ἄνευ σώματος εἶναι, ὅσα

¹ Cp. *Theaetetus* 198D7 (from the comparison, which Plato afterwards rejects as unsatisfactory, of the mind to an aviary).

living creatures, not of itself and body, but abiding itself and giving images of itself, like a face seen in many mirrors. The first image is the faculty of sensation in the joint entity, and after this comes everything which is called another form of soul, each in its turn proceeding from the other; the series ends in the powers of generation and growth, and, speaking generally, in the powers which make and perfect other things different from the soul which makes, while the making soul itself stays directed towards its product.

9. The nature of that higher soul of ours will be free from all responsibility for the evils that man does and suffers; these concern the living being, the joint entity, as has been said. But if opinion and reasoning belong to the soul, how is it free from sin? For opinion is a cheat and is the cause of much evil doing. Evil is done when we are mastered by what is worse in us—for we are many—by desire or passion or an evil image. What we call thinking falsities is a making of mind-pictures which has not waited for the judgement of the reasoning faculty—we have acted under the influence of our worse parts, just as in sensation the perception of the joint entity may see falsely before the reasoning faculty has passed judgement on it. The intellect is either in touch with the proceedings or it is not, and so sinless: but we ought rather to say that we are in touch with the intelligible in the intellect or we are not—with the intelligible in ourselves; for one can have it and not have it available.¹

So we have distinguished what belongs to the joint entity and what is proper to the soul in this way: what belongs to the joint entity is bodily or not

δὲ οὐ δέεται σώματος εἰς ἐνέργειαν, ταῦτα ἴδια
 ψυχῆς εἶναι, καὶ τὴν διάνοιαν ἐπίκριον ποιουμένην
 20 τῶν ἀπὸ τῆς αἰσθήσεως τύπων εἶδη ἤδη θεωρεῖν
 καὶ θεωρεῖν οἶον συναισθήσει, τὴν γε κυρίως τῆς
 ψυχῆς τῆς ἀληθοῦς διάνοιαν· νοήσεων γὰρ ἐνέργεια
 ἢ διάνοια ἢ ἀληθὴς καὶ τῶν ἕξω πολλάκις πρὸς
 τᾶνδον ὁμοιότης καὶ κοινωνία. Ἄτρεμήσει οὖν
 οὐδὲν ἦττον ἢ ψυχὴ πρὸς ἑαυτὴν καὶ ἐν ἑαυτῇ· αἱ
 25 δὲ τροπαὶ καὶ ὁ θόρυβος ἐν ἡμῖν παρὰ τῶν
 συννηρημένων καὶ τῶν τοῦ κοινοῦ, ὃ τι δήποτε
 ἐστὶ τοῦτο, ὡς εἴρηται, παθημάτων.

10. Ἄλλ' εἰ ἡμεῖς ἢ ψυχὴ, πάσχομεν δὲ ταῦτα
 ἡμεῖς, ταῦτα ἂν εἴη πάσχουσα ἢ ψυχὴ καὶ αὐ
 ποιήσει ἢ ποιούμεν. Ἡ καὶ τὸ κοινὸν ἔφαμεν
 ἡμῶν εἶναι καὶ μάλιστα οὕτω κεχωρισμένων· ἐπεὶ
 5 καὶ ἂ πάσχει τὸ σῶμα ἡμῶν ἡμᾶς φαμεν πάσχειν.
 Διττὸν οὖν τὸ ἡμεῖς, ἢ συναριθμουμένου τοῦ
 θηρίου, ἢ τὸ ὑπὲρ τοῦτο ἤδη· θηρίον δὲ ζῶων
 τὸ σῶμα. Ὁ δ' ἀληθὴς ἄνθρωπος ἄλλος ὁ καθαρὸς
 τούτων τὰς ἀρετὰς ἔχων τὰς ἐν νοήσει αἱ δὲ ἐν
 αὐτῇ τῇ χωριζομένη ψυχῇ ἴδρυνται, χωριζομένη
 10 δὲ καὶ χωριστῇ ἐτι ἐνταῦθα οὐση· ἐπεὶ καί, ὅταν
 αὐτὴ παντάπασιν ἀποστῇ, καὶ ἢ ἀπ' αὐτῆς ἐλλαμφ-
 θεῖσα ἀπελήλυθε συνεπομένη. Αἱ δ' ἀρεταὶ αἱ μὴ
 φρονήσει, ἔθεσι δὲ ἐγγινόμεναι καὶ ἀσκήσεσι,
 τοῦ κοινοῦ· τούτου γὰρ αἱ κακίαι, ἐπεὶ καὶ φθόνοι

¹ For the "clamour" of the body cp. *Phaedo* 66D6 and *Timaeus* 43B6.

² Cp. *Republic* 518E1-2.

without body, but what does not require body for its operation is proper to the soul. Reasoning when it passes judgement on the impressions produced by sensation is at the same time contemplating forms and contemplating them by a kind of sympathy—I mean the reasoning which really belongs to the true soul: for true reasoning is an operation of acts of the intelligence, and there is often a resemblance and community between what is outside and what is within. So in spite of everything the soul will be at peace, turned to itself and resting in itself. The changes and the clamour¹ in us come, as we have said, from what is attached to us and from the affections of the joint entity, whatever precisely that is.

10. But if we are the soul, and we are affected in this way, then it would be the soul that is affected in this way, and again it will be the soul which does what we do. Yes, but we said that the joint entity is part of ourselves, especially when we have not yet been separated from body: for we say that we are affected by what affects our body. So "we" is used in two senses, either including the beast or referring to that which even in our present life transcends it. The beast is the body which has been given life. But the true man is different, clear of these affections; he has the virtues which belong to the sphere of intellect and have their seat actually in the separate soul, separate and separable even while it is still here below. (For when it withdraws altogether, the lower soul which is illumined by it goes away too in its train.) But the virtues which result not from thought but from habit and training² belong to the joint entity; for the vices belong to this, since envy and jealousy and emotional sympathy are located

καὶ ζῆλοι καὶ ἔλεοι. Φιλίαι δὲ τίνος; Ἡ αἰ μὲν
15 τούτου, αἰ δὲ τοῦ ἔνδον ἀνθρώπου.

11. Παίδων δὲ ὄντων ἐνεργεῖ μὲν τὰ ἐκ τοῦ
συνθέτου, ὀλίγα δὲ ἐλλάμπει ἐκ τῶν ἄνω εἰς αὐτό.
Ὅταν δ' ἀργῆ εἰς ἡμᾶς, ἐνεργεῖ πρὸς τὸ ἄνω· εἰς
ἡμᾶς δὲ ἐνεργεῖ, ὅταν μέχρι τοῦ μέσου ἦκη. Τί
5 οὖν; Οὐχ ἡμεῖς καὶ πρὸ τούτου; Ἄλλ' ἀντίληψιν
δεῖ γενέσθαι· οὐ γάρ, ὅσα ἔχομεν, τούτοις χρώμεθα
αἰ, ἀλλ' ὅταν τὸ μέσον τάξωμεν ἢ πρὸς τὰ ἄνω ἢ
πρὸς τὰ ἐναντία, ἢ ὅσα ἀπὸ δυνάμεως ἢ ἕξως
εἰς ἐνεργεῖαν ἄγομεν. Τὰ δὲ θηρία πῶς τὸ ζῶον
ἔχει; Ἡ εἰ μὲν ψυχᾷ εἶεν ἐν αὐτοῖς ἀνθρώπειοι,
10 ὡσπερ λέγεται, ἀμαρτοῦσαι, οὐ τῶν θηρίων γίνεται
τούτο, ὅσον χωριστόν, ἀλλὰ παρὸν οὐ πάρεστιν
αὐτοῖς, ἀλλ' ἢ συναίσθησις τὸ τῆς ψυχῆς εἶδωλον
μετὰ τοῦ σώματος ἔχει· σῶμα δὴ τοιόνδε οἶον
ποιωθὲν ψυχῆς εἰδώλω· εἰ δὲ μὴ ἀνθρώπου ψυχῆ
εἰσέδω, ἐλλάμπει ἀπὸ τῆς ὅλης τὸ τοιοῦτον ζῶον
15 γενόμενόν ἐστιν.

12. Ἄλλ' εἰ ἀναμάρτητος ἡ ψυχὴ, πῶς αἰ δίκαι;
Ἄλλὰ γὰρ οὗτος ὁ λόγος ἀσυμφωνεῖ παντὶ λόγῳ,
ὅς φησιν αὐτὴν καὶ ἀμαρτάνειν καὶ κατορθοῦν καὶ
διδόναι δίκας καὶ ἐν Ἄιδου καὶ μετεσσωματοῦσθαι.
5 Προσθετέον μὲν οὖν ὅτι τις βούλεται λόγῳ· τάχα
δ' ἂν τις ἐξεύροι καὶ ὅπῃ μὴ μαχοῦνται. Ὅ μὲν
γὰρ τὸ ἀναμάρτητον διδοὺς τῇ ψυχῇ λόγος ἐν

¹ In *Republic* 589A7 the "man within" is the reason, who should rule the whole man by dominating the "many-headed beast" with the help of the "lion."

² The doctrine of the transmigration of human souls into animal bodies is accepted by Plotinus on the authority of

there. But which do our loves belong to? Some to the jointd entity, some to the man within.¹

11. While we are children the powers of the compound are active, and only a few gleams come to it from the higher principles. But when these are inactive as regards us their activity is directed upwards: it is directed towards us when they reach the middle region. But then does not the "we" include what comes before the middle? Yes, but there must be a conscious apprehension of it. We do not always use all that we have, but only when we direct our middle part towards the higher principles or their opposites, or to whatever we are engaged in bringing from potency or state to act.

And how does the living thing include brute beasts? If as it is said² there are sinful human souls in them, the separable part of the soul does not come to belong to the beasts but is there without being there for them; their consciousness includes the image of soul and the body: a beast is then a qualified body made, as we may say, by an image of soul. But if a human soul has not entered the beast it becomes a living being of such and such a kind by an illumination from the universal soul.

12. But if the soul is sinless, how is it judged? This line of thought disagrees with all the arguments which maintain that the soul sins and acts rightly and undergoes punishment, punishment in Hades, and passes from body to body. We can accept whichever view we like; and perhaps we can find a point of view where they do not conflict. The argument which concludes that the soul is sinless

Plato: it does not however play any important part in his thought about the nature and destiny of man.

ἀπλοῦν πάντῃ ἐτίθετο τὸ αὐτὸ ψυχὴν καὶ τὸ ψυχῆ
εἶναι λέγων, ὁ δ' ἁμαρτεῖν διδοὺς συμπλέκει μὲν
καὶ προστίθῃσιν αὐτῇ καὶ ἄλλο ψυχῆς εἶδος τὸ τὰ
10 δεινὰ ἔχον πάθῃ· σύνθετος οὖν καὶ τὸ ἐκ πάντων
ἢ ψυχῆ αὐτῇ γίνεται καὶ πάσχει δὴ κατὰ τὸ ὄλον
καὶ ἁμαρτάνει τὸ σύνθετον καὶ τοῦτό ἐστι τὸ
διδόν δίκην αὐτῷ, οὐκ ἐκείνο. "Ὅθεν φησί-
τεθεάμεθα γὰρ αὐτήν, ὡσπερ οἱ τὸν θαλάτ-
τιον Γλαῦκον ὀρώντες. Δεῖ δὲ περικρού-
15 σαντας τὰ προστεθέντα, εἴπερ τις ἐθέλει τὴν
φύσιν, φησὶν, αὐτῆς ἰδεῖν, εἰς τὴν φιλοσοφίαν
αὐτῆς ἰδεῖν, ὧν ἐφάπτεται καὶ τίσι συγ-
γενῆς οὐσά ἐστιν ὃ ἐστιν. "Ἄλλη οὖν ζωὴ καὶ
ἄλλαι ἐνέργειαι καὶ τὸ κολαζόμενον ἕτερον· ἢ δὲ
ἀναχώρησις καὶ ὁ χωρισμὸς οὐ μόνον τοῦδε τοῦ
20 σώματος, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἅπαντος τοῦ προστεθέντος.
Καὶ γὰρ ἐν τῇ γενέσει ἢ προσθήκῃ· ἢ ἔλως ἢ
γένεσις τοῦ ἄλλου ψυχῆς εἶδους. Τὸ δὲ πῶς ἢ
γένεσις, εἴρηται, ὅτι καταβαινούσης, ἄλλου του
ἀπ' αὐτῆς γινομένου τοῦ καταβαίνοντος ἐν τῇ
νεύσει. Ἄρ' οὖν ἀφίησι τὸ εἶδωλον; Καὶ ἢ νεύσει
25 δὲ πῶς οὐχ ἁμαρτία; Ἄλλ' εἰ ἢ νεύσει ἔλλαμψις
πρὸς τὸ κάτω, οὐχ ἁμαρτία, ὡσπερ οὐδ' ἢ σκιά,
ἀλλ' αἴτιον τὸ ἐλλαμπόμενον· εἰ γὰρ μὴ εἴη, οὐκ
ἔχει ὅπῃ ἐλλάμψει. Καταβαίνειν οὖν καὶ νεύειν
λέγεται τῷ συνεζηκέναι αὐτῇ τὸ ἐλλαμψθέν παρ'

¹ Here Plotinus is quoting *Republic* X 611D7-612A5, a passage which expresses extremely clearly that sharp dualism of rational soul and bodily nature which repeatedly appears in Plato's thought about the soul (though it is not the whole of it) and from which Plotinus has developed his own doctrine

assumes that it is a single completely simple thing and identifies soul and essential soulness; that which concludes that it sins interweaves with it and adds to it another form of soul which is affected in this dreadful way: so the soul itself becomes compound, the product of all its elements, and is affected as a whole, and it is the compound which sins, and it is this which for Plato is punished, not that other single and simple soul. This is why he says, "We have seen the soul like the people who see the sea-god Glaucus." But, he says, if anyone wants to see its real nature, they must "knock off its encrustations" and "look at its philosophy,"¹ and see "with what principles it is in contact" and "by kinship with what realities it is what it is." So there is another life of soul, and other activities, and that which is punished is different. The ascent and the separation is not only from this body but from all that has been added. The addition takes place in the process of coming-to-be; or rather coming-to-be belongs altogether to the other form of soul. We have explained how the process of coming-to-be takes place; it results from the descent of the soul, when something else comes to be from it which comes down in the soul's inclination. Does it then abandon its image? And how is this inclination not a sin? If the inclination is an illumination directed to what is below X it is not a sin, just as casting a shadow is not a sin; what is illuminated is responsible, for if it did not exist the soul would have nowhere to illuminate. The soul is said to go down or incline in the sense that the thing which receives light from it lives with of the higher and lower self with the help of Aristotelian and Stoic ideas.

αὐτῆς. Ἀφίησιν οὖν τὸ εἶδωλον, εἰ μὴ ἐγγὺς τὸ
 - 30 ὑποδεξάμενον· ἀφίησι δὲ οὐ τῷ ἀποσχισθῆναι,
 ἀλλὰ τῷ μηκέτι εἶναι· οὐκέτι δὲ ἐστίν, ἐὰν ἐκεῖ
 βλέπη ὅλη. Χωρίζειν δὲ ἔοικεν ὁ ποιητὴς τοῦτο
 ἐπὶ τοῦ Ἡρακλέους τὸ εἶδωλον αὐτοῦ διδοῦς ἐν
 Ἄιδου, αὐτὸν δὲ ἐν θεοῖς εἶναι ὑπ' ἀμφοτέρων τῶν
 λόγων κατεχόμενος, καὶ ὅτι ἐν θεοῖς καὶ ὅτι ἐν
 35 Ἄιδου· ἐμέρισε δ' οὖν. Τάχα δ' ἂν οὕτω πιθανὸς
 ὁ λόγος εἴη· ὅτι δὴ πρακτικὴν ἀρετὴν ἔχων
 Ἡρακλῆς καὶ ἀξιώθεις διὰ καλοκάγαθίαν θεὸς
 εἶναι, ὅτι πρακτικὸς, ἀλλ' οὐ θεωρητικὸς ἦν, ἵνα
 ἂν ὅλος ἦν ἐκεῖ, ἂνω τέ ἐστὶ καὶ ἔτι ἐστὶ τι αὐτοῦ
 καὶ κάτω.

13. Τὸ δὲ ἐπισκεφάμενον περὶ τούτων ἡμεῖς ἢ ἡ
 ψυχῆ; ἢ ἡμεῖς, ἀλλὰ τῇ ψυχῇ. Τὸ δὲ τῇ ψυχῇ
 πῶς; Ἄρα τῷ ἔχειν ἐπισκέφατο; ἢ ἡ ψυχῇ.
 Οὐκοῦν κινήσεται; ἢ κίνησιν τὴν τριαύτην δοτέον
 5 αὐτῇ, ἢ μὴ σωμάτων, ἀλλ' ἐστὶν αὐτῆς ζωῆ. Καὶ
 ἢ νόησις δὲ ἡμῶν οὕτω, ὅτι καὶ νοερά ἢ ψυχῇ καὶ
 ζωῇ κρείττων ἢ νόησις, καὶ ὅταν ψυχῇ νοῆ, καὶ
 ὅταν νοῦς ἐνεργῇ εἰς ἡμᾶς· μέρος γὰρ καὶ οὗτος
 ἡμῶν καὶ πρὸς τοῦτον ἄνιμεν.

¹ The reference is to *Odyssey* 11. 601-2; the passage (as Plotinus in the next sentence seems to recognise) is an attempt to combine two traditions, one which made Heracles a mortal hero and the other which made him that most exceptional kind of being in the world of genuine Greek traditional religion, a man who had become a god.

it. It abandons its image if there is nothing at hand to receive it; and it abandons it not in the sense that it is cut off but in that it no longer exists: and the image no longer exists when the whole soul is looking to the intelligible world. The poet seems to be separating the image with regard to Heracles when he says that his shade is in Hades, but he himself among the gods.¹ He was bound to keep to both stories, that he is in Hades and that he dwells among the gods, so he divided him. But perhaps this is the most plausible explanation of the story: because Heracles had this active virtue and in view of his noble character was deemed worthy to be called a god—because he was an active and not a contemplative person (in which case he would have been altogether in that intelligible world), he is above, but there is also still a part of him below.

13. What is it that has carried out this investigation? Is it "we" or the soul? It is "we," but by the soul. And what do we mean by "by the soul"? Did "we" investigate by having soul? No, but in so far as we are soul. Will soul move then?² Yes, we must allow it this sort of movement, which is not a movement of bodies but its own life. And intellectual activity is ours in the sense that the soul is intellectual and intellectual activity is its higher life, both when the soul operates intellectually and when intellect acts upon us. For intellect too is a part of ourselves and to it we ascend.

² Here Plotinus returns to the question raised by Aristotle in the *De Anima* with which he started (cp. the note on ch. 1 of this treatise). But the answer he gives here is Platonic, not Aristotelian; for Aristotle thought is not a movement, as it is for Plato.

I. 2. ON VIRTUES

Introductory Note

THIS treatise is No. 19 in Porphyry's chronological order; that is, it belongs to the group of twenty-one treatises which Plotinus had already written by his 59th year, when Porphyry joined him. It is a commentary on the passage from the *Theaetetus* (176A) cited at the beginning of the first chapter, and its object is to determine in what precise sense the virtues can be said to make us godlike. In pursuing this enquiry Plotinus, as often, makes great use of ideas taken from Aristotle, that the gods themselves cannot be said to possess moral virtue (cp. *Nicomachean Ethics* X. 8. 1178b) and that there are two kinds of virtue, intellectual and moral (cp. *Nicomachean Ethics* VI. 2. 1139a ff.)—a doctrine which seems to underlie and be the origin of Plotinus' own rather different doctrine of higher and lower virtue, in which there are also some Stoic elements. In chs. 1-3 Plotinus develops a very interesting and important doctrine of analogy.

Synopsis

We escape from the evils here below by becoming godlike by means of virtue. But what god does virtue make us like?—perhaps the lowest of the three great divine principles, Universal Soul. But does this really possess the cardinal virtues? It does not have civic or moral virtues, but these as well as the higher virtues must play their part in making us godlike (ch. 1). The divinities possess, not virtues as we have them, but the principles from which our virtues derive, and this is sufficient for us to speak of "likeness", which means something different when it is applied to the relationship of a derived thing

ON VIRTUES

to its origin from what it means when applied to the relationship of two derived things on the same level (chs. 1-3). The distinction between "civic" and "purifying" virtues (ch. 3). What precisely we mean by "purification" (ch. 4). Its effects on our higher and lower self (ch. 5). What the virtues are in the highest stage of our development, when we are completely free of our lower self, and no longer good men but gods (chs. 6-7).

I. 2. (19) ΠΕΡΙ ΑΡΕΤΩΝ

1. Ἐπειδὴ τὰ κακὰ ἐνταῦθα καὶ τόνδε τὸν τόπον περιπολεῖ ἐξ ἀνάγκης, βούλεται δὲ ἡ ψυχὴ φυγεῖν τὰ κακά, φευκτέον ἐντεῦθεν. Τίς οὖν ἡ φυγή; θεῶ, φησιν, ὁμοιωθῆναι. Τοῦτο δέ, εἰ δίκαιοι καὶ ὅσιοι μετὰ φρονήσεως γενοίμεθα καὶ ὅλως ἐν ἀρετῇ. Εἰ οὖν ἀρετῇ ὁμοιούμεθα, ἄρα ἀρετὴν ἔχοντι; Καὶ δὴ καὶ τίνι θεῶ; Ἄρ' οὖν τῷ μᾶλλον δοκοῦντι ταῦτα ἔχειν καὶ δὴ τῇ τοῦ κόσμου ψυχῇ καὶ τῷ ἐν ταύτῃ ἡγουμένῳ ᾧ φρόνησις θαυμαστὴ ὑπάρχει; Καὶ 10 γὰρ εὐλογον ἐνταῦθα ὄντας τούτῳ ὁμοιοῦσθαι. Ἡ πρῶτον μὲν ἀμφισβητήσιμον, εἰ καὶ τούτῳ ὑπάρχουσι πᾶσαι οἶον σώφρονι ἀνδρείῳ εἶναι, ᾧ μήτε τι δεινόν ἐστίν· οὐδὲν γὰρ ἔξωθεν μήτε προσιόν ἢδὲ οὐ καὶ ἐπιθυμία ἂν γένοιτο μὴ παρόντος, ἢν' ἔχη ἢ ἔλη. Εἰ δὲ καὶ αὐτὸς ἐν ὀρέξει ἐστὶ τῶν νοητῶν ὧν καὶ αἱ ἡμέτεραι, δῆλον 15 ὅτι καὶ ἡμῖν ἐκείθεν ὁ κόσμος καὶ αἱ ἀρεταί. Ἄρ' οὖν ἐκείνο ταύτας ἔχει; Ἡ οὐκ εὐλογον τὰς γε πολιτικὰς λεγομένας ἀρετὰς ἔχειν, φρόνησιν μὲν

¹ The text which Plotinus is quoting here is Plato, *Theaetetus* 176 A-B. He comments on it again at I. 8. 7, where he is discussing the necessary existence of evil in this lower world.

² Cp. Aristotle, *Nicomachean Ethics* X. 8. 1178b8-18.

I. 2. ON VIRTUES

1. Since it is here that evils are, and "they must necessarily haunt this region," and the soul wants to escape from evils, we must escape from here. What, then, is this escape? "Being made like god," Plato says. And we become godlike "if we become righteous and holy with the help of wisdom," and are altogether in virtue.¹ If then it is virtue which makes us like, it presumably makes us like a being possessing virtue. Then what god would that be? Would it be the one that appears to be particularly characterised by the possession of virtue, that is, the soul of the universe and its ruling principle, in which there is a wonderful wisdom? It is reasonable to suppose that we should become like this principle, as we are here in its universe.

But, first of all, it is debatable whether this principle has all the virtues; whether, for instance, it is self-controlled and brave when it has nothing to frighten it, for there is nothing outside the universe, and nothing attractive can come to it which it has not already got, and produce a desire to have or get it.² But if this principle is in a state of aspiration towards the intelligible realities to which our aspirations too are directed, it is clear that our good order and our virtues also come from the intelligible. Has the intelligible, then, virtues? It is at any rate improbable that it has the virtues called "civic,"

περὶ τὸ λογιζόμενον, ἀνδρίαν δὲ περὶ τὸ θυμούμε-
νον, σωφροσύνην δὲ ἐν ὁμολογίᾳ τινὶ καὶ συμφωνίᾳ
ἐπιθυμητικοῦ πρὸς λογισμόν, δικαιοσύνην δὲ τὴν
20 ἐκάστου τούτων ὁμοῦ οὐκ εἰσπραγίαν ἀρχῆς
πέρι καὶ τοῦ ἄρχεσθαι. Ἄρ' οὖν οὐ κατὰ
τὰς πολιτικὰς ὁμοιούμεθα, ἀλλὰ κατὰ τὰς μείζους
τῷ αὐτῷ ὀνόματι χρωμένας; Ἄλλ' εἰ κατ' ἄλλας,
κατὰ τὰς πολιτικὰς ὅλως οὐ; Ἡ ἄλογον μὴδ'
ὅπως οὖν ὁμοιοῦσθαι κατὰ ταύτας—τούτους γοῦν
25 καὶ θεῖους ἢ φήμη λέγει καὶ λεκτέον ἀμηγέπη
ὡμοιωσθαι—κατὰ δὲ τὰς μείζους τὴν ὁμοίωσιν
εἶναι. Ἄλλ' ἐκατέρως γε συμβαίνει ἀρετὰς ἔχειν
καὶ εἰ μὴ τοιαύτας. Εἰ οὖν τις συγχωρεῖ, καὶ
εἰ μὴ τοιαύτας,] ὁμοιοῦσθαι δύνασθαι, ἄλλως ἡμῶν
ἔχοντων πρὸς ἄλλας, οὐδὲν κωλύει, καὶ μὴ πρὸς
30 ἀρετὰς ὁμοιουμένων, ἡμᾶς ταῖς αὐτῶν ἀρεταῖς
ὁμοιοῦσθαι τῷ μὴ ἀρετὴν κεκτημένῳ. Καὶ πῶς;
Ὡδε· εἴ τι θερμότητος παρουσίᾳ θερμαίνεται,
ἀνάγκη καὶ ὄθεν ἢ θερμότης ἐλήλυθε θερμαίνεσθαι;
Καὶ εἴ τι πυρὸς παρουσίᾳ θερμόν ἐστιν, ἀνάγκη
35 καὶ τὸ πῦρ αὐτὸ πυρὸς παρουσίᾳ θερμαίνεσθαι;
Ἄλλὰ πρὸς μὲν τὸ πρότερον εἴποι ἂν τις καὶ ἐν
τῷ πῦρ εἶναι θερμότητα, ἀλλὰ σύμφυτον, ὥστε τὸν
λόγον ποιεῖν τῇ ἀναλογίᾳ ἐπόμενον ἐπακτὸν μὲν
τῇ ψυχῇ τὴν ἀρετὴν, ἐκείνῳ δέ, ὄθεν μιμησαμένη
ἔχει, σύμφυτον· πρὸς δὲ τὸν ἐκ τοῦ πυρὸς λόγον

¹ This description of the "civic" virtues is based on the discussion of the virtues in the ideal state in Plato, *Republic* IV 427E-434D.

practical wisdom which has to do with discursive reason, courage which has to do with the emotions, balanced control which consists in a sort of agreement and harmony of passion and reason, justice which makes each of these parts agree in "minding their own business where ruling and being ruled are concerned."¹ Then are we not made godlike by the civic virtues, but by the greater virtues which have the same names? But if by the others, are the civic virtues no help at all to this likeness? It is unreasonable to suppose that we are not made godlike in any way by the civic virtues but that likeness comes by the greater ones—tradition certainly calls men of civic virtue godlike and we must say that somehow or other they were made like by this kind of virtue. It is possible to have virtues on both levels, even if not the same kind of virtues. If then it is agreed that we can be made like even if we are differently related to different virtues, there is nothing to prevent us, even if we are not made like in regard to virtues, being made like by our own virtues to that which does not possess virtue. How? In this way: if something is made hot by the presence of heat, must that from which the heat comes also be heated? And if something is made hot by the presence of fire, must the fire itself be heated by the presence of fire? One might object in answer to the first argument that there is heat in fire, but as part of its nature, so that the argument, if it kept to its analogy, would make virtue something extraneous to the soul but part of the nature of that from which the soul receives it by imitation: and in answer to the argument from fire that it would

40 τὸ ἐκεῖνον ἀρετὴν εἶναι· ἀρετῆς δὲ ἀξιοῦμεν εἶναι
 μείζονα. Ἄλλ' εἰ μὲν οὐ μεταλαμβάνει ψυχὴ τὸ
 αὐτὸ ἦν τῷ ἀφ' οὗ, οὕτως ἔδει λέγειν· νῦν δὲ
 ἕτερον μὲν ἐκεῖνο, ἕτερον δὲ τοῦτο. Οὐδὲ γὰρ
 οἰκία ἢ αἰσθητὴ τὸ αὐτὸ τῆ νοητῆ, καίτοι ὁμοίωται
 καὶ τάξεως δὲ καὶ κόσμου μεταλαμβάνει ἢ οἰκία ἢ
 45 αἰσθητὴ καὶ ἐν τῷ λόγῳ οὐκ ἔστι τάξις οὐδὲ κόσμος
 οὐδὲ συμμετρία. Οὕτως οὖν κόσμου καὶ τάξεως καὶ
 ὁμολογίας μεταλαμβάνοντες ἐκείθεν καὶ τούτων
 ὄντων τῆς ἀρετῆς ἐνθάδε, οὐ δεομένων δὲ τῶν ἐκεῖ
 ὁμολογίας οὐδὲ κόσμου οὐδὲ τάξεως, οὐδ' ἂν
 50 ἀρετῆς εἴη χρεία, καὶ ὁμοιούμεθα οὐδὲν ἤττον τοῖς
 ἐκεῖ δι' ἀρετῆς παρουσίαν. Πρὸς μὲν οὖν τὸ μὴ
 ἀναγκαῖον κακεῖ ἀρετὴν εἶναι, ἐπεὶ περ ἡμεῖς
 ἀρετῆ ὁμοιούμεθα, ταυτί· δεῖ δὲ πειθῶ ἐπάγειν
 τῷ λόγῳ μὴ μένοντας ἐπὶ τῆς βίας.

2. Πρῶτον τοίνυν τὰς ἀρετὰς ληπτέον καθ' ἃς
 φαμεν ὁμοιοῦσθαι, ἵν' αὐτὸ αὐτὸ εὐρωμεν ὃ παρ'
 ἡμῖν μὲν μίμημα ὄν ἀρετῆ ἔστιν, ἐκεῖ δὲ οἶον
 ἀρχέτυπον ὄν οὐκ ἀρετῆ, ἐπισημηγνόμενοι ὡς ἢ
 5 ὁμοιώσις διττῆ· καὶ ἢ μὲν τις ταῦτόν ἐν τοῖς
 ὁμοίοις ἀπαιτεῖ, ὅσα ἐπίσης ὁμοίωται ἀπὸ τοῦ
 αὐτοῦ· ἐν οἷς δὲ τὸ μὲν ὁμοίωται πρὸς ἕτερον,
 τὸ δὲ ἕτερόν ἐστι πρῶτον, οὐκ ἀντιστρέφον πρὸς
 ἐκεῖνο οὐδὲ ὅμοιον αὐτοῦ λεγόμενον, ἐνταῦθα τὴν
 ὁμοιώσιν ἄλλον τρόπον ληπτέον οὐ ταῦτόν εἶδος
 10 ἀπαιτοῦντας, ἀλλὰ μᾶλλον ἕτερον, εἴπερ κατὰ τὸν

¹ Order, arrangement, and proportion only appear when a form is "extended" in matter, and are not present in the archetypal unity of the intelligible form; they are its expression on a lower level. This is a principle of great importance in Plotinus's theory of art; cp. V. 8. 1.

make that principle virtue; but we consider it greater than virtue. But if that in which the soul participates was the same as the source from which it comes, it would be right to speak in this way; but in fact the two are distinct. The perceptible house is not the same thing as the intelligible house, though it is made in its likeness; the perceptible house participates in arrangement and order, but There, in its formative principle, there is no arrangement or order or proportion.¹ So then, if we participate in order and arrangement and harmony which come from There, and these constitute virtue here, and if the principles There have no need of harmony or order or arrangement, they will have no need of virtue either, and we shall all the same be made like them by the presence of virtue. This is enough to show that it is not necessary for virtue to exist There because we are made like the principles There by virtue. But we must make our argument persuasive, and not be content to force agreement.

2. First then we must consider the virtues by which we assert that we are made like, in order that we may discover this one and the same reality which when we possess it as an imitation is virtue, but There, where it exists as an archetype, is not virtue. We should note that there are two kinds of likeness; one requires that there should be something the same in the things which are alike; this applies to things which derive their likeness equally from the same principle. But in the case of two things of which one is like the other, but the other is primary, not reciprocally related to the thing in its likeness and not said to be like it, likeness must be understood in a different sense; we must not require the

10 ἕτερον τρόπον ὁμοίωται. Τί ποτε οὖν ἔστιν ἡ ἀρετὴ ἢ τε σύμπασα καὶ ἐκάστη; Σαφέστερος δὲ ὁ λόγος ἔσται ἐφ' ἐκάστης· οὕτω γὰρ καὶ ὁ τι κοινόν, καθ' ὃ ἀρεταὶ πάσαι, δῆλον ῥαδίως ἔσται. Αἱ μὲν τοίνυν πολιτικαὶ ἀρεταί, ἃς ἄνω ποι
15 εἴπομεν, κατακοσμοῦσι μὲν ὄντως καὶ ἀμείνους ποιοῦσιν ὀρίζουσαι καὶ μετροῦσαι τὰς ἐπιθυμίας καὶ ὅλως τὰ πύθη μετροῦσαι καὶ ψευδεῖς δόξας ἀφαιροῦσαι τῷ ὅλως ἀμείνονι καὶ τῷ ὠρίσθαι καὶ τῶν ἀμέτρων καὶ ἀορίστων ἔξω εἶναι κατὰ τὸ μεμετρημένον, καὶ αὐταὶ ὀρισθεῖσαι. * Ἡ μέτρα γε ἐν ὕλη τῇ ψυχῇ, ὁμοίωται τῷ ἐκεῖ μέτρῳ καὶ
20 ἔχουσι ἴχνος τοῦ ἐκεῖ ἀρίστου. Ἰὸ μὲν γὰρ πάντῃ ἀμετρον ὕλη ὃν πάντῃ ἀνωμοίωται· καθ' ὅσον δὲ μεταλαμβάνει εἶδους, κατὰ τοσοῦτον ὁμοιοῦται ἀνειδέῳ ἐκείνῳ ὄντι. Μᾶλλον δὲ τὰ ἐγγὺς μεταλαμβάνει· ψυχὴ δὲ ἐγγυτέρω σώματος καὶ συγγενέστερον· ταύτῃ καὶ πλέον μεταλαμ-
25 βάνει, ὥστε καὶ ἐξαπατᾶν θεὸς φαντασθεῖσα, μὴ τὸ πᾶν θεοῦ τοῦτο ἦ. Οὕτω μὲν οὖν οὗτοι ὁμοιοῦνται.
3. Ἄλλ' ἐπεὶ τὴν ὁμοίωσιν ἄλλην ὑποφαίνει ὡς τῆς μείζονος ἀρετῆς οὖσαν, περὶ ἐκείνης λεκτέον· ἐν ᾧ καὶ σαφέστερον ἔσται μᾶλλον καὶ τῆς πολιτικῆς ἢ οὐαία, καὶ ἥτις ἢ μείζων κατὰ τὴν
5 οὐαίαν, καὶ ὅλως, ὅτι ἔστι παρὰ τὴν πολιτικὴν

¹ This doctrine of the two kinds of likeness may well have arisen, as Bréhier suggests, as an answer to the objection of Parmenides to the view that the Forms are παραδείγματα (patterns) (Plato, *Parmenides* 132D-133A).

² Soul is of course a god for Plotinus, though of the lowest rank; what we are not to believe is that it is the whole, or the most important part, of divinity.

same form in both, but rather a different one, since likeness has come about in this different way.¹

What then is virtue, in general and in particular? Our account of it will be clearer if we deal separately with the particular kinds; in this way that which they have in common, by which they are all virtues, will easily become clear. The civic virtues, which we mentioned above, do genuinely set us in order and make us better by giving limit and measure to our desires, and putting measure into all our experience; and they abolish false opinions, by what is altogether better and by the fact of limitation, and by the exclusion of the unmeasured and indefinite in accord with their measuredness; and they are themselves limited and clearly defined. And so far as they are a measure which forms the matter of the soul, they are made like the measure There and have a trace in them of the Best There. That which is altogether unmeasured is matter, and so altogether unlike: but in so far as it participates in form it becomes like that Good, which is formless. Things which are near participate more. Soul is nearer and more akin to it than body; so it participates more, to the point of deceiving us into imagining that it is a god,² and that all divinity is comprised in this likeness. This is how those possessed of political virtue are made like.

3. But, since Plato indicates that likeness is different as belonging to the greater virtue, we must speak about that different likeness. In this discussion the real nature of civic virtue will become clear, and we shall also understand what is the virtue which is greater than it in its real nature, and in general that there is another kind different from civic virtue.

ἑτέρα. Λέγων δὴ ὁ Πλάτων τὴν ὁμοίωσιν τὴν
 πρὸς τὸν θεὸν φυγὴν τῶν ἐντεῦθεν εἶναι, καὶ
 ταῖς ἀρεταῖς ταῖς ἐν πολιτείᾳ οὐ τὸ ἀπλῶς διδοῦς,
 ἀλλὰ προστιθεὶς πολιτικὰς γε, καὶ ἀλλαχοῦ
 καθάρσεις λέγων ἀπάσας δῆλός τ' ἐστὶ διττὰς
 10 τιθεὶς καὶ τὴν ὁμοίωσιν οὐ κατὰ τὴν πολιτικὴν
 τιθεὶς. Πῶς οὖν λέγομεν ταύτας καθάρσεις καὶ
 πῶς καθαρθέντες μάλιστα ὁμοιούμεθα; Ἡ ἐπειδὴ
 κακὴ μὲν ἐστὶν ἡ ψυχὴ συμπεφυρμένη τῷ
 σώματι καὶ ὁμοπαθῆς γινομένη αὐτῷ καὶ πάντα
 συνδοξάζουσα, εἴη ἂν ἀγαθὴ καὶ ἀρετὴν ἔχουσα,
 15 εἴ μῆτε συνδοξάζοι, ἀλλὰ μόνῃ ἐνεργοῖ—ὅπερ ἐστὶ
 νοεῖν τε καὶ φρονεῖν—μῆτε ὁμοπαθῆς εἴη—ὅπερ
 ἐστὶ σωφρονεῖν—μῆτε φοβοῖτο ἀφισταμένη τοῦ
 σώματος—ὅπερ ἐστὶν ἀνδρίζεσθαι—ἡγοῖτο δὲ λόγος
 καὶ νοῦς, τὰ δὲ μὴ ἀντιτείνουσι—δικαιοσύνη δ' ἂν
 εἴη τοῦτο. Τὴν δὴ τοιαύτην διάθεσιν τῆς ψυχῆς
 20 καθ' ἣν νοεῖ τε καὶ ἀπαθῆς οὕτως ἐστίν, εἴ τις
 ὁμοίωσιν λέγοι πρὸς θεόν, οὐκ ἂν ἀμαρτάνοι·
 καθαρὸν γὰρ καὶ τὸ θεῖον καὶ ἡ ἐνέργεια τοιαύτη,
 ὡς τὸ μιμούμενον ἔχει φρόνησιν. Τί οὖν οὐ
 ἀκείνο οὕτω διάκειται; Ἡ οὐδὲ διάκειται, ψυχῆς
 δὲ ἡ διάθεσις. Νοεῖ τε ἡ ψυχὴ ἄλλως· τῶν δὲ
 25 ἐκεῖ τὸ μὲν ἑτέρως, τὸ δὲ οὐδὲ ἄλλως. Πάλιν οὖν

1 The reference here is to the passage of the *Theaetetus* quoted at the beginning of the first chapter.

Plato, when he speaks of "likeness" as a "flight to God" from existence here below,¹ and does not call the virtues which come into play in civic life just "virtues," but adds the qualification "civic," and elsewhere calls all the virtues "purifications,"² makes clear that he postulates two kinds of virtues and does not regard the civic ones as producing likeness. What then do we mean when we call these other virtues "purifications," and how are we made really like by being purified? Since the soul is evil when it is thoroughly mixed with the body and shares its experiences and has all the same opinions, it will be good and possess virtue when it no longer has the same opinions but acts alone—this is intelligence and wisdom—and does not share the body's experiences—this is self-control—and is not afraid of departing from the body—this is courage—and is ruled by reason and intellect, without opposition—and this is justice. One would not be wrong in calling this state of the soul likeness to God, in which its activity is intellectual, and it is free in this way from bodily affections. For the Divine too is pure, and its activity is of such a kind that that which imitates it has wisdom. Well then, why is the Divine itself not in this state? It has no states at all; states belong to the soul. The soul's intellectual activity is different: but of the realities There one thinks differently, and the other does not think at all. Another question then: is "intellectual activity" just a common term covering two different things?

² Plato uses the epithet "civic" of virtues at *Republic* IV. 430C, but without any implication of the sort of distinction made here. Virtues are called "purifications" in the *Phaedo*, 69B-C.

τὸ νοεῖν ὁμώνυμον; Οὐδαμῶς· ἀλλὰ τὸ μὲν
 πρώτως, τὸ δὲ παρ' ἐκείνου ἑτέρως. Ὡς γὰρ ὁ
 ἐν φωνῇ λόγος μίμημα τοῦ ἐν ψυχῇ, οὕτω καὶ ὁ
 ἐν ψυχῇ μίμημα τοῦ ἐν ἑτέρῳ. Ὡς οὖν μεμερισμέ-
 30 νος ὁ ἐν προφορᾷ πρὸς τὸν ἐν ψυχῇ, οὕτω καὶ ὁ
 ἐν ψυχῇ ἑρμηνεύς ὢν ἐκείνου πρὸς τὸ πρὸ αὐτοῦ.
 Ἡ δὲ ἀρετὴ ψυχῆς· νοῦ δὲ οὐκ ἔστιν οὐδὲ τοῦ
 ἐπέκεινα.

4. Ζητητέον δέ, εἰ ἡ κάθαρσις ταῦτόν τῃ
 τοιαύτῃ ἀρετῇ, ἢ προηγείται μὲν ἡ κάθαρσις,
 ἔπεται δὲ ἡ ἀρετὴ, καὶ πότερον ἐν τῷ καθαίρεσθαι
 ἢ ἀρετῇ ἢ ἐν τῷ κεκαθάρθαι. Ἀτελεστέρα τῆς ἐν
 5 τῷ κεκαθάρθαι <ἢ ἐν τῷ καθαίρεσθαι· τὸ γὰρ
 κεκαθάρθαι> οἶον τέλος ἦδη. Ἀλλὰ τὸ κεκαθάρθαι
 ἀφαίρεσις ἀλλοτρίου παντός, τὸ δὲ ἀγαθὸν ἕτερον
 αὐτοῦ. Ἡ, εἰ πρὸ τῆς ἀκαθαρσίας ἀγαθὸν ἦν, ἡ
 κάθαρσις ἀρκεῖ· ἀλλ' ἀρκέσει μὲν ἡ κάθαρσις, τὸ
 δὲ καταλειπόμενον ἔσται τὸ ἀγαθόν, οὐχ ἡ κάθα-
 10 ρσις. Καὶ τί τὸ καταλειπόμενον ἔστι, ζητητέον·
 ἴσως γὰρ οὐδὲ τὸ ἀγαθὸν ἦν ἡ φύσις ἢ καταλειпу-
 μένη· οὐ γὰρ ἂν ἐγένετο ἐν κακῷ. Ἄρ' οὖν
 ἀγαθοειδῆ λεκτέον; Ἡ οὐχ ἰκανὴν πρὸς τὸ μένειν
 ἐν τῷ ὄντως ἀγαθῷ· πέφυκε γὰρ ἐπ' ἄμφω. Τὸ
 οὖν ἀγαθὸν αὐτῆς τὸ συνεῖναι τῷ συγγενεῖ, τὸ δὲ
 15 κακὸν τὸ τοῖς ἐναντίοις. Δεῖ οὖν καθηραμένην
 συνεῖναι. Συνέσται δὲ ἐπιστραφεῖσα. Ἄρ' οὖν
 μετὰ τὴν κάθαρσιν ἐπιστρέφεται; Ἡ μετὰ τὴν
 κάθαρσιν ἐπέστραπται. Τοῦτ' οὖν ἡ ἀρετὴ αὐτῆς;

¹ I.e., in Intellect, which is τὸ θεῖον just referred to.

Not at all. It is used primarily of the Divine, and
 secondarily of that which derives from it. As the
 spoken word is an imitation of that in the soul, so
 the word in the soul is an imitation of that in some-
 thing else: as the uttered word, then, is broken up
 into parts as compared with that in the soul, so is that
 in the soul as compared with that before it,¹ which
 it interprets. And virtue belongs to the soul, but
 not to Intellect or That which is beyond it.

4. We must investigate whether purification is the
 same thing as this kind of virtue, or whether puri-
 fication comes first and virtue follows, and whether
 virtue consists in the process of being purified or the
 achieved state of purification. The virtue in the pro-
 cess of purification is less perfect than that in the
 achieved state, for the achieved state of purification
 is already a sort of perfection. But being completely
 purified is a stripping of everything alien, and the
 good is different from that. If goodness existed before
 the impurity, purification is enough; but even so,
 though the purification will be enough, the good will
 be what is left after purification, not the purification
 itself. And we must enquire what that which is left
 is; perhaps the nature which is left was never really
 the good; for if it was it would not have come
 into evil. Should we call it something like the good?
 Yes, but not a nature capable of remaining in the
 real good, for it has a natural tendency in both
 directions. So its good will be fellowship with that
 which is akin to it, and its evil fellowship with its
 opposites. Then it must attain to this fellowship
 after being purified; and it will do so by a conversion.
 Does it then turn itself after the purification?
 Rather, after the purification it is already turned.

ἼΙ τὸ γινόμενον αὐτῇ ἐκ τῆς ἐπιστροφῆς. Τί οὖν
 τοῦτο; Θεά καὶ τύπος τοῦ ὀφθέντος ἐντεθεὶς καὶ
 20 ἐνεργῶν, ὡς ἡ ὄψις περὶ τὸ ὁράμενον. Οὐκ ἄρα
 εἶχεν αὐτὰ οὐδ' ἀναμιμνήσκειται; Ἡ εἶχεν οὐκ
 ἐνεργοῦντα, ἀλλὰ ἀποκείμενα ἀφώτιστα· ἵνα δὲ
 φωτισθῇ καὶ τότε γινῶ αὐτὰ ἐνόντα, δεῖ προσβαλεῖν
 τῷ φωτίζοντι. Εἶχε δὲ οὐκ αὐτά, ἀλλὰ τύπους·
 25 δεῖ οὖν τὸν τύπον τοῖς ἀληθινοῖς, ὧν καὶ οἱ τύποι,
 ἐφαρμόσαι. Τάχα δὲ καὶ οὕτω λέγεται ἔχειν, ὅτι
 ὁ νοῦς οὐκ ἀλλότριος καὶ μάλιστα δὲ οὐκ ἀλλότριος,
 ὅταν πρὸς αὐτὸν βλέπῃ· εἰ δὲ μή, καὶ παρὼν
 ἀλλότριος. Ἐπεὶ κἄν¹ ταῖς ἐπιστήμαις· εἰ μὴ δ'
 ὅλως ἐνεργῶμεν κατ' αὐτάς, ἀλλότριαι.
 5 Ἐπὶ πόσον κάθαρσις λεκτέον· οὕτω γὰρ
 καὶ ἡ ὁμοίωσις τίνι (θεῷ) φανερά καὶ ἡ ταυτότης
 [τίνι θεῷ]. Τοῦτο δὲ ἐστὶ μάλιστα ζητεῖν θυμὸν
 πῶς καὶ ἐπιθυμίαν καὶ τἄλλα πάντα, λύπην καὶ τὰ
 5 συγγενῆ, καὶ τὸ χωρίζειν ἀπὸ σώματος ἐπὶ πόσον
 δυνατόν. Ἀπὸ μὲν δὴ σώματος ἴσως μὲν καὶ
 τοῖς οἷον τόποις συνάγουσαν πρὸς ἑαυτήν, πάντως
 μὴν ἀπαθῶς ἔχουσαν καὶ τὰς ἀναγκαίας
 τῶν ἡδονῶν αἰσθήσεις μόνον ποιουμένην καὶ
 10 τὰς δὲ ἀλγηδόνας ἀφαιρούσαν καί, εἰ μὴ οἶδόν τε,

¹ ἐπεὶ κἄν Harder: ἐπεὶ καὶ codd.

¹ What the soul sees, the realities which become consciously present to and active in it after its conversion, are the beings of the realm of Intellect, the Forms; they were continually present to it, but it was not conscious of them when it was unpurified and unconverted.

Is this, then, its virtue? It is rather that which results for it from the conversion. And what is this? A sight and the impression of what is seen,¹ implanted and working in it, like the relationship between sight and its object. But did it not have the realities which it sees? Does it not recollect them? It had them, but not active, lying apart and unilluminated; if they are to be illuminated and it is to know that they are present in it, it must thrust towards that which gives it light. It did not have the realities themselves but impressions of them; so it must bring the impressions into accord with the true realities of which they are impressions. Perhaps, too, this, they say, is how it is; intellect is not alien and is particularly not alien when the soul looks towards it; otherwise it is alien even when it is present. The same applies to the different branches of knowledge; ² if we do not act by them at all, they do not really belong to us.

5. But we must state the extent of the purification; in this way it will become clear what god we are made like to and identified with. The question is substantially this; how does the purification deal with passion and desire and all the rest, pain and its kindred, and how far is separation from the body possible? We might say that the soul draws together to itself in a sort of place of its own away from the body, and is wholly unaffected, and only makes itself aware of pleasures when it has to, using them as remedies and reliefs to prevent its activity being impeded; it gets rid of pains or if it cannot, bears them quietly and makes them less by not suffer-

² I read here κἄν ταῖς ἐπιστήμαις with Harder (*Gnomon* 1952, 188), an emendation now approved by Henry-Schwyzler.

πράως φέρουσαν καὶ ἐλάττους τιθεῖσαν τῷ μὴ
 συμπάσχειν· τὸν δὲ θυμὸν ὅσον οἶόν τε ἀφαιρούσαν
 καί, εἰ δυνατόν, πάντα, εἰ δὲ μὴ, μὴ γοῦν αὐτὴν
 συνοργιζομένην, ἀλλ' ἄλλου εἶναι τὸ ἀπροαίρετον,
 15 τὸ δὲ ἀπροαίρετον ὀλίγον εἶναι καὶ ἀσθενές· τὸν
 δὲ φόβον πάντη περὶ οὐδενὸς γὰρ φοβήσεται—
 τὸ δὲ ἀπροαίρετον καὶ ἐνταῦθα—πλήν γ' ἐν
 νοουθετήσει. Ἐπιθυμίαν δέ; Ὅτι μὲν μηδενὸς
 φαύλου, δῆλον· σίτων δὲ καὶ ποτῶν πρὸς ἄνεσιν
 οὐκ αὐτὴ ἕξει· οὐδὲ τῶν ἀφροδισίων δέ· εἴ δ' ἄρα,
 20 φυσικῶν, οἶμαι, καὶ οὐδὲ τὸ ἀπροαίρετον ἔχουσῶν·
 εἴ δ' ἄρα, ὅσον μετὰ φαντασίας προτυποῦς
 καὶ ταύτης. Ὅλως δὲ αὕτη μὲν πάντων τούτων
 καθαρὰ ἔσται καὶ τὸ ἄλογον δὲ βουλήσεται καὶ
 αὐτὸ καθαρὸν ποιῆσαι, ὥστε μηδὲ πλήττεσθαι· εἰ
 δ' ἄρα, μὴ σφόδρα, ἀλλ' ὀλίγας τὰς πληγὰς αὐτοῦ
 25 εἶναι καὶ εὐθὺς λυομένας τῇ γειτονήσει. ὥσπερ
 εἴ τις σοφῶ γειτονῶν ἀπολαύει τῆς τοῦ σοφοῦ
 γειτνιασεως ἢ ὁμοίως γενόμενος ἢ αἰδούμενος, ὡς
 μηδὲν τολμᾶν ποιεῖν ὡν ὁ ἀγαθὸς οὐ θέλει.
 Οὐκ οὐκ ἔσται μάχη· ἀρκεῖ γὰρ παρῶν ὁ λόγος,
 ὃν τὸ χεῖρον αἰδέσεται, ὥστε καὶ αὐτὸ τὸ χεῖρον
 30 δυσχερᾶναι, ἐάν τι ὅλως κινηθῆ, ὅτι μὴ ἡσυχίαν
 ἦγε παρόντος τοῦ δεσπότη, καὶ ἀσθένειαν αὐτῷ
 ἐπιτιμῆσαι.

6. Ἔστι μὲν οὖν οὐδὲν τῶν τοιούτων ἀμαρτία,
 ἀλλὰ κατόρθωσις ἀνθρώπου· ἀλλ' ἡ σπουδὴ οὐκ

ing with the body. It gets rid of passion as completely as possible, altogether if it can, but if it cannot, at least it does not share its emotional excitement; the involuntary impulse belongs to something else, and is small and weak as well. It does away with fear altogether, for it has nothing to be afraid of—though involuntary impulse comes in here too—except, that is, where fear has a corrective function. What about desire? It will obviously not desire anything bad; it will not itself have the desire of food and drink for the relief of the body, and certainly not of sexual pleasures either. If it does have any of these desires they will, I think, be natural ones with no element of involuntary impulse in them; or if it does have other kinds, only as far as it is with the imagination, which is also prone to these.

The soul will be pure in all these ways and will want to make the irrational part, too, pure, so that this part may not be disturbed; or, if it is, not very much; its shocks will only be slight ones, easily allayed by the neighbourhood of the soul: just as a man living next door to a sage would profit by the sage's neighbourhood, either by becoming like him or by regarding him with such respect as not to dare to do anything of which the good man would not approve. So there will be no conflict: the presence of reason will be enough; the worse part will so respect it that even this worse part itself will be upset if there is any movement at all, because it did not keep quiet in the presence of its master, and will rebuke its own weakness.

6. There is no sin in anything of this sort for a man, but only right action. Our concern, though, is not to

ἔξω ἀμαρτίας εἶναι, ἀλλὰ θεὸν εἶναι. Εἰ μὲν οὖν
 5 τι τῶν τοιούτων ἀπροαίρετον γίνοιτο, θεὸς ἂν εἴη
 ὁ τοιοῦτος καὶ δαίμων διπλοῦς ὢν, μᾶλλον δὲ
 ἔχων σὺν αὐτῷ ἄλλον ἄλλην ἀρετὴν ἔχοντα· εἰ δὲ
 μηδέν, θεὸς μόνον· θεὸς δὲ τῶν ἐπομένων τῷ
 πρώτῳ. Αὐτὸς μὲν γάρ ἐστιν ὃς ἦλθεν ἐκείθεν
 καὶ τὸ καθ' αὐτόν, εἰ γένοιτο οἷος ἦλθεν, ἐκεῖ
 ἐστιν· ᾧ δὲ συναρκίσθη ἐνθάδε ἦκων, καὶ τοῦτον
 10 αὐτῷ ὁμοιώσει κατὰ δύναμιν τὴν ἐκείνου, ὥστε,
 εἰ δυνατόν, ἀπληκτον εἶναι ἢ ἀπρακτόν γε τῶν
 μὴ δοκούντων τῷ δεσπότῃ. Τίς οὖν ἐκάστη
 ἀρετὴ τῷ τοιούτῳ; Ἡ σοφία μὲν καὶ φρόνησις
 ἐν θεωρίᾳ ὧν νοῦς ἔχει· νοῦς δὲ τῇ ἐπαφῇ.
 Διττὴ δὲ ἐκάτερα, ἡ μὲν ἐν νῷ οὔσα, ἡ δὲ ἐν
 15 ψυχῇ. Κακεῖ μὲν οὐκ ἀρετὴ, ἐν δὲ ψυχῇ ἀρετὴ.
 Ἐκεῖ οὖν τί; Ἐνέργεια αὐτοῦ καὶ ὅ ἐστιν
 ἐνταῦθα δὲ τὸ ἐν ἄλλῳ ἐκείθεν ἀρετὴ. Οὐδὲ γὰρ
 αὐτοδικαιοσύνη καὶ ἐκάστη ἀρετὴ, ἀλλ' οἶον παρά-
 δειγμα· τὸ δὲ ἀπ' αὐτῆς ἐν ψυχῇ ἀρετὴ. Τινὸς

¹ The allusion is to the procession of the gods in *Phaedrus* 243E4 ff. In Plato those who follow the first god, Zeus the leader of the procession, are the philosophical souls (250B7, 252E1); but Plotinus is probably using Plato's language to express his own thought and means by the First his own First Principle, the Good, and by the gods who follow, the divinities of the realm of Intellect.

be out of sin, but to be god. If, then, there is still any element of involuntary impulse of this sort, a man in this state will be a god or spirit who is double, or rather who has with him someone else who possesses a different kind of virtue: if there is nothing, he will be simply god, and one of those gods who follow the First.¹ For he himself is the god who came Thence, and his own real nature, if he becomes what he was when he came, is There. When he came here he took up his dwelling with someone else, whom he will make like himself to the best of the powers of his real nature, so that if possible this someone else will be free from disturbance or will do nothing of which his master does not approve. What, then, is each particular virtue when a man is in this state? Wisdom, theoretical and practical, consists in the contemplation of that which intellect contains; but intellect has it by immediate contact. There are two kinds of wisdom, one in intellect, one in soul. That which is There [in intellect] is not virtue, that in the soul is virtue. What is it, then, There? The act of the self, what it really is; virtue is what comes Thence and exists here in another. For neither absolute justice nor any other moral absolute is virtue, but a kind of exemplar; virtue is what is derived from it in the soul. Virtue is someone's virtue; but the exemplar of each particular virtue in the intellect belongs to itself, not to someone else.

If justice is "minding one's own business" does that mean that it always requires a plurality of parts for its existence? There is one kind of justice which exists in a plurality, when the parts which it orders are many, and another which is solely and entirely

γὰρ ἡ ἀρετή· αὐτὸ δὲ ἕκαστον αὐτοῦ, οὐχὶ δὲ ἄλλου
 20 τινός. Δικαιοσύνη δὲ εἴπερ οἰκειοπραγία, ἀρα αἰεὶ
 ἐν πλήθει μερών; Ἡ ἢ μὲν ἐν πλήθει, ὅταν πολλὰ
 ἢ τὰ μέρη, ἢ δὲ ὅλως οἰκειοπραγία, κἂν ἐνός ἢ.
 Ἡ γοῦν ἀληθῆς αὐτοδικαιοσύνη ἐνός πρὸς αὐτό,
 ἐν ᾧ οὐκ ἄλλο, τὸ δὲ ἄλλο· ὥστε καὶ τῇ ψυχῇ
 25 δικαιοσύνη ἢ μείζων τὸ πρὸς νοῦν ἐνεργεῖν, τὸ δὲ
 σωφρονεῖν ἢ εἴσω πρὸς νοῦν στροφή, ἢ δὲ ἀνδρία
 ἀπάθεια καθ' ὁμοίωσιν τοῦ πρὸς ὃ βλέπει ἀπαθὲς
 ὄν τὴν φύσιν, αὕτη δὲ ἐξ ἀρετῆς, ἵνα μὴ συμπαθῇ
 τῷ χεῖρονι συνοίκῳ.

7. Ἀντακολουθοῦσι τοίνυν ἀλλήλαις καὶ αὗται
 αἱ ἀρεταὶ ἐν ψυχῇ, ὥσπερ καὶ ἐκεῖ τὰ πρὸ τῆς
 ἀρετῆς [αἱ] ἐν νῷ ὥσπερ παραδείγματα. Καὶ γὰρ
 ἢ νόησις ἐκεῖ ἐπιστήμη καὶ σοφία, τὸ δὲ πρὸς
 5 αὐτὸν ἢ σωφρονισμὸς, τὸ δὲ οἰκεῖον ἔργον ἢ οἰκειο-
 πραγία, τὸ δὲ οἶον ἀνδρία ἢ ἀνλόγησις καὶ τὸ ἐφ'
 αὐτοῦ μένει καθαρόν. Ἐν ψυχῇ τοίνυν πρὸς νοῦν
 ἢ ὄρασις σοφία καὶ φρόνησις, ἀρεταὶ αὐτῆς· οὐ
 γὰρ αὐτῇ ταῦτα, ὥσπερ ἐκεῖ. Καὶ τὰ ἄλλα
 ὡσαύτως ἀκολουθεῖ· καὶ τῇ καθάρσει δέ, εἴπερ
 10 πᾶσαι καθάρσεις κατὰ τὸ κεκαθάρθαι, ἀνάγκη
 πᾶσας· ἢ οὐδεμία τελεία. Καὶ ὁ μὲν ἔχων τὰς

¹ Plotinus is here trying to fit Plato's definition of justice as "minding one's own business" (from the passage in *Republic* IV referred to in the note on ch. 1) into his own scheme of higher and lower virtues by means of his principle that the order and pattern in a lower multiplicity is always the expression of a higher unity.

² The doctrine that the virtues imply one another reciprocally is Stoic. Cp. *Stoicorum Veterum Fragmenta* III. 295 and 299. Plotinus in this treatise, as Bréhier points out in his introduction, reconciles, by means of his doctrine of

"minding one's own business" even if it is the business of a unity. True absolute justice is the disposition of a unity to itself, a unity in which there are not different parts.¹

So the higher justice in the soul is its activity towards intellect, its self-control is its inward turning to intellect, its courage is its freedom from affections, according to the likeness of that to which it looks which is free from affections by nature: this freedom from affections in the soul comes from virtue, to prevent its sharing in the affections of its inferior companion.

7. These virtues in the soul, too, imply one another reciprocally, in the same way as the exemplars (so to call them) There in intellect which are prior to virtue.² For intuitive thought There is knowledge and wisdom, self-concentration is self-control, its own proper activity is "minding its own business"; its equivalent to courage is immateriality and abiding pure by itself. In the soul, sight directed towards intellect is wisdom, theoretical and practical; these are virtues belonging to soul; for it is not itself they, as is the case There, and the others follow in the same way. And if all virtues are purifications, in the sense that they are the result of a completed process of purification, that process must produce them all, otherwise, [if they are not all present], no single one of them will be perfect. Whichever has the greater virtues

higher and lower virtues, the Stoic view that the virtue of the sage is identical with divine virtue, one and indivisible, with Aristotle's view that the virtues are specifically human excellences, not found in the divine, which is above virtue as the beast is below it (cp. *Nicomachean Ethics* VII 1. 1145a 25-7).

μείζους καὶ τὰς ἐλάττους ἐξ ἀνάγκης δυνάμει, ὁ δὲ τὰς ἐλάττους οὐκ ἀναγκαίως ἔχει ἐκείνας. Ὁ μὲν δὴ προηγούμενος τοῦ σπουδαίου βίος οὗτος. Πότερα δὲ ἐνεργεία ἔχει καὶ τὰς ἐλάττους ὁ τὰς
 15 μείζους ἢ ἄλλον τρόπον, σκεπτόν καθ' ἐκάστην οἶον φρόνησιν· εἰ γὰρ ἄλλαις ἀρχαῖς χρήσεται, πῶς ἔτι ἐκείνη μένει καὶ εἰ μὴ ἐνεργοῦσα; Καὶ εἰ ἢ μὲν φύσει τοσόνδε, ἢ δὲ τοσόνδε, καὶ ἢ σωφροσύνη ἐκείνη μετροῦσα, ἢ δὲ ὅλως ἀναιρούσα; Ταῦτόν δὲ καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν ἄλλων ὅλως τῆς φρονήσεως
 20 κινήσεως. Ἡ εἰδήσει γε αὐτὰς καὶ ὅσον παρ' αὐτῶν ἔξει; τάχα δέ ποτε περιστατικῶς ἐνεργήσει κατὰ τινὰς αὐτῶν. Ἐπὶ μείζους δὲ ἀρχὰς ἦκων καὶ ἄλλα μέτρα κατ' ἐκείνα πράξει· οἶον τὸ σωφρονεῖν οὐκ ἐν μέτρῳ ἐκείνῳ τιθεῖς, ἀλλ' ὅλως κατὰ τὸ δυνατὸν χωρίζων καὶ ὅλως ζῶν οὐχὶ τὸν
 25 ἀνθρώπου βίον τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ, ὃν ἀξιοῖ ἢ πολιτικὴ ἀρετὴ, ἀλλὰ τοῦτον μὲν καταλιπὼν, ἄλλον δὲ ἐλόμενος τὸν τῶν θεῶν· πρὸς γὰρ τούτους, οὐ πρὸς ἀνθρώπους ἀγαθοὺς ἢ ὁμοίωσις. Ὅμοίωσις δὲ ἢ μὲν πρὸς τούτους, ὡς εἰκὼν εἰκόνι ὁμοίωται ἀπὸ
 30 τοῦ αὐτοῦ ἐκατέρω. Ἡ δὲ πρὸς ἄλλον ὡς πρὸς παράδειγμα.

must necessarily have the lesser ones potentially, but it is not necessary for the possessor of the lesser virtues to have the greater ones. Here, then, we have described the life of the good man in its principal features.

The question whether the possessor of the greater virtues has the lesser ones in act or in some other way must be considered in relation to each individual virtue. Take, for example, practical wisdom. If other principles are in use, how is it still there, even inactive? And if one kind of virtue naturally permits so much, but the other a different amount, and one kind of self-control measures and limits, the other totally abolishes? The same applies to the other virtues, once the question of practical wisdom has been raised. Perhaps the possessor of the virtues will know them, and how much he can get from them, and will act according to some of them as circumstances require. But when he reaches higher principles and different measures he will act according to these. For instance, he will not make self-control consist in that former observance of measure and limit, but will altogether separate himself, as far as possible, from his lower nature and will not live the life of the good man which civic virtue requires. He will leave that behind, and choose another, the life of the gods: for it is to them, not to good men, that we are to be made like. Likeness to good men is the likeness of two pictures of the same subject to each other; but likeness to the gods is likeness to the model, a being of a different kind to ourselves.

I. 3. ON DIALECTIC

Introductory Note

THIS treatise is No. 20 in Porphyry's chronological order; it was probably written about the same time as the preceding treatise *On Virtues* (No. 19) and is closely connected with it. It was established in the former treatise that our object is to become godlike, and that this is to be attained by purifying the soul by separating it from the body and ascending in spirit to the intelligible world. *On Dialectic*, as its first words show, is intended to indicate the way of intellectual purification and ascent which we must follow. The first three chapters are an admirable summary of Plato's account of the beginning of the ascent in the *Phaedrus* and the *Symposium*, with two significant (all the more so for being unconscious) alterations: the first is that in Plato φιλόσοφος, μουσικός and ἐρωτικός (*Phaedrus* 248D3) are three different descriptions of the same kind of person, but in Plotinus they are three distinct people: the second is that μουσικός in Plato is used, as always, in the wide classical sense of "cultivated person", one versed in the arts of the Muses; but in Plotinus (as sometimes in Aristotle) it means what we mean by "musician" (in the sense of "music-lover", not specifically composer or performer). The second part of the treatise gives an exposition of Platonic dialectic based on the *Republic*, *Phaedrus* and *Sophist*, asserts its superiority to Aristotelian and Stoic logic, and sketches the relationship to it of natural and moral philosophy.

Synopsis

What is our way up to the Good, and who is best fitted to start on it? The people best qualified are those of

ON DIALECTIC

whom Plato speaks, the philosopher, the musician, and the lover. The two stages of the journey, from the sense-world, and in that higher world up to its top (ch. 1). Characteristics of the musician (ch. 1), of the lover (ch. 2) and the philosopher (ch. 3). Description of Platonic dialectic (ch. 4): it is the valuable part of philosophy, concerned with realities (the Forms) and not with words like logic (ch. 5). The dependence on it of natural and moral philosophy and its relationship to moral virtue (ch. 6).

I. 3. (20) ΠΕΡΙ ΔΙΑΛΕΚΤΙΚΗΣ

1. Τίς τέχνη ἢ μέθοδος ἢ ἐπιτήδευσις ἡμᾶς οἱ
 δεῖ πορευθῆναι ἀνάγει; Ὅπου μὲν οὖν δεῖ ἐλθεῖν,
 ὡς ἐπὶ τὰγαθὸν καὶ τὴν ἀρχὴν τὴν πρώτην,
 κείσθω διωμολογημένον καὶ διὰ πολλῶν δεδειγμέ-
 5 νον· καὶ δὴ καὶ δι' ὧν τοῦτο ἐδείκνυτο, ἀναγωγὴ
 τις ἦν. Τίνα δὲ δεῖ εἶναι τὸν ἀναχθησόμενον;
 Ἄρα γε τὸν πάντα ἢ τὸν πλεῖστα φησιν ἰδόντα,
 ὃς ἐν τῇ πρώτῃ γενέσει εἰς γονὴν ἀνδρὸς
 ἐσομένου φιλοσόφου μουσικοῦ τινος ἢ
 10 ἐρωτικοῦ; Ὁ μὲν δὲ φιλόσοφος τὴν φύσιν καὶ
 ὁ μουσικὸς καὶ ὁ ἐρωτικὸς ἀνακτέοι. Τίς οὖν ὁ
 τρόπος; Ἄρα γε εἰς καὶ ὁ αὐτὸς ἅπασι τούτοις,
 ἢ καθ' ἓνα εἰς τις; Ἔστι μὲν οὖν ἡ πορεία διττὴ
 πᾶσιν ἢ ἀναβαίνουσιν ἢ ἀνω ἐλλθοῦσιν· ἡ μὲν γὰρ
 15 προτιέρα ἀπὸ τῶν κάτω, ἡ δὲ γε δευτέρα, οἷς ἤδη
 ἐν τῷ νοητῷ γενόμενοις καὶ οἷον ἴχνος θεῖσιν ἐκεῖ
 πορεύεσθαι ἀνάγκη, ἕως ἂν εἰς τὸ ἔσχατον τοῦ
 τόπου ἀφίκωνται, ὃ δὲ τέλος τῆς πορείας ὄν
 τυγχάνει, ὅταν τις ἐπ' ἄκρῳ γένηται τῷ νοητῷ.
 Ἄλλ' ἡ μὲν περιμενέτω, περὶ δὲ τῆς ἀναγωγῆς
 πρότερον πειρατέον λέγειν. Πρῶτον δὲ διασταλ-

¹The quotation is from *Phaedrus* 248D1-4 (slightly adapted). "All or most things" refers to the Forms, seen by the soul in its heavenly journeying before birth.

I. 3. ON DIALECTIC

1. What art is there, what method or practice, which will take us up there where we must go? Where that is, that it is to the Good, the First Principle, we can take as agreed and established by many demonstrations; and the demonstrations themselves were a kind of leading up on our way. But what sort of person should the man be who is to be led on this upward path? Surely one who has seen all or, as Plato says, "who has seen most things, and in the first birth enters into a human child who is going to be a philosopher, a musician or a lover."¹ The philosopher goes the upward way by nature, the musician and the lover must be led by it. What then is the method of guidance? Is it one and the same for all these, or is there a different one for each? There are two stages of the journey for all, one when they are going up and one when they have arrived above. The first leads from the regions below, the second is for those who are already in the intelligible realm and have gained their footing. There, but must still travel till they reach the furthest point of the region; that is the "end of the journey,"² when you reach the top of the intelligible. But that can wait. Let us first of all try to speak about the ascent.

²From the description of dialectic in *Republic* VII (532E3). The "end of the journey" is the vision of the Good.

20 τέον τοὺς ἀνδρας τούτους ἡμῖν ἀρξάμενους ἀπὸ
 τοῦ μουσικοῦ ὅστις ἐστὶ λέγοντας τὴν φύσιν.
 Θετέον δὴ αὐτὸν εὐκίνητον καὶ ἐπτοημένον μὲν
 πρὸς τὸ καλόν, ἀδυνατώτερον δὲ παρ' αὐτοῦ
 κινεῖσθαι, ἔτοιμον δὲ ἐκ τῶν τυχόντων οἶον
 ἐκτύπων, ὥσπερ οἱ δειλοὶ πρὸς τοὺς ψόφους,
 25 οὕτω καὶ τοῦτον πρὸς τοὺς φθόγγους καὶ τὸ
 καλὸν τὸ ἐν τούτοις ἔτοιμον, φεύγοντα δὲ αἰεὶ τὸ
 ἀνάρμυστον καὶ τὸ μὴ ἐν ἐν τοῖς ἀδομένοις καὶ ἐν
 τοῖς ῥυθμοῖς καὶ τὸ εὐρυθμον καὶ τὸ εὐσχημον
 διώκειν. Μετὰ τοίνυν τοὺς αἰσθητοὺς τούτους
 φθόγγους καὶ ῥυθμούς καὶ σχήματα οὕτως ἀκτέον·
 30 χωρίζοντα τὴν ὕλην ἐφ' ἧν αἱ ἀναλογίαι καὶ οἱ
 λόγοι εἰς τὸ κάλλος τὸ ἐπ' αὐτοῖς ἀκτέον καὶ
 διδακτέον, ὡς περὶ ἃ ἐπτόητο ἐκεῖνα ἦν, ἡ νοητὴ
 ἀρμονία καὶ τὸ ἐν ταύτῃ καλὸν καὶ ὅλως τὸ καλόν,
 οὐ τό τι καλὸν μόνον, καὶ λόγους τοὺς φιλοσοφίας
 ἐνθετέον· ἀφ' ἧν εἰς πύτυν ἀκτέον ἧν ἀγνοεῖ
 35 ἔχων. Τίνες δὲ οἱ λόγοι, ὕστερον.

2. Ὁ δὲ ἐρωτικός, εἰς ὃν μεταπέσοι ἂν καὶ ὁ
 μουσικὸς καὶ μεταπεσὼν ἢ μένοι ἂν ἢ παρέλθοι,
 μνημονικός ἐστὶ πως κάλλους· χωρὶς δὲ ὃν
 ἀδυνατεῖ καταμαθεῖν, πληττόμενος δὲ ὑπὸ τῶν
 5 ἐν ὄψει καλῶν περὶ αὐτὰ ἐπτόηται. Διδακτέον
 οὖν αὐτὸν μὴ περὶ ἐν σώμα πεσύντα ἐπτοῆσθαι,
 ἀλλ' ἐπὶ πάντα ἀκτέον τῷ λόγῳ σώματα δεικνύοντα
 τὸ ἐν πάσι ταῦτόν καὶ ὅτι ἕτερον τῶν σωμάτων

First of all we must distinguish the characteristics of these men: we will begin by describing the nature of the musician. We must consider him as easily moved and excited by beauty, but not quite capable of being moved by absolute beauty; he is however quick to respond to its images when he comes upon them, and just as nervous people react readily to noises, so does he to articulate sounds and the beauty in them; and he always avoids what is inharmonious and not a unity in songs and verses and seeks eagerly after what is rhythmical and shapely. So in leading him on, these sounds and rhythms and forms perceived by the senses must be made the starting-point. He must be led and taught to make abstraction of the material element in them and come to the principles from which their proportions and ordering forces derive and to the beauty which is in these principles, and learn that this was what excited him, the intelligible harmony and the beauty in it, and beauty universal, not just some particular beauty, and he must have the doctrines of philosophy implanted in him; by these he must be brought to firm confidence in what he possesses without knowing it. We shall explain later what these doctrines are.

2. The lover (into whom the musician may turn, and then either stay at that stage or go on farther) has a kind of memory of beauty. But he cannot grasp it in its separateness, but he is overwhelmingly amazed and excited by visible beauties. So he must be taught not to cling round one body and be excited by that, but must be led by the course of reasoning to consider all bodies and shown the beauty that is the same in all of them, and that it is something

καὶ ὅτι ἄλλοθεν λεκτέον καὶ ὅτι ἐν ἄλλοις μᾶλλον,
οἷον ἐπιτηδεύματα καλὰ καὶ νόμους καλοὺς
10 δεικνύντα—ἐν ἀσωμάτοις γὰρ ὁ ἔθισμός τοῦ
ἐρασμίου ἤδη—καὶ ὅτι καὶ ἐν τέχναις καὶ ἐν
ἐπιστήμασι καὶ ἐν ἀρεταῖς. Εἶτα ἐν ποιητέον
καὶ διδακτέον, ὅπως ἐγγίνονται. Ἀπὸ δὲ τῶν
ἀρετῶν ἤδη ἀναβαίνειν ἐπὶ νοῦν, ἐπὶ τὸ ὄν· κακεῖ
βαδιστέον τὴν ἄνω πορείαν.

3. Ὁ δὲ φιλόσοφος τὴν φύσιν ἔτοιμος οὗτος
καὶ οἷον ἐπερωμένος καὶ οὐ δεόμενος χωρίσεως,
ὥσπερ οἱ ἄλλοι οὗτοι, κεκνημένος τὸ ἄνω,
ἀπορῶν δὲ τοῦ δεικνύοντος δείται μόνον. Δεικνύον
5 οὖν καὶ λυτέον βουλόμενον καὶ αὐτὸν τῇ φύσει καὶ
πάσαις λελυμένον. Τὰ μὲν δὴ μαθήματα δοτέον
πρὸς συνεισμὸν κατανοήσεως καὶ πίστεως ἀσω-
μάτου—καὶ γὰρ ῥᾶδιον δέξεται φιλομαθῆς ὢν—
καὶ φύσει ἐνάρετον πρὸς τελείωσιν ἀρετῶν ἀκτέον
καὶ μετὰ τὰ μαθήματα λόγους διαλεκτικῆς δοτέον
10 καὶ ὅλως διαλεκτικὸν ποιητέον.

4. Τίς δὲ ἡ διαλεκτικὴ, ἣν δεῖ καὶ τοῖς προτέροις
παραδιδόναι; Ἔστι μὲν δὴ ἡ λόγῳ περὶ ἐκάστου
δυναμένη ἕξις εἰπεῖν τί τε ἕκαστον καὶ τί ἄλλων
διαφέρει καὶ τίς ἡ κοινότης ἐν οἷς ἐστι καὶ ποῦ
5 τούτων ἕκαστον καὶ εἰ ἔστιν ὃ ἔστι καὶ τὰ ὄντι

¹ This is the ascent of the mind to the vision of Absolute Beauty in the *Symposium* 210A ff.

² The perfect soul is winged in the *Phaedrus* myth (246C1).

³ The description of dialectic which follows is entirely in Platonic terms, and there seems no need to assume any Stoic influence, as Bréhier does. The principal passages from Plato which Plotinus is using are the descriptions of dialectic in

other than the bodies and must be said to come from elsewhere, and that it is better manifested in other things, by showing him, for instance, the beauty of ways of life and laws—this will accustom him to loveliness in things which are not bodies—and that there is beauty in arts and sciences and virtues.¹ Then all these beauties must be reduced to unity, and he must be shown their origin. But from virtues he can at once ascend to intellect, to being; and There he must go the higher way.

3. But the philosopher—he is the one who is by nature ready to respond and “winged,”² we may say, and in no need of separation like the others. He has begun to move to the higher world, and is only at a loss for someone to show him the way. So he must be shown and set free, with his own good will, he who has long been free by nature. He must be given mathematical studies to train him in philosophical thought and accustom him to firm confidence in the existence of the immaterial—he will take to them easily, being naturally disposed to learning; he is by nature virtuous, and must be brought to perfect his virtues, and after his mathematical studies instructed in dialectic, and made a complete dialectician.

4. What then is dialectic, which the former kinds of men as well as philosophers must be given?³ It is the science which can speak about everything in a reasoned and orderly way, and say what it is and how it differs from other things and what it has in common with those among which it is and

Republic 531C–535A and *Sophist* 253C–D (with the long discussion which follows) and of the method of division in *Phaedrus* 265D–266A.

ὅποσα καὶ τὰ μὴ ὄντα αὐτῶν, ἕτερα δὲ ὄντων. Αὕτη
καὶ περὶ ἀγαθοῦ διαλέγεται καὶ περὶ μὴ ἀγαθοῦ
καὶ ὅσα ὑπὸ τὸ ἀγαθὸν καὶ ὅσα ὑπὸ τὸ ἐναντίον
καὶ τί τὸ αἰδιον δηλονότι καὶ τὸ μὴ τοιοῦτον,
ἐπιστήμη περὶ πάντων, οὐ δόξη. Παύσασα δὲ τῆς
10 περὶ τὸ αἰσθητὸν πλάνης ἐνιδρύει τῷ νοητῷ κάκει
τὴν πραγματείαν ἔχει τὸ ψεῦδος ἀφείσα ἐν τῷ
λεγομένῳ ἀληθείας πεδίῳ τὴν ψυχὴν τρέφουσα,
τῇ διαιρέσει τῇ Πλάτωνος χρωμένη μὲν καὶ εἰς
διάκρισιν τῶν εἰδῶν, χρωμένη δὲ καὶ εἰς τὸ τί
ἔστι, χρωμένη δὲ καὶ ἐπὶ τὰ πρῶτα γένη, καὶ τὰ
15 ἐκ τούτων νοερώς πλέκουσα, ἕως ἂν διέλθῃ πᾶν
τὸ νοητόν, καὶ ἀνάπαλιν ἀναλύουσα, εἰς ὃ ἂν ἐπ'
ἀρχὴν ἔλθῃ, τότε δὲ ἡσυχίαν ἄγουσα, ὡς μέχρι γε
τοῦ ἐκεῖ εἶναι ἐν ἡσυχίᾳ οὐδὲν ἔτι πολυπραγμονοῦσα
εἰς ἐν γενομένη βλέπει, τὴν λεγομένην λογικὴν
πραγματείαν περὶ προτάσεως καὶ συλλογισμῶν,
20 ὥσπερ ἂν τὸ εἰδέναι γράφειν, ἄλλη τέχνη δοῦσα
ὦν τινα ἀναγκαῖα καὶ πρὸ τέχνης ἡγουμένη,
κρίνουσα δὲ αὐτὰ ὥσπερ καὶ τὰ ἄλλα καὶ τὰ μὲν
χρήσιμα αὐτῶν, τὰ δὲ περιττὰ ἡγουμένη καὶ
μεθόδου τῆς ταῦτα βουλομένης.

5. Ἀλλὰ πόθεν τὰς ἀρχὰς ἔχει ἡ ἐπιστήμη
αὕτη; Ἡ νοῦς δίδωσιν ἐναργεῖς ἀρχάς, εἴ τις
λαβεῖν δύναται ψυχῇ εἶτα τὰ ἐξῆς καὶ συντίθησι

¹ The symbolic place of the Forms in *Phaedrus* 248B6, where the soul finds its true food.

² Plotinus speaks of logic here and in ch. 5 in very general terms, which apply both to Aristotelian and Stoic logic. The essential difference for him between logic and dialectic is that logic deals with words and sentences and their relationships, but dialectic discerns the relationships between

where each of these stands, and if it really is what it is, and how many really existing things there are, and again how many non-existing things, different from real beings. It discusses good and not good, and the things that are classed under good and its opposite, and what is the eternal and what not eternal, with certain knowledge about everything and not mere opinion. It stops wandering about the world of sense and settles down in the world of intellect, and there it occupies itself, casting off falsehood and feeding the soul in what Plato calls "the plain of truth,"¹ using his method of division to distinguish the Forms, and to determine the essential nature of each thing, and to find the primary kinds, and weaving together by the intellect all that issues from these primary kinds, till it has traversed the whole intelligible world; then it resolves again the structure of that world into its parts, and comes back to its starting-point; and then, keeping quiet (for it is quiet in so far as it is present There) it busies itself no more, but contemplates, having arrived at unity. It leaves what is called logical activity, about propositions and syllogisms, to another art, as it might leave knowing how to write. Some of the matter of logic it considers necessary, as a preliminary, but it makes itself the judge of this, as of everything else, and considers some of it useful and some superfluous, and belonging to the discipline which wants it.²

5. But from where does this science derive its principles? Intellect gives clear principles to any soul which can receive them: and then it combines

things, the only true realities, the Forms, with which the mind of the dialectician is in immediate contact.

καὶ συμπλέκει καὶ διαιρεῖ, ἕως εἰς τέλος νοῦν
 5 ἤκη. Ἔστι γάρ, φησιν, αὕτη τὸ καθαρώτατον
 νοῦ καὶ φρονήσεως. Ἀνάγκη οὖν τιμωτάτην
 οὔσαν ἕξιν τῶν ἐν ἡμῖν περὶ τὸ ὄν καὶ τὸ τιμωτάτον
 εἶναι, φρόνησιν μὲν περὶ τὸ ὄν, νοῦν δὲ περὶ τὸ
 ἐπέκεινα τοῦ ὄντος. Τί οὖν; ἢ φιλοσοφία τὸ
 τιμωτάτον; ἢ ταῦτόν φιλοσοφία καὶ διαλεκτική;
 Ἡ φιλοσοφίας μέρος τὸ τίμιον. Οὐ γὰρ δὴ
 10 οἰητέον ὄργανον τοῦτο εἶναι τοῦ φιλοσόφου· οὐ
 γὰρ ψιλὰ θεωρήματά ἐστι καὶ κανόνες, ἀλλὰ περὶ
 πράγματά ἐστι καὶ οἶον ὕλην ἔχει τὰ ὄντα· ὁδῶ
 μέντοι ἐπ' αὐτὰ χωρεῖ ἅμα τοῖς θεωρήμασι τὰ
 πράγματα ἔχουσα· τὸ δὲ ψεῦδος καὶ τὸ σόφισμα
 15 κατὰ συμβεβηκὸς γινώσκει ἄλλου ποιήσαντος ὡς
 ἀλλότριον κρίνουσα τοῖς ἐν αὐτῇ ἀληθείαι τὸ
 ψεῦδος, γινώσκουσα, ὅταν τις προσαγάγῃ, ὃ τι
 παρὰ τὸν κανόνα τοῦ ἀληθοῦς. Περὶ προτάσεως
 οὖν οὐκ οἶδε—καὶ γὰρ γράμματα—εἰδυῖα δὲ τὸ
 ἀληθὲς οἶδεν ὃ καλοῦσι πρότασιν, καὶ καθόλου
 20 οἶδε τὰ κινήματα τῆς ψυχῆς, ὃ τε τίθησι καὶ ὃ
 αἶρει, καὶ εἰ τοῦτο αἶρει ὃ τίθησιν ἢ ἄλλο, καὶ εἰ
 ἕτερα ἢ ταῦτά, προσφερομένων ὡσπερ καὶ ἡ
 αἴσθησις ἐπιβάλλουσα, ἀκριβολογεῖσθαι δὲ ἕτερα
 δίδωσι τοῦτο ἀγαπώση.

6. Μέρος οὖν τὸ τίμιον· ἔχει γὰρ καὶ ἄλλα φιλο-
 σοφία· καὶ γὰρ καὶ περὶ φύσεως θεωρεῖ βοήθειαν

¹ *Philebus* 58D6-7.

and interweaves and distinguishes their consequences, till it arrives at perfect intelligencce. For, Plato says, dialectic is "the purest part of intelligence and wisdom."¹ So, since it is the most valuable of our mental abilities, it must be concerned with real being and what is most valuable; as wisdom it is concerned with real being, as intelligence with That which is beyond being. But surely philosophy is the most valuable thing? Are dialectic and philosophy the same? It is the valuable part of philosophy. For it must not be thought to be a tool the philosopher uses. It is not just bare theories and rules; it deals with things and has real beings as a kind of material for its activity; it approaches them methodically and possesses real things along with its theories. It knows falsehood and sophism incidentally, as another's product, and judges falsehood as something alien to the truths in itself, recognising, when anyone brings it forward, something contrary to the rule of truth. So it does not know about propositions—they are just letters—but in knowing the truth it knows what they call propositions, and in general it knows the movements of the soul, what it affirms and what it denies, and whether it affirms the same thing as it denies or something else, and if things are different from each other or the same; whatever is submitted to it it perceives by directing intuition, as sense-perception also does, but it hands over petty precisions of speech to another discipline which finds satisfaction in them.

6. So dialectic is the valuable part. Philosophy has other parts; it also surveys the nature of the physical world with assistance from dialectic, as the

παρὰ διαλεκτικῆς λαβοῦσα, ὡσπερ καὶ ἀριθμητικῆ
 προσχρῶνται αἱ ἄλλαι τέχναι· μᾶλλον μέντοι
 5 αὕτη ἐγγύθεν κομίζεται παρὰ τῆς διαλεκτικῆς·
 καὶ περὶ ἡθῶν ὡσαύτως θεωροῦσα μὲν ἐκείθεν,
 προστιθεῖσα δὲ τὰς ἕξεις καὶ τὰς ἀσκήσεις, ἐξ ὧν
 προίασιν αἱ ἕξεις. Ἰσχοῦσι δὲ αἱ λογικαὶ ἕξεις
 καὶ ὡς ἴδια ἤδη τὰ ἐκείθεν· καὶ γὰρ μετὰ τῆς
 ὕλης τὰ πλείστα· καὶ αἱ μὲν ἄλλαι ἀρεταὶ τοῖς
 10 λογισμοῦς ἐν τοῖς πάθεσι τοῖς ἰδίοις καὶ ταῖς
 πράξεσιν, ἡ δὲ φρόνησις ἐπιλογισμὸς τις καὶ τὸ
 καθόλου μᾶλλον καὶ εἰ ἀντακολουθοῦσι καὶ εἰ δεῖ
 νῦν ἐπισχεῖν ἢ εἰσαυθῖς ἢ ὄλως ἄλλο βέλτιον· ἡ
 δὲ διαλεκτικὴ καὶ ἡ σοφία ἔτι καθόλου καὶ ἀύλως
 πάντα εἰς χρῆσιν προφέρει τῇ φρονήσει. Πότερα
 15 δὲ ἔστι τὰ κάτω εἶναι ἀνευ διαλεκτικῆς καὶ
 σοφίας; Ἡ ἀτελῶς καὶ ἐλλειπόντως. Ἔστι δὲ
 σοφὸν εἶναι καὶ διαλεκτικὸν οὕτως ἀνευ τούτων;
 Ἡ οὐδ' ἂν γένοιτο, ἀλλὰ ἡ πρότερον ἢ ἅμα
 συναύξεται. Καὶ τάχα ἂν φυσικὰς τις ἀρετὰς
 ἔχοι, ἐξ ὧν αἱ τέλειαι σοφίας γενομένης. Μετὰ
 20 τὰς φυσικὰς οἶν ἡ σοφία· εἶτα τελειοὶ τὰ ἦθη.

¹ The idea of the dependence of the other skills on arithmetic comes from *Republic* VII. 522C 1-6. Plotinus is here claiming for dialectic the same position in relation to natural and moral philosophy as the Stoics claimed for logic (cp.

other skills use arithmetic to help them;¹ though natural philosophy stands closer to dialectic in its borrowing: in the same way moral philosophy derives from dialectic on its contemplative side, but adds the virtuous dispositions and the exercises which produce them. The intellectual virtues have principles from dialectic almost as their proper possession; although they are with matter most of their principles came from that higher realm.² The other virtues apply reasoning to particular experiences and actions, but practical wisdom is a kind of superior reasoning concerned more with the universal; it considers questions of mutual implication, and whether to refrain from action, now or later, or whether an entirely different course would be better. Dialectic and theoretical wisdom provide everything for practical wisdom to use, in a universal and immaterial form.

Can the lower kinds of virtue exist without dialectic and theoretical wisdom? Yes, but only incompletely and defectively. And can one be a wise man and a dialectician without these lower virtues? It would not happen; they must either precede or grow along with wisdom. One might perhaps have natural virtues, from which the perfect ones develop with the coming of wisdom. So wisdom comes after the natural virtue, and then perfects the character; or rather when the natural virtues exist both increase and come to perfection together: as

Diogenes Laertius VII. 83), with the essential differences due to the distinction referred to in the note on ch. 4.

² Following Bréhier, Cilento, and Schwyzer, I take *καὶ* here as concessive and *τὰ πλείστα* as accusative with *ἰσχοῦσι*: the intellectual virtues operate in the material world with principles mainly derived from the intelligible world.

PLOTINUS: ENNEAD I. 3.

Ἡ τῶν φυσικῶν οὐσῶν συναύξεται ἤδη ἄμφω
καὶ συντελειούται· ἢ προλαβοῦσα ἢ ἑτέρα τὴν
ἑτέραν ἐτελείωσεν· ὅλως γὰρ ἡ φυσικὴ ἀρετὴ
καὶ ὄμμα ἀτελές καὶ ἦθος ἔχει, καὶ αἱ ἀρχαὶ τὸ
πλείστον ἀμφοτέραις, ἀφ' ὧν ἔχομεν.

ON DIALECTIC

the one progresses it perfects the other; for in
general natural virtue is imperfect both in vision and
character, and the principles from which we derive
them are the most important thing both in natural
virtue and wisdom.

I. 4. ON WELL-BEING

Introductory Note

THIS is a late treatise (No. 46 in the chronological order), written towards the end of Plotinus's life. It is concerned with what was always, and more than ever in his last years, his chief preoccupation, the practical and most urgent question of how we are to live well and attain our true good. The first four chapters are devoted to an establishment of his fundamental position, that the good life is the life of Intellect, independent of all outward circumstances and material and emotional satisfactions of our lower nature, by a critical examination of Aristotelian and Stoic views. The rest of the treatise is a sermon on true well-being; this is very much in the manner of, and deals with the usual themes of, the Stoic-Cynic diatribe: but there are important differences even here between the thought of Plotinus and that of the Stoics due to his different conception of man as a double being, not a single and simple one.

Synopsis

If the good life is simply a matter of successfully performing one's proper functions and attaining one's natural end, as Aristotle thinks, one cannot deny it to other living things, plants included (ch. 1). The Epicurean attempt to make the good life consist in a feeling of pleasure or tranquillity, a particular kind of conscious experience, also breaks down on examination (ch. 2). The Stoic position, that the good life is the life of reason, is nearer the truth, but their doctrine of "primary natural needs" confuses the issue (ch. 2). The good life, the true human good, can only be the highest and most perfect kind of

ON WELL-BEING

life, that of the Intellect (which depends on the Absolute Good as its cause) (ch. 3). And a man to attain perfection must not only *have* Intellect but *be* Intellect, and so perfectly virtuous; and if he is this he has all he needs for well-being (ch. 4). His well-being will be unaffected by pain, sickness and even the greatest misfortune (chs. 5-8): it will be even independent of consciousness, which is something secondary, the reflection of the life of Intellect on the level of the body-soul composite (chs. 9-10). Outward circumstances and bodily goods will add nothing to his well-being, and if he has too much of them may even detract from it; but he will recognise a responsibility to his body and give it what it really needs (chs. 11-16).

I. 4. (46) ΠΕΡΙ ΕΥΔΑΙΜΟΝΙΑΣ

1. Τὸ εὖ ζῆν καὶ τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν ἐν τῷ αὐτῷ
 τιθέμενοι καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις ζῷοις ἄρα τούτων μετα-
 δώσομεν; Εἰ γὰρ ἔστιν αὐτοῖς ἢ πεφύκασιν
 ἀνεμπόδιστως διεξάγειν, κακείνα τί κωλύει ἐν
 5 εὐζωίᾳ λέγειν εἶναι; Καὶ γὰρ εἴτε ἐν εὐπαθείᾳ
 τὴν εὐζωίαν τις θήσεται, εἴτε ἐν ἔργῳ οἰκείῳ
 τελειουμένῳ, κατ' ἄμφω καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις ζῷοις
 ὑπάρξει. Καὶ γὰρ εὐπαθεῖν ἐνδέχοιτο ἂν καὶ ἐν
 τῷ κατὰ φύσιν ἔργῳ εἶναι· οἷον καὶ τὰ μουσικὰ
 τῶν ζῷων ὅσα τοῖς τε ἄλλοις εὐπαθεῖ καὶ δὴ καὶ
 10 ἄδοντα ἢ πέφυκε καὶ ταύτῃ αἰρετὴν αὐτοῖς τὴν
 ζωὴν ἔχει. Καὶ τοίνυν καὶ εἰ τέλος τι τὸ εὐδαιμο-
 νεῖν τιθέμεθα, ὅπερ ἔστιν ἔσχατον τῆς ἐν φύσει
 ὀρέξεως, καὶ ταύτῃ ἂν αὐτοῖς μεταδοίημεν τοῦ
 εὐδαιμονεῖν εἰς ἔσχατον ἀφικνουμένων, εἰς ὃ
 15 ἐλθοῦσιν ἴσταται ἢ ἐν αὐτοῖς φύσις πᾶσαν ζωὴν
 αὐτοῖς διεξεληθούσα καὶ πληρώσασα ἐξ ἀρχῆς
 τέλος. Εἰ δέ τις δυσχεραίνει τὸ τῆς εὐδαιμονίας

¹ I translate *εὐδαιμονία* and kindred words by "well-being," "being well off" because this kind of expression, though inadequate, is at least less misleading than the common translation "happiness." Happiness, as we normally use the word, means *feeling* good; but *εὐδαιμονία* means *being* in a good state; and Plotinus devotes a great part of this treatise to showing that one can be *εὐδαίμων* if one has no

I. 4. ON WELL-BEING¹

1. Suppose we assume the good life and well-being to be one and the same;² shall we then have to allow a share in them to other living things as well as ourselves? If they can live in the way natural to them without impediment,³ what prevents us from saying that they too are in a good state of life? For whether one considers the good life as consisting in satisfactory experience or accomplishing one's proper work, in either case it will belong to the other living things as well as us. For they can have satisfactory experiences and be engaged in their natural work; musical creatures, for instance, which are otherwise well off and sing in their natural way as well, and so have the life they want. Then again, suppose we make well-being an end,⁴ that is, the ultimate term of natural desire; we shall still have to allow other living things a share in well-being when they reach their final state, that where, when they come to it, the nature in them rests, since it has passed through their whole life and fulfilled it from beginning to end. But if anyone dislikes the idea of extending some degree of well-being down to the other

happy emotions and even if one is completely unconscious of one's *εὐδαιμονία*.

² This is Aristotle's position; cp. *Nicomachean Ethics* I. 8 1098b. 21.

³ Cp. *N.E.* VII. 14. 1153b. 11.

⁴ Cp. *N.E.* X. 16. 1176a. 31.

καταφέρειν εἰς τὰ ζῶα τὰ ἄλλα—οὕτω γὰρ ἂν
καὶ τοῖς ἀτιμοτάτοις αὐτῶν μεταδώσειν· μεταδώ-
σειν δὲ καὶ τοῖς φυτοῖς ζῶσι καὶ αὐτοῖς καὶ ζωὴν
ἐξελιττομένην εἰς τέλος ἔχουσι—πρῶτον μὲν ἄτοπος
20 διὰ τί εἶναι οὐ δόξει μὴ ζῆν εἰ τὰ ἄλλα ζῶα λέγων,
ὅτι μὴ πολλοῦ ἄξια αὐτῷ δοκεῖ εἶναι; Τοῖς δὲ
φυτοῖς οὐκ ἀναγκάζοιτο ἂν δίδοναι ὁ τοῖς ἅπασιν
ζῶοις δίδωσι, ὅτι μὴ αἰσθησις πάρεστιν αὐτοῖς.
Εἴη δ' ἂν τις ἴσως καὶ ὁ δίδους τοῖς φυτοῖς,
25 εἴπερ καὶ τὸ ζῆν· ζωὴ δὲ ἢ μὲν εὖ ἂν εἴη, ἢ δὲ
τοῦναντίον· οἷον ἔστι καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν φυτῶν εὐπαθεῖν
καὶ μὴ, καρπὸν αὖ φέρειν καὶ μὴ φέρειν. Εἰ μὲν
οὖν ἡδονὴ τὸ τέλος καὶ ἐν τούτῳ τὸ εὖ ζῆν, ἄτοπος
ὁ ἀφαιρούμενος τὰ ἄλλα ζῶα τὸ εὖ ζῆν· καὶ εἰ
ἀταραξία δὲ εἴη, ὡσαύτως· καὶ εἰ τὸ κατὰ φύσιν
30 ζῆν δὲ λέγοιτο τὸ εὖ ζῆν εἶναι.

2. Τοῖς μέντοι φυτοῖς διὰ τὸ μὴ αἰσθάνεσθαι οὐ
διδόντες κινδυνεύουσιν οὐδὲ ζῶοις ἤδη ἅπασιν
διδόναι. Εἰ μὲν γὰρ τὸ αἰσθάνεσθαι τοῦτο λέγουσι,
τὸ τὸ πάθος μὴ λανθάνειν, δεῖ αὐτὸ ἀγαθὸν εἶναι
5 τὸ πάθος πρὸ τοῦ μὴ λανθάνειν, οἷον τὸ κατὰ
φύσιν ἔχειν, κἂν λανθάνη, καὶ οὐκ εἶναι, κἂν
μήπω γνώσκῃ ὅτι οὐκ εἶναι καὶ ὅτι ἡδύ· δεῖ γὰρ
ἡδὺ εἶναι. Ὡστε ἀγαθοῦ τούτου ὄντος καὶ παρόν-

¹ Both Hedonists and Epicureans maintained this, in different senses; but as Epicurus is clearly alluded to in the next sentence, this is probably meant to be a reference to the Hedonists only; cp. Aristippus in Diog. Laert. II 88.

² ἀταραξία, the untroubled peace of mind which was the Epicurean ideal.

living things—which would involve giving a share in it even to the meanest; one would have to give a share to plants, because they too are alive and have a life which unfolds to its end—first of all, why will it not seem absurd of him to deny that other living things live well just because he does not think them important? Then, one is not compelled to allow to plants what one allows to all other living beings; for plants have no sensations. But there might perhaps be someone who would allow well-being to plants just because they have life; one life can be good, another the opposite, as plants too can be well or badly off, and bear fruit or not bear fruit. If pleasure is the end¹ and the good life is determined by pleasure, it is absurd of anyone to deny the good life to other living things; the same applies to tranquillity,² and also if the life according to nature is stated to be the good life.

2. Those who deny it to plants because they have no sensation³ run the risk of denying it to all living things. For if they mean by sensation being aware of one's experiences, the experience must be good before one is aware of it; for example, to be in a natural state is good, even if one is not aware of it, and so is to be in one's own proper state, even if one does not yet know that it is one's own proper state, and that it is pleasant (as it must necessarily be).

³ As Aristotle did; in *N.E.* X. 8 1178b. 28 he denies it to all living beings except man because they have no share in *θεωρία*. Plotinus criticises Aristotle because, though he regards *εὐδαιμονία* as something disinctively human, he often defines it in terms which must necessarily apply to all living things. Both Aristotle and Plotinus place *εὐδαιμονία* in the life of the intellect, though they conceive that life in very different ways.

τος ἤδη ἐστὶν ἐν τῷ εἶ τοῦ ἔχον. " Ὡστε τί δεῖ τὴν
 αἰσθησὶν προσλαμβάνειν, εἰ μὴ ἄρα οὐκ ἐν τῷ
 10 γινόμενῳ πάθει [ἢ καταστάσει] τὸ ἀγαθὸν διδόναι,
 ἀλλὰ τῇ γνώσει καὶ αἰσθήσει; Ἄλλ' οὕτω γε τὴν
 αἰσθησὶν αὐτὴν τὸ ἀγαθὸν ἐροῦσι καὶ ἐνέργειαν
 ζωῆς αἰσθητικῆς· ὥστε καὶ ὅπου οὐκ ἀντιλαμ-
 βανομένοις. Εἰ δὲ ἐξ ἀμφοῖν τὸ ἀγαθὸν λέγουσιν,
 οἷον αἰσθήσεως τοιούτου, πῶς ἑκατέρου ἀδιαφόρου
 15 ὄντος τὸ ἐξ ἀμφοῖν ἀγαθὸν εἶναι λέγουσιν; Εἰ δὲ
 ἀγαθὸν μὲν τὸ πάθος, καὶ τὴν τοιάνδε κατάστασιν
 τὸ εἶ ζῆν, ὅταν γινῶ τις τὸ ἀγαθὸν αὐτῷ παρὸν,
 ἐρωτητέον αὐτοῦ, εἰ γνοὺς τὸ παρὸν δὴ τοῦτο ὅτι
 πάρεστιν εἶ ζῆν, ἢ δεῖ γινῶναι οὐ μόνον ὅτι ἡδύ,
 ἀλλ' ὅτι τοῦτο τὸ ἀγαθόν. Ἄλλ' εἰ ὅτι τοῦτο τὸ
 20 ἀγαθόν, οὐκ αἰσθήσεως τοῦτο ἔργον ἦδη, ἀλλ'
 ἐτέρας μείζονος ἢ κατ' αἰσθησὶν δυνάμεως. Οὐ
 τοίνυν τοῖς ἡδομένοις τὸ εἶ ζῆν ὑπάρξει, ἀλλὰ
 τῷ γινώσκειν δυναμένῳ, ὅτι ἡδονὴ τὸ ἀγαθόν.
 Αἴτιον δὲ τοῦ εἶ ζῆν οὐχ ἡδονὴ ἐστίν, ἀλλὰ τὸ
 25 κρίνειν δυνάμενον, ὅτι ἡδονὴ ἀγαθόν. Καὶ τὸ
 μὲν κρίνον βέλτιον ἢ κατὰ πάθος· λόγος γὰρ ἢ
 νοῦς· ἡδονὴ δὲ πάθος· οὐδαμοῦ δὲ κρείττον
 ἄλογον λόγου. Πῶς ἂν οὖν ὁ λόγος αὐτὸν ἀφεί-
 ῃ ἄλλο θήσεται ἐν τῷ ἐναντίῳ γένει κείμενον κρείτ-
 τον εἶναι ἑαυτοῦ; Ἄλλὰ γὰρ εἰκόσιν, ὅσοι τε
 τοῖς φυτοῖς οὐ διδόναι καὶ ὅσοι αἰσθήσει τοιαύ-
 30 τὸ εἶ, λαμβάνειν ἑαυτοῦς μείζον τι τὸ εἶ ζῆν

So if something is good and is there its possessor is
 already well off; so why should we bring sensation
 into it, unless of course people attribute good not to
 the actual experience but to the knowledge and
 perception of it? But in this way they will be saying
 that the good is really the sensation, the activity of
 the sense life; so that it will be all the same whatever
 is sensed. But if they say that the good is the
 product of the two, the sensation of an object of a
 particular kind, why, when each of the constituents
 is neutral, do they say that the product is good? But
 if it is the experience which is good, and the good life
 is the special state when someone knows that the
 good is present to him, we must ask them whether he
 lives well by knowing that this present thing is
 present or whether he must know not only that it
 gives him pleasure but that it is the good. But if he
 must know that it is the good, this is no longer the
 business of sensation but of another greater power
 than that of sense. So the good life will not belong
 to those who feel pleasure but to the man who is able
 to know that pleasure is the good. Then the cause of
 living well will not be pleasure, but the power of
 judging that pleasure is good. And that which
 judges is better than mere experience, for it is
 reason or intellect; but pleasure is an experience;
 and the irrational is never better than reason.
 How then can the reason set itself aside and
 assume that something else which has its place
 in the contrary kind is better than itself? It looks
 as if the people who deny well-being to plants, and
 those who place it in a particular kind of sensation,
 were unconsciously in search of a good life which is
 something higher, and were assuming that it is

ζητούντες καὶ ἐν τρανοτέρῃ ζωῇ τὸ ἄμεινον
 τίθεντες. Καὶ ὅσοι δὲ ἐν λογικῇ ζωῇ εἶναι
 λέγουσιν, ἀλλ' οὐχ ἀπλῶς ζωῇ, οὐδέ εἰ αἰσθητικῇ
 εἶη, καλῶς μὲν ἴσως ἂν λέγοιεν. Διὰ τί δὲ οὕτω
 καὶ περὶ τὸ λογικὸν ζῶον μόνον τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν
 35 τίθενται, ἐρωτᾶν αὐτοὺς προσήκει. Ἄρα γε τὸ
 λογικὸν προσλαμβάνετε, ὅτι εὐμήχανον μᾶλλον ὁ
 λόγος καὶ ῥαδίως ἀνιχνεύειν καὶ περιποιεῖν τὰ
 πρῶτα κατὰ φύσιν δύναται, ἢ κἂν μὴ δυνατὸς ἢ
 ἀνιχνεύειν μηδὲ τυγχάνειν; Ἄλλ' εἰ μὲν διὰ τὸ
 ἀνευρίσκειν μᾶλλον δύνασθαι, ἔσται καὶ τοῖς μὴ
 40 λόγον ἔχουσιν, εἰ ἄνευ λόγου φύσει τυγχάνοιεν
 τῶν πρῶτων κατὰ φύσιν, τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν καὶ
 ὑπουργὸς ἂν ὁ λόγος καὶ οὐ δι' αὐτὸν αἰρετὸς
 γίγνοιτο οὐδ' αὖ ἡ τελείωσις αὐτοῦ, ἣν φάμεν
 ἀρετὴν εἶναι. Εἰ δὲ φήσετε μὴ διὰ τὰ κατὰ φύσιν
 πρῶτα ἔχειν τὸ τίμιον, ἀλλὰ δι' αὐτὸν ἀσπαστὸν
 45 εἶναι, λεκτέον τί τε ἄλλο ἔργον αὐτοῦ καὶ τίς ἡ
 φύσις αὐτοῦ καὶ τί τέλειον αὐτὸν ποιεῖ. Ποιεῖν
 γὰρ δεῖ αὐτὸν τέλειον οὐ τὴν θεωρίαν τὴν περὶ
 ταῦτα, ἀλλὰ ἄλλο τι τὸ τέλειον αὐτῷ εἶναι καὶ
 φύσιν ἄλλην εἶναι αὐτῷ καὶ μὴ εἶναι αὐτὸν τούτων
 τῶν πρῶτων κατὰ φύσιν μηδὲ ἐξ ὧν τὰ πρῶτα
 50 κατὰ φύσιν μὴδ' ὅλως τούτου τοῦ γένους εἶναι,

¹ These are the Stoics. cp. Diog. Laert. VII. 130. The serious discussion of their position begins here (there has been a passing allusion to their teaching—"the life according to nature"—at the end of ch. 1). Plotinus in his criticism of the Stoics in this chapter fastens upon what was generally regarded by opponents of the school as the weakest point in their ethical theory, the difficulty of reconciling their insistence that the life of reason and virtue was the only real good

better the purer and clearer life is. Those who say that it is to be found in a rational life,¹ not simply in life, even life accompanied by sensation, may very likely be right; but we ought to ask them why they posit well-being only in the case of rational living things. "Do you add the 'rational' because reason is more efficient and can easily find out and procure the primary natural needs, or would you require reason even if it was not able to find them out or obtain them? If you require it because it is better able to find them out, then irrational creatures too, if by their nature they can satisfy the primary natural needs without reason, will have well-being; and then reason would be a servant and not worth having for itself, and the same would apply to its perfection, which we say is virtue. But if you say that reason has not its place of honour because of the primary natural needs, but is welcome for its own sake, you must tell us what other work it has and what is its nature and what makes it perfect." For it cannot be the study of these primary natural needs which perfects reason; its perfection is something else, and its nature is different, and it is not itself one of these primary natural needs or of the sources from which the primary natural needs derive; it does not belong to this class of beings at all, but is

for man with their doctrine of the importance of τὰ πρῶτα κατὰ φύσιν, the primary natural needs. For criticism of Stoic ethics on these lines cp. Cicero, *De Finibus*, Book IV, and Plutarch, *De Communibus Notitiis* (especially chs. 23 and 26). Plotinus however is closer to the Stoic position than its earlier critics; he agrees completely with them that external goods and natural advantages are indifferent, and that true well-being lies in the life of reason and virtue alone; but, he says, the Stoics cannot explain *why* this is so.

ἀλλὰ κρείττονα τούτων ἀπάντων· ἢ πῶς τὸ τίμιον
 αὐτῷ οὐκ οἶμαι ἕξειν αὐτοὺς λέγειν. Ἄλλ' οὐτοί
 μὲν, ἕως ἂν κρείττονα εὕρωσι φύσιν τῶν περὶ ἃ
 νῦν ἴστανται, ἐατέοι ἐνταυθοὶ εἶναι, ὡς περὶ μένειν
 55 ἐθέλουσι, ἀπόρως ἔχοντες ὅπῃ τὸ εὖ ζῆν, οἷς
 δυνατόν ἐστὶ τούτων.

3. Ἡμεῖς δὲ λέγωμεν ἐξ ἀρχῆς τί ποτε τὸ
 εὐδαιμονεῖν ὑπολαμβάνομεν εἶναι. Τιθέμενοι δὴ
 τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν ἐν ζωῇ, εἰ μὲν συνώνυμον τὸ ζῆν
 ἐπιούμεθα, πᾶσι μὲν ἂν τοῖς ζώσιν ἀπέδομεν
 5 δεκτικοῖς εὐδαιμονίας εἶναι, εὖ δὲ ζῆν ἐνεργεῖα
 ἐκεῖνα, οἷς παρῆν ἐν τι καὶ ταυτόν, οὐ ἐπεφύκει
 δεκτικὰ πάντα τὰ ζῶα εἶναι, καὶ οὐκ ἂν τῷ μὲν
 λογικῷ ἔδομεν δύνασθαι τοῦτο, τῷ δὲ ἀλόγῳ
 οὐκέτι· ζωὴ γὰρ ἦν τὸ κοινόν, ὃ δεκτικὸν τοῦ
 αὐτοῦ πρὸς τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν ἐμελλεν εἶναι, εἴπερ ἐν
 10 ζωῇ τι τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν ὑπῆρχεν. Ὅθεν, οἶμαι,
 καὶ οἱ ἐν λογικῇ ζωῇ λέγοντες τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν
 γίνεσθαι οὐκ ἐν τῇ κοινῇ ζωῇ τιθέντες ἠγνόησαν
 τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν οὐδὲ ζωὴν ὑποτιθέμενοι. Ποιότητα
 δὲ τὴν λογικὴν δύναμιν, περὶ ἣν ἡ εὐδαιμονία
 συνίσταται, ἀναγκάζοιτο ἂν λέγειν. Ἄλλὰ τὸ
 15 ὑποκείμενον αὐτοῖς λογικὴ ἐστὶ ζωὴ· περὶ γὰρ
 τὸ ὅλον τοῦτο ἡ εὐδαιμονία συνίσταται· ὥστε περὶ
 ἄλλο εἶδος ζωῆς. Λέγω δὲ οὐχ ὡς ἀντιδιηρημένον
 τῷ λόγῳ, ἀλλ' ὡς ἡμεῖς φάμεν πρότερον, τὸ δὲ
 ὕστερον εἶναι. Πολλαχῶς τούτων τῆς ζωῆς λεγο-

¹ Plotinus is distinguishing here between a simple classification, by dichotomy or genus and species, of the sort of which ἀντιδιηρηθῆναι is used by Aristotle (*Categories* 13. 14b33 ff.), and the recognition of a hierarchical order of reality,

better than all these; otherwise I do not think they would be able to explain its place of honour. But until these people find a better nature than the things at which they now stop, we must let them stay where they are, which is where they want to be, unable to answer the question how the good life is possible for the beings which are capable of it.

3. We, however, intend to state what we understand by well-being, beginning at the beginning. Suppose we assume that it is to be found in life; then if we make "life" a term which applies to all living things in exactly the same sense, we allow that all of them are capable of well-being, and that those of them actually live well who possess one and the same thing, something which all living beings are naturally capable of acquiring; we do not on this assumption grant the ability to live well to rational beings, but not to irrational. Life is common to both, and it is life which by the same acquisition [in both cases] tends towards well-being, if well-being is to be found in a kind of life. So I think that those who say that well-being is to be found in rational life are unaware that, since they do not place it in life in general, they are really assuming that it is not a life at all. They would have to say that the rational power on which well-being depends is a quality. But their starting-point is rational life. Well-being depends on this as a whole; that is, on another kind of life. I do not mean "another kind" in the sense of a logical distinction, but in the sense in which we Platonists speak of one thing as prior and another as posterior.¹ The term "life" is used in many

in which one kind of life is dependent on another higher kind and the image of it.

μένης και τήν διαφορὰν ἐχούσης κατὰ τὰ πρῶτα και
 20 δεύτερα και ἐφεξῆς και ὁμωνύμως τοῦ ζῆν
 λεγομένου ἄλλως μὲν τοῦ φυτοῦ, ἄλλως δὲ τοῦ
 ἀλόγου και τρανότητι και ἀμυδρότητι τήν διαφορὰν
 ἐχόντων, ἀνάλογον δηλονότι και τὸ εὖ. Καὶ εἰ
 εἶδωλον ἄλλο ἄλλου, δηλονότι και τὸ εὖ ὡς εἶδωλον
 αὐτοῦ τοῦ εὖ. Εἰ δὲ ὅτω ἄγαν ὑπάρχει τὸ ζῆν—
 25 τοῦτο δὲ ἐστὶν ὃ μηδενὶ τοῦ ζῆν ἐλλείπει—
 τὸ εὖ, μόνω ἂν τῷ ἄγαν ζῶντι τὸ εὐδαιμο-
 νεῖν ὑπάρχοι· τούτω γὰρ και τὸ ἄριστον, εἴπερ
 ἐν τοῖς οὖσι τὸ ἄριστον τὸ ὄντως ἐν ζωῇ και ἡ
 τέλειος ζωῇ· οὕτω γὰρ ἂν οὐδὲ ἐπακτὸν τὸ ἀγαθὸν
 ὑπάρχοι, οὐδ' ἄλλο τὸ ὑποκείμενον ἀλλαχόθεν
 30 γενόμενον παρέξει αὐτὸ ἐν ἀγαθῷ εἶναι. Τί γὰρ
 τῇ τελείᾳ ζωῇ ἂν προυγένειτο εἰς τὸ ἀρίστη
 εἶναι; Εἰ δὲ τις τήν τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ φύσιν ἐρεῖ,
 οἰκείος μὲν ὁ λόγος ἡμῖν, οὐ μὴν τὸ αἴτιον, ἀλλὰ
 τὸ ἐνυπάρχον ζητοῦμεν. Ὅτι δ' ἡ τελεία ζωῇ
 και ἡ ἀληθινῇ και ὄντως ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ νοερᾷ
 35 φύσει, και ὅτι αἱ ἄλλαι ἀτελεῖς και ἰνδάλματα
 ζωῆς και οὐ τελείως οὐδὲ καθαρῶς και οὐ μᾶλλον
 ζωαὶ ἢ τοῦναντίον, πολλάκις μὲν εἴρηται· και νῦν
 δὲ λελέχθω συντόμως ὡς, ἕως ἂν πάντα τὰ ζῶντα
 ἐκ μιᾶς ἀρχῆς ᾗ, μὴ ἐπίσης δὲ τὰ ἄλλα ζῆν,
 40 ἀνάγκη τήν ἀρχὴν τήν πρῶτην ζωὴν και τήν
 τελειοτάτην εἶναι.

4. Εἰ μὲν οὖν τήν τελείαν ζωὴν ἔχει οἷός τε
 ἄνθρωπος, και ἄνθρωπος ὁ ταύτην ἔχων τήν ζωὴν
 εὐδαίμων. Εἰ δὲ μή, ἐν θεοῖς ἂν τις τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν
 θεῖτο, εἰ ἐν ἐκείνοις μόνοις ἡ τοιαύτη ζωῇ. Ἐπειδὴ

different senses, distinguished according to the rank
 of the things to which it is applied, first, second and so
 on; and "living" means different things in different
 contexts; it is used in one way of plants, in another of
 irrational animals, in various ways of things distin-
 guished from each other by the clarity or dimness of
 their life; so obviously the same applies to "living
 well." And if one thing is an image of another,
 obviously its good life is the image of another good
 life. If then the good life belongs to what has a
 superabundance of life (this means what is in no way
 deficient in life), well-being will belong only to the
 being which lives superabundantly: this will have
 the best, if the best among realities is being really
 alive, is perfect life. So its good will not be some-
 thing brought in from outside, nor will the basis of its
 goodness come from somewhere else and bring it into
 a good state; for what could be added to the perfect
 life to make it into the best life? If anyone says
 "The Absolute Good," that is our own way of talk-
 ing, but at present we are not looking for the cause,
 but for the immanent element.

We have often said that the perfect life, the true,
 real life, is in that transcendent intelligible reality,
 and that other lives are incomplete, traces of life, not
 perfect or pure and no more life than its opposite. Let
 us put it shortly; as long as all living things proceed
 from a single origin, but have not life to the same
 degree as it, the origin must be the first and most
 perfect life.

4. If then man can have the perfect life, the man
 who has this life is well off. If not, one would have
 to attribute well-being to the gods, if among them
 alone this kind of life is to be found. But since we

5 τοῖνυν φαμέν εἶναι καὶ ἐν ἀνθρώποις τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν
 τοῦτο, σκεπτέον πῶς ἔστι τοῦτο. Λέγω δὲ ὡδε·
 ὅτι μὲν οὖν ἔχει τελείαν ζωὴν ἄνθρωπος οὐ τὴν
 αἰσθητικὴν μόνον ἔχων, ἀλλὰ καὶ λογισμὸν καὶ
 νοῦν ἀληθινόν, δῆλον καὶ ἐξ ἄλλων. Ἄλλ' ἀρά γε
 ὡς ἄλλος ὢν ἄλλο τοῦτο ἔχει; Ἡ οὐδ' ἐστὶν ὅλως
 10 ἄνθρωπος μὴ οὐ καὶ τοῦτο ἢ δυνάμει ἢ ἐνεργείᾳ
 ἔχων, ὃν δὴ καὶ φαμέν εὐδαίμονα εἶναι. Ἄλλ'
 ὡς μέρος αὐτοῦ τοῦτο φήσομεν ἐν αὐτῷ τὸ εἶδος
 τῆς ζωῆς τὸ τέλειον εἶναι; Ἡ τὸν μὲν ἄλλον
 ἄνθρωπον μέρος τι τοῦτο ἔχειν δυνάμει ἔχοντα,
 τὸν δὲ εὐδαίμονα ἤδη, ὃς δὴ καὶ ἐνεργείᾳ ἐστὶ
 15 τοῦτο καὶ μεταβέβηκε πρὸς τὸ αὐτό, εἶναι τοῦτο·
 περικεῖσθαι δ' αὐτῷ τὰ ἄλλα ἤδη, ἃ δὴ οὐδὲ μέρη
 αὐτοῦ ἂν τις θεῖτο οὐκ ἐθέλοντι περικείμενα· ἢ
 δ' ἂν αὐτοῦ κατὰ βούλησιν συνηρημένα. Τούτῳ
 τοῖνυν τί ποτ' ἐστὶ τὸ ἀγαθόν; Ἡ αὐτὸς αὐτῷ
 ὅπερ ἔχει· τὸ δὲ ἐπέκεινα αἴτιον τοῦ ἐν αὐτῷ καὶ
 20 ἄλλως ἀγαθόν, αὐτῷ παρὸν ἄλλως. Μαρτύριον
 δὲ τοῦ τοῦτο εἶναι τὸ μὴ ἄλλο ζητεῖν τὸν οὕτως
 ἔχοντα. Τί γὰρ ἂν καὶ ζητήσῃ; Τῶν μὲν γὰρ
 χειρόνων οὐδέν, τῷ δὲ ἀρίστῳ σύνεστιν. Αὐτάρκης
 οὖν ὁ βίος τῷ οὕτως ζωὴν ἔχοντι. Καὶ σπουδαῖος
 25 ἢ, αὐτάρκης εἰς εὐδαιμονίαν καὶ εἰς κτήσιν ἀγαθοῦ·
 οὐδὲν γὰρ ἐστὶν ἀγαθὸν ὃ μὴ ἔχει. Ἄλλ' ὃ ζητεῖ
 ὡς ἀναγκαῖον ζητεῖ, καὶ οὐχ αὐτῷ, ἀλλὰ τινι τῶν
 αὐτοῦ. Σώματι γὰρ προσηρημένῳ ζητεῖ· καὶ
 ζῶντι δὲ σώματι, τὰ αὐτοῦ ζῶντι τοῖσι, οὐχ ἃ
 τοιοῦτον τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἐστὶ. Καὶ γινώσκει ταῦτα
 30 καὶ δίδωσιν ἃ δίδωσιν οὐδὲν τῆς αὐτοῦ παραιρού-
 μενος ζωῆς. Οὐδ' ἐν τύχαις τοῖνυν ἐναντίαις

maintain that this well-being is to be found among men we must consider how it is so. What I mean is this; it is obvious from what has been said elsewhere that man has perfect life by having not only sense-life but reasoning and true intelligence. But is he different from this when he has it? No, he is not a man at all unless he has this, either potentially or actually (and if he has it actually we say that he is in a state of well-being). But shall we say that he has this perfect kind of life in him as a part of himself? Other men, we maintain, who have it potentially, have it as a part, but the man who is well off, who actually is this and has passed over into identity with it, [does not have it but] is it. Everything else is just something he wears; you could not call it part of him because he wears it without wanting to; it would be his if he united it to him by an act of the will. What then is the good for him? He is what he has, his own good. The Transcendent Good is Cause of the good in him; the fact that It is good is different from the fact that It is present to him. There is evidence for this in the fact that the man in this state does not seek for anything else; for what could he seek? Certainly not anything worse, and he has the best with him. The man who has a life like this has all he needs in life. If he is virtuous, he has all he needs for well-being and the acquisition of good; for there is no good that he has not got. What he seeks he seeks as a necessity, not for himself but for something that belongs to him; that is, he seeks it for the body which is joined to him; and even granting that this is a living body, it lives its own life and not the life which is that of the good man. He knows its needs, and gives it what he gives it without

ἐλαττώσεται εἰς τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν μένει γὰρ καὶ ὡς ἡ τοιαύτη ζωὴ ἀποθησκόντων τε οἰκείων καὶ φίλων οἶδε τὸν θάνατον ὃ τι ἐστίν, ἴσασι δὲ καὶ οἱ πάσχοντες σπουδαῖοι ὄντες. Οἰκείοι δὲ καὶ
 35 προσήκοντες τοῦτο πάσχοντες κἂν λυπῶσιν, οὐκ αὐτόν, τὸ δ' ἐν αὐτῷ νοῦν οὐκ ἔχον, οὐ τὰς λύπας οὐδέξεται.

5. Ἀλγηδόνες δὲ τί καὶ νόσοι καὶ τὰ ὅλως κωλύοντα ἐνεργεῖν; Εἰ δὲ δὴ μὴδ' ἐαυτῷ παρακολουθοῖ; Γένοιτο γὰρ ἂν καὶ ἐκ φαρμάκων καὶ τιμῶν νόσων. Πῶς δὴ ἐν τούτοις ἅπασι τὸ ζῆν
 5 εὖ καὶ τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν ἂν ἔχοι; Πενίας γὰρ καὶ ἀδοξίας ἐατέον. Καίτοι καὶ πρὸς ταῦτα ἂν τις ἀποβλέψας ἐπιστήσειε καὶ πρὸς τὰς πολυθρῦλλήτους αὐτῶν μάλιστα Πριαμικὰς τύχας· ταῦτα γὰρ εἰ καὶ φέροι καὶ ῥαδίως φέροι, ἀλλ' οὐ βουλητὰ γε
 10 ἦν αὐτῷ· δεῖ δὲ βουλητὸν τὸν εὐδαίμονα βίον εἶναι· ἐπεὶ οὐδὲ τοῦτον εἶναι τὸν σπουδαῖον ψυχῆν τοιάνδε, μὴ συναριθμείσθαι δ' αὐτοῦ τῇ οὐσίᾳ τὴν σώματος φύσιν. Ἐτοιμῶς γὰρ τοῦτο φαῖεν ἂν λαμβάνειν, ἕως ἂν αἱ τοῦ σώματος πείσεις πρὸς αὐτὸν ἀναφέρωνται καὶ αὐτὰ καὶ αἱ αἰρέσεις καὶ φυγαὶ διὰ τοῦτο γίνωνται αὐτῷ.
 15 Ἡδονῆς δὲ συναριθμουμένης τῷ εὐδαίμονι βίῳ, πῶς ἂν λυπηρὸν διὰ τύχας καὶ ὀδύνας ἔχων εὐδαίμων εἴη, ὅτω ταῦτα σπουδαίῳ ὄντι γίνονται; Ἄλλὰ θεοὶ μὲν ἡ τοιαύτη διάθεσις εὐδαίμων καὶ

¹ Cp. Aristotle, *Nicomachean Ethics* I. 10. 1100a8 and 11. 1101a8. Plotinus in this section of the treatise is defending the essential Stoic position, that the good man is absolutely

taking away anything from his own life. His well being will not be reduced even when fortune goes against him; the good life is still there even so. When his friends and relations die he knows what death is—as those who die do also if they are virtuous. Even if the death of friends and relations causes grief, it does not grieve him but only that in him which has no intelligence, and he will not allow the distresses of this to move him.

5. But what about pain and sickness and everything that hinders activity? And suppose the good man is not even conscious? That could happen as the result of drugs and some kinds of illness. How could he in all these circumstances have a good life and well-being? We need not consider poverty and disgrace; though someone might raise an objection in regard of these too, and especially that "fate of Priam" that people are always talking about.¹ For even if he bore them and bore them lightly, he would not want them; and the life of well-being must be something one wants. This good man, it might be objected, is not a good soul, without reckoning his bodily nature as part of his essential being. Our opponents might say that they willingly accept our point of view, as long as the bodily affections are referred to the man himself, and it is he himself who chooses and avoids for reasons connected with the body. But if pleasure is counted as part of the life of well-being, how can a man be well off when chance and pain bring distress, even if it is a good man that these things happen to? This kind of state of self-sufficient well-being belongs to the

independent of external circumstances, against an attack on Peripatetic lines.

αὐτάρκης, ἀνθρώποις δὲ προσθήκην τοῦ χειρόνος λαβοῦσι περὶ ὅλον χρή τὸ γενόμενον τὸ εὐδαιμον 20 ζητεῖν, ἀλλὰ μὴ περὶ μέρος, ὃ ἐκ θατέρου κακῶς ἔχοντος ἀναγκάζεται ἂν καὶ θάτερον τὸ κρεῖττον ἐμποδίζεσθαι πρὸς τὰ αὐτοῦ, ὅτι μὴ καὶ τὰ τοῦ ἑτέρου καλῶς ἔχει. Ἡ ἀπορρήξαντα δεῖ σῶμα ἢ καὶ αἴσθησιν τὴν σώματος οὕτω τὸ αὐτάρκες ζητεῖν πρὸς τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν ἔχειν.

6. Ἄλλ' εἰ μὲν τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν ἐν τῷ μὴ ἀλγεῖν μηδὲ νοσεῖν μηδὲ δυστυχεῖν μηδὲ συμφοραῖς μεγάλαις περιπίπτειν ἐδίδου ὁ λόγος, οὐκ ἦν τῶν ἐναντίων παρόντων εἶναι ὄντινον εὐδαίμονα· εἰ δ' ἐν τῇ τοῦ 5 ἀληθινοῦ ἀγαθοῦ κτήσῃ τοῦτό ἐστι κείμενον, τί δεῖ παρέντας τοῦτο καὶ τὸ πρὸς τοῦτο βλέποντας κρίνειν τὸν εὐδαίμονα τὰ ἄλλα ζητεῖν, ἃ μὴ ἐν τῷ εὐδαιμονεῖν ἠρίθμηται; Εἰ μὲν γὰρ συμφύρησις ἦν ἀγαθῶν καὶ ἀναγκαίων ἢ καὶ οὐκ ἀναγκαίων, ἀλλ' ἀγαθῶν 10 καὶ τούτων λεγομένων, ἔχρη καὶ ταῦτα παρεῖναι ζητεῖν· εἰ δὲ τὸ τέλος ἐν τι εἶναι ἀλλ' οὐ πολλὰ δεῖ—οὕτω γὰρ ἂν οὐ τέλος, ἀλλὰ τέλη ἂν ζητοῖ—ἐκεῖνο χρή λαμβάνειν μόνον, ὃ ἔσχατόν τέ ἐστι καὶ τιμιώτατον καὶ ὃ ἡ ψυχὴ ζητεῖ ἐν αὐτῇ ἐγκολπίσασθαι. ἼΙ δὲ ζήτησις αὐτῆ καὶ ἡ βούλησις οὐχὶ τὸ 15 μὴ ἐν τούτῳ εἶναι· ταῦτα γὰρ οὐκ αὐτῇ φύσει, ἀλλὰ παρόντα μόνον φεύγει ὁ λογισμὸς ἀποικονομούμενος ἢ καὶ προσλαμβάνων ζητεῖ· αὐτῇ δὲ ἢ ἔφθεσι πρὸς τὸ κρεῖττον αὐτῆς, οὐ ἐγγενομένου

gods; since men have a supplement of lower nature one must look for well being in the whole of what has come into existence, and not in a part; for if one part is in a bad state the other, higher, part must necessarily be hindered in its proper work if the affairs of the lower part are not going well. Otherwise one must cut off the body, and even perception of the body, from human nature, and in this way try to find self-sufficiency in the matter of well-being.

6. But [we should answer], if our argument made well-being consist in freedom from pain and sickness and ill-luck and falling into great misfortunes, it would be impossible for anyone to be well off when any of these circumstances opposed to well-being was present. But if well-being is to be found in possession of the true good, why should we disregard this and omit to use it as a standard to which to look in judging well-being, and look for other things which are not reckoned as a part of well-being? If it was a collection of goods and necessities, or things as well which are not necessities but even so are called goods, we should have to try and see that these were there too. But if the end at which we aim must be one and not many—otherwise one would not be aiming at an end but at ends—one must gain that alone which is of ultimate and highest value, and which the soul seeks to clasp close within itself. This search and willing is not directed to not being in this condition. These things are not of our very nature, but only [incidentally] present, and it is our reasoning power that avoids and manages to get rid of them, or also sometimes seeks to acquire them. But the real drive of desire of our soul is towards that which is better than itself. When that is present

ἀποπεπλήρωται καὶ ἔστι, καὶ οὗτος ὁ βουλητὸς ὄντως βίος. Τῶν δ' ἀναγκαίων τι παρεῖναι οὐ
 20 βούλησις ἂν εἴη, εἰ κυρίως τὴν βούλησιν ὑπολαμ-
 βάνοι, ἀλλὰ μὴ καταχρώμενος ἂν τις λέγοι, ἐπειδὴ
 καὶ ταῦτα παρεῖναι ἀξιούμεν. Ἐπεὶ καὶ ὅλως τὰ
 κακὰ ἐκκλίνομεν, καὶ οὐ δήπου βουλητὸν τὸ τῆς
 ἐκκλίσεως τῆς τοιαύτης· μᾶλλον γὰρ βουλητὸν τὸ
 μηδὲ δεηθῆναι τῆς ἐκκλίσεως τῆς τοιαύτης.
 30 Μαρτυρεῖ δὲ καὶ αὐτά, ὅταν παρῆ· οἷον ὑγίεια
 καὶ ἀνωδυνία. Τί γὰρ τούτων ἐπαγωγὸν ἐστὶ;
 Καταφρονεῖται γοῦν ὑγίεια παρούσα καὶ τὸ μὴ
 ἀλγεῖν. Ἄ δὲ παρόντα μὲν οὐδὲν ἐπαγωγὸν ἔχει
 οὐδὲ προστίθησ' τι πρὸς τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν, ἀπόντα δὲ
 διὰ τὴν τῶν λυπούντων παρουσίαν ζητεῖται,
 εὐλογον ἀναγκαῖα, ἀλλ' οὐκ ἀγαθὰ φύκειν εἶναι.
 Οὐδὲ συναριθμητέα τοίνυν τῷ τέλει, ἀλλὰ καὶ
 ἀπόντων αὐτῶν καὶ τῶν ἐναντίων παρόντων ἀκέραιον
 τὸ τέλος τηρητέον.

7. Διὰ τί οὖν ὁ εὐδαιμονῶν ταῦτα ἐθέλει
 παρεῖναι καὶ τὰ ἐναντία ἀπωθεῖται; Ἥ φησόμεν
 οὐχ ὅτι πρὸς τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν εὐφέρεται τινα
 μοῖραν, ἀλλὰ μᾶλλον πρὸς τὸ εἶναι· τὰ δ' ἐναντία
 5 τούτων ἢ πρὸς τὸ μὴ εἶναι ἢ ὅτι ἐνοχλεῖ τῷ τέλει
 παρόντα, οὐχ ὡς ἀφαιρούμενα αὐτό, ἀλλ' ὅτι ὁ
 ἔχων τὸ ἄριστον αὐτὸ μόνον βούλεται ἔχειν, οὐκ
 ἄλλο τι μετ' αὐτοῦ, ὃ ὅταν παρῆ, οὐκ ἀφῆρηται
 μὲν ἐκείνο, ἐστὶ δ' ὅμως κάκεινου ὄντος. Ὅλως
 δὲ οὐκ, εἴ τι ὁ εὐδαίμων μὴ ἐθέλοι, παρεῖναι δὲ
 188

within it, it is fulfilled and at rest, and this is the way
 of living it really wills. We cannot be said to "will"
 the presence of necessities, if "willing" is used in
 its proper sense and not misapplied to the occasions
 when we prefer the necessities also to be there: for
 we generally avoid evils, but this sort of avoidance is
 not, I suppose, a matter of willing, for we should will
 rather not to have occasion for this sort of avoidance.
 The necessities themselves provide evidence of this
 when we have them, health and freedom from pain,
 for instance. What attraction have they for us?
 We despise health when we have it, and freedom
 from pain as well. But these things, which have no
 attraction for us when they are there and do not
 contribute anything to our well-being, but which we
 seek in their absence because of the presence of
 things which distress us, can reasonably be called
 necessities, but not goods. So they must not be
 reckoned as part of the end we aim at; even when
 they are absent and their opposites are present, the
 end must be kept intact.

7. Why then does the man who is in a state of well-
 being want these necessities to be there and reject
 their opposites? We shall answer that it is not
 because they make any contribution to his well-being,
 but rather, to his existence: and he rejects their
 opposites either because they help towards non-
 existence or because they get in the way of his aim
 by their presence, not by taking anything away from
 it but because he who has the best wants to have it
 alone, and not something else with it, something
 which when it is there has not made away with the
 best, but, still, exists alongside it. But even if
 something which the man who is well off does not

10 τούτο, ἤδη παραιρεῖται τι τῆς εὐδαιμονίας· ἢ οὕτω γε καθ' ἐκάστην τὴν ἡμέραν μεταπίπτει ἂν καὶ ἐκπίπτει τῆς εὐδαιμονίας· οἷον εἰ καὶ παῖδα ἀποβάλλοι ἢ καὶ ὀτιοῦν τῶν κτημάτων. Καὶ μυρία ἂν εἴη ἃ οὐ κατὰ γνώμην ἐκβάντα οὐδέν τι παρακινεῖ τοῦ παρόντος τέλους αὐτῶ. Ἄλλὰ τὰ
 15 μεγάλα, φασί, καὶ οὐ τὰ τυχόντα. Τί δ' ἂν εἴη τῶν ἀνθρωπίνων μέγα, ὥστ' ἂν μὴ καταφρονηθῆναι ὑπὸ τοῦ ἀναβεβηκότος πρὸς τὸ ἀνωτέρω ἀπάντων τούτων καὶ οὐδενὸς ἔτι τῶν κάτω ἐξηρημένου; Διὰ τί γὰρ τὰς μὲν εὐτυχίας, ἡλικαιοῦν ἂν ὦσιν, οὐ μεγάλας ἡγείται, οἷον βασιλείας καὶ πόλεων
 20 καὶ ἔθνων ἀρχάς, οὐδὲ οἰκίσεις καὶ κτίσεις πόλεων, οὐδ' εἰ ὑπ' αὐτοῦ γίννοιντο, ἐκπτώσεις δὲ ἀρχῶν καὶ πόλεως αὐτοῦ κατασκαφὴν ἡγήσεται τι εἶναι μέγα; Εἰ δὲ δὴ καὶ κακὸν μέγα ἢ ὅλως κακόν, γελοῖος ἂν εἴη τοῦ δόγματος καὶ οὐκ ἂν ἔτι σπουδαῖος εἴη ξύλα καὶ λίθους καὶ νῆ Δία θανάτους
 25 θνητῶν μέγα ἡγοίμενος, εἴ φαμεν δεῖν δόγμα παρεῖναι περὶ θανάτου τὸ ἀμεινον ζωῆς τῆς μετὰ σώματος εἶναι. Αὐτὸς δὲ εἰ τυθείη, κακὸν οἰήσεται αὐτῶ τὸν θάνατον, ὅτι παρὰ βωμοῖς τέθνηκεν; Ἄλλ' εἰ μὴ ταφείη, πάντως που καὶ ὑπὲρ γῆς καὶ ὑπὸ γῆν τεθὲν τὸ σῶμα σαπίη. Εἰ δ' ὅτι μὴ
 30 πολυδαπάνως, ἀλλ' ἀνωνύμως τέθαπται οὐκ ἀξιώθεις ὑψηλοῦ μνήματος, τῆς μικρολογίας. Ἄλλ' εἰ αἰχμάλωτος ἄγοιτο, πᾶρ τοί ἐστὶν ὁδὸς ἐξιέναι,

¹ In the last days of St. Augustine's life, while the Vandals were besieging Hippo he comforted himself with these words; see Possidius, *Vita Augustini* XXVIII: et se inter haec mala

want is there all the same, nothing at all of his well-being is taken away; otherwise he would change every day and fall from his well-being—if he lost a servant, for instance, or any one of his possessions: there are thousands of things which, if they do not turn out according to his mind, disturb in no way the final good which he has attained. But, people say, consider great disasters, not ordinary chances! What human circumstance is so great that a man will not think little of it who has climbed higher than all this and depends on nothing below? He does not think any piece of good fortune great, however important it may be, kingship, for instance, and rule over cities and peoples, or founding of colonies and states (even if he founds them himself). Why then should he think that falling from power and the ruin of his city are great matters? If he thought that they were great evils, or evils at all, he would deserve to be laughed at for his opinion; there would be no virtue left in him if he thought that wood and stones, and (God help us!) the death of mortals, were important,¹ this man who, we say, ought to think about death that it is better than life with the body! If he himself is offered in sacrifice, will he think his death an evil, because he dies by the altars? If he is not buried, his body will rot anyhow, on the earth or under it. If he is distressed because he does not have an expensive funeral but is buried without a name and not thought worth a lofty monument—the pettiness of it! If he is taken away as a war-slave, "the way lies open" to depart,

cuiusdam sapientis sententia consolabatur dicentis: *Non erit magnus magnum putans, quod cadunt ligna et lapides et moriuntur mortales.*

εἰ μὴ εἶη εὐδαμονεῖν. Εἰ δὲ οἰκείοι αὐτῷ
 αἰχμάλωτοι, οἷον ἐλκόμεναι νυοὶ καὶ θυγα-
 35 τέρεις— τί οὖν, φήσομεν, εἰ ἀποθνήσκοι μηδὲν
 τοιοῦτον ἑωρακώς; Ἄρ' ἂν οὕτω δόξης ἔχοι
 ἀπιών, ὡς μὴ ἂν τούτων ἐνδεχομένων γενέσθαι;
 Ἄλλ' ἄτοπος ἂν εἶη. Οὐκ ἂν οὖν δοξάσειεν, ὡς
 ἐνδέχεται τοιαύταις τύχαις τοὺς οἰκείους περιπε-
 40 σεῖν; Ἄρ' οὖν διὰ τὸ οὕτως ἂν δόξαι ὡς καὶ
 γενησομένου ἂν οὐκ εὐδαίμων; Ἡ καὶ δοξάζων
 οὕτως εὐδαίμων ὥστε καὶ γινομένου. Ἐνθυμοῖτο
 γὰρ ἂν, ὡς ἡ τοῦδε τοῦ παντὸς φύσις τοιαύτη, οἷα
 καὶ τὰ τοιαῦτα φέρειν, καὶ ἔπασθαι χρῆ. Καὶ
 πολλοὶ δὴ καὶ ἄμεινον αἰχμάλωτοι γενόμενοι
 πράξουσι. Καὶ ἐπ' αὐτοῖς δὲ βαρυνομένοις ἀπελ-
 45 θεῖν ἢ μένοντες ἢ εὐλόγως μένουσι καὶ οὐδὲν
 δεινόν, ἢ ἀλόγως μένοντες, δέον μὴ, αὐτοῖς αἴτιοι.
 Οὐ γὰρ δὴ διὰ τὴν τῶν ἄλλων ἄνοιαν οἰκείων
 ὄντων αὐτὸς ἐν κακῷ ἔσται καὶ εἰς ἄλλων εὐτυχίας
 καὶ δυστυχίας ἀναρτήσεται.

8. Τὸ δὲ τῶν ἀλγηδόνων αὐτοῦ, ὅταν σφοδραὶ
 ὦσιν, ἕως δύναται φέρειν, οἴσει· εἰ δὲ ὑπερβάλ-
 λουσι, ἐξοίσουσι. Καὶ οὐκ ἐλεεινὸς ἔσται < καὶ > ἐν
 τῷ ἀλγεῖν, ἀλλὰ τὸ αὐτοῦ [καίεται] ἔνδον φέγγος
 5 οἷον ἐν λαμπτήρι φῶς πολλοῦ ἐξῶθεν πνέοντος ἐν
 πολλῇ ζάλῃ ἀνέμων καὶ χειμῶνι. Ἄλλ' εἰ μὴ
 παρακολουθοί, ἢ παρατείνοι τὸ ἀλγεῖν ἐπὶ τοσοῦτον
 αἰρόμενον, ὥστε ἐν τῷ σφοδρῷ ὅμως μὴ ἀποκτιν-

¹ This means suicide, which Plotinus admitted as legitimate, though only in absolutely desperate circumstances; cp. the next chapter and I. 9. 11-14, and 17.

² Again an allusion to Priam, cp. *Iliad* 22. 65.

if it is not possible to live well.¹ If his relatives are captured in war, "his daughters-in-law and daughters dragged off"²—well, suppose he had died without seeing anything of the sort; would he then leave the world in the belief that it was impossible that it should happen? If so, he would be a fool. So will he not think that it is possible for his relatives to fall into such misfortune? And does his belief that this may happen prevent his well-being? Then neither does the fact of its happening. For he will think that the nature of this universe is of a kind to bring these sorts of misfortunes, and we must follow it obediently. Anyhow, many people will do better by becoming war-slaves; and it is in their own power to depart if they find the burden heavy. If they stay, either it is reasonable for them to stay and there is nothing terrible about it, or if they stay unreasonably, when they ought not to, it is their own fault. The good man will not be involved in evil because of the stupidity of others, even if they are his relatives; he will not be dependent on the good or bad fortune of other people.

8. As far as his own pains go, when they are very great, he will bear them as long as he can; when they are too much for him, they will bear him off.³ He is not to be pitied even in his pain; his light within is like the light in a lantern when it is blowing hard outside with a great fury of wind and storm.⁴ But suppose the pain brings delirium, or goes on at such a height that, though it is extreme it does not

³ Cp. Epicurus fr. V. B64-65 Bailey.

⁴ There may be a reminiscence here of Empedocles fr. B 84, Diels, but the context there is quite different—the storm-lantern is only an analogy for the structure of the eye.

νύναι; Ἄλλ' εἰ μὲν παρατείνου, τί χρῆ ποιεῖν
 βουλευέσεται· οὐ γὰρ ἀφήρηται τὸ αὐτεξούσιον ἐν
 10 τούτοις. Χρῆ δὲ εἶδέναι, ὡς οὐχ, οἷα τοῖς ἄλλοις
 φαίνεται, τοιαῦτα καὶ τῷ σπουδαίῳ φανέται
 ἕκαστα, καὶ οὐ μέχρι τοῦ εἶσω ἕκαστα οὔτε τὰ
 ἄλλα, [οὔτε ἀλγεῖν] οὔτε τὰ λυπηρά. Καὶ ὅταν
 περὶ ἄλλους τὰ ἀλγεῖν; ἀσθένεια γὰρ εἴη ψυχῆς
 ἡμετέρας. Καὶ τοῦτο μαρτυρεῖ, ὅταν λανθάνειν
 15 ἡμῶς κέρδος ἡγώμεθα καὶ ἀποθανόντων ἡμῶν, εἰ
 γίνωιτο, κέρδος εἶναι τιθεμένων καὶ οὐ τὸ ἐκείνων
 ἔτι σκοπομένων, ἀλλὰ τὸ αὐτῶν, ὅπως μὴ
 λυποίμεθα. Τοῦτο δὲ ἡμετέρα ἤδη ἀσθένεια, ἣν
 δεῖ περιαιρεῖν, ἀλλὰ μὴ ἑώντας φοβεῖσθαι μὴ
 γένηται. Εἰ δὲ τις λέγοι οὕτως ἡμῶς πεφκέναι,
 20 ὥστε ἀλγεῖν ἐπὶ ταῖς τῶν οἰκείων συμφοραῖς,
 γυγνωσκέτω, ὅτι οὐ πάντες οὕτω, καὶ ὅτι τῆς
 ἀρετῆς τὸ κοινὸν τῆς φύσεως πρὸς τὸ ἄμεινον
 ἄγειν καὶ πρὸς τὸ κάλλιον παρὰ τοὺς πολλοὺς·
 κάλλιον δὲ τὸ μὴ ἐνδιδόναι τοῖς νομιζομένοις τῇ
 κοινῇ φύσει δεινοῖς εἶναι. Οὐ γὰρ ἰδιωτικῶς δεῖ,
 25 ἀλλ' οἷον ἀθλητὴν μέγαν διακείσθαι τὰς τῆς τύχης
 πληγὰς ἀμυνόμενον, γινώσκοντα μὲν ὅτι τινὶ φύσει
 ταῦτα οὐκ ἀρεστά, τῇ δὲ αὐτοῦ φύσει οἰστά, οὐχ
 ὡς δεινά, ἀλλ' ὡς παισὶ φοβερά. Ταῦτ' οὐδὲν
 ἤθελεν; Ἡ καὶ πρὸς τὰ μὴ θελητά, ὅταν παρῆ,
 ἀρετὴν καὶ πρὸς ταῦτα ἔχει δυσκίνητον καὶ
 30 δυσπαθῆ τὴν ψυχὴν παρέχουσαν.

9. Ἄλλ' ὅταν μὴ παρακολουθῆ βαπτισθεὶς ἢ
 νόσοις ἢ μάγων τέχναις; Ἄλλ' εἰ μὲν φυλάξουσιν

¹ Plotinus's view, expounded in this and the next chapter,
 of the secondary and relatively inferior status of consciousness

kill? If it goes on, he will consider what he ought to
 do; the pain has not taken away his power of self-
 disposal. One must understand that things do not
 look to the good man as they look to others; none of
 his experiences penetrate to the inner self, griefs no
 more than any of the others. And when the pains
 concern others? [To sympathise with them] would
 be a weakness in our soul. There is evidence for this
 in the fact that we think it something gained if we do
 not know about other people's sufferings, and even
 regard it as a good thing if we die first, not consider-
 ing it from their point of view but from our own,
 trying to avoid being grieved. This is just our
 weakness, which we must get rid of and not leave it
 there and then be afraid of its coming over us. If
 anyone says that it is our nature to feel pain at the
 misfortunes of our own people, he should know that
 this does not apply to everybody, and that it is the
 business of virtue to raise ordinary nature to a higher
 level, something better than most people are capable
 of; and it is better not to give in to what ordinary
 nature normally finds terrible. One must not
 behave like someone untrained, but stand up to the
 blows of fortune like a great trained fighter, and
 know that, though some natures may not like them,
 one's own can bear them, not as terrors but as
 children's bogeys. Does the good man, then, want
 misfortune? No, but when what he does not want
 comes he sets virtue against it, which makes his soul
 hard to disturb or distress.

9. But suppose he is unconscious, his mind swamped
 by sickness or magic arts? ¹ If they maintain that

is entirely un-Stoic and based (see ch. 10) on a most original
 development of his own double-self psychology.

αὐτὸν σπουδαῖον εἶναι οὕτως ἔχοντα καὶ οἷα ἐν ἦπνῳ κιοιμώμενον, τί κωλύει εὐδαίμονα αὐτὸν εἶναι; Ἐπεὶ οὐδὲ ἐν τοῖς ὑπνοῖς ἀφαιροῦνται τῆς εὐδαιμονίας αὐτόν, οὐδ' ὑπὸ λόγον ποιοῦνται τὸν χρόνον τοῦτον, ὡς μὴ πάντα τὸν βίον εὐδαιμονεῖν λέγειν· εἰ δὲ μὴ σπουδαῖον φήσουσιν, οὐ περὶ τοῦ σπουδαίου ἔτι τὸν λόγον ποιοῦνται. Ἡμεῖς δὲ ὑποθέμενοι σπουδαῖον, εἰ εὐδαιμονεῖ, ἕως ἂν εἴη σπουδαῖος, ζητοῦμεν. Ἄλλ' ἔστω σπουδαῖος, φασί· μὴ αἰσθανόμενος μὴδ' ἐνεργῶν κατ' ἀρετὴν, πῶς ἂν εὐδαίμων εἴη; Ἄλλ' εἰ μὲν μὴ αἰσθάνοιτο ὅτι ὑγιαίνει, ὑγιαίνει οὐδὲν ἤττον, καὶ εἰ μὴ ὅτι καλός, οὐδὲν ἤττον καλός· εἰ δὲ ὅτι σοφός μὴ αἰσθάνοιτο, ἤττον σοφός ἂν εἴη; Εἰ μὴ πού τις λέγοι ὡς ἐν τῇ σοφίᾳ γὰρ δεῖ τὸ αἰσθάνεσθαι καὶ παρακολουθεῖν αὐτῷ παρεῖναι· ἐν γὰρ τῇ κατ' ἐνέργειαν σοφίᾳ καὶ τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν παρεῖναι. Ἐπακτοῦ μὲν οὖν ὄντος τοῦ φρονεῖν καὶ τῆς σοφίας λέγοι ἂν τι ἴσως ὁ λόγος οὗτος· εἰ δ' ἡ τῆς σοφίας ὑπόστασις ἐν οὐσίᾳ τινί, μᾶλλον δὲ ἐν τῇ οὐσίᾳ, οὐκ ἀπόλωλε δὲ αὕτη ἡ οὐσία ἐν τε τῷ κοιμωμένῳ καὶ ὅλως ἐν τῷ λεγομένῳ μὴ παρακολουθεῖν ἑαυτῷ, καὶ ἔστιν ἡ τῆς οὐσίας αὐτῇ ἐνέργεια ἐν αὐτῷ καὶ ἡ τοιαύτη ἄνθρωπος ἐνέργεια, ἐνεργοὶ μὲν ἂν καὶ τότε ὁ σπουδαῖος ἢ τοιοῦτος· λανθάνοι δ' ἂν αὕτη ἡ ἐνέργεια οὐκ αὐτὸν πάντα, ἀλλά τι μέρος αὐτοῦ· οἷον καὶ τῆς φυτικῆς ἐνεργείας ἐνεργούσης οὐκ ἔρχεται εἰς τὸν ἄλλον ἄνθρωπον ἢ τῆς τοιαύτης ἐνεργείας ἀντίληψις τῷ

¹ Contrast Aristotle *Nicomachean Ethics* X. 6. 1176a33-35.

he is a good man when he is in this state, only fallen into a sort of sleep, what prevents him from being well off? After all, they do not remove him from well-being when he is asleep, or reckon the time he spends asleep so as to show that he is not well off for his whole life.¹ But if they say that he is not good when he is in this state, then they are not any longer discussing the good man. But we are taking the good man as our starting-point, and enquiring if he is well off as long as he is good. "But," they say, "granted that he is good, if he is not conscious of it or engaged in virtuous activity, how can he be in a state of well-being?" But if he does not know that he is healthy, he is healthy just the same, and if he does not know that he is handsome, he is handsome just the same. So if he does not know that he is wise, will he be any the less wise? Perhaps someone might say that wisdom requires awareness and consciousness of its presence, because it is in actual and active wisdom that well-being is to be found. If intelligence and wisdom were something brought in from outside, this argument would perhaps make sense: but if wisdom essentially consists in a substance, or rather in *the* substance, and this substance does not cease to exist in someone who is asleep or what is called unconscious; if the real activity of the substance goes on in him, and this activity is unsleeping; then the good man, in that he is a good man, will be active even then. It will not be the whole of him that is unaware of this activity, but only a part of him. In the same way when our growth-activity is active no perception of it reaches the rest of the man through our sense-faculties; and, if that in us which grows were our-

αἰσθητικῶ, καί, εἴπερ ἡμεν τὸ φυτικὸν ἡμῶν
 ἡμεῖς, ἡμεῖς ἂν ἐνεργοῦντες ἡμεν· νῦν δὲ τοῦτο
 μὲν οὐκ ἐσμέν, ἢ δὲ τοῦ νοοῦντος ἐνέργεια· ὥστε
 30 ἐνεργοῦντος ἐκείνου ἐνεργούμεν ἂν ἡμεῖς.

10. Λανθάνει δὲ ἴσως τῷ μὴ περὶ ὅτιοῦν τῶν
 αἰσθητῶν· διὰ γὰρ τῆς αἰσθήσεως ὥσπερ μέσης
 περὶ ταῦτα ἐνεργεῖν δοκεῖ καὶ περὶ τούτων.
 Αὐτὸς δὲ ὁ νοῦς διὰ τί οὐκ ἐνεργήσει καὶ ἡ ψυχὴ
 5 περὶ αὐτὸν ἢ πρὸ αἰσθήσεως καὶ ὅλως ἀντιλήψεως;
 Δεῖ γὰρ τὸ πρὸ ἀντιλήψεως ἐνεργήμα εἶναι, εἴπερ
 τὸ αὐτὸ τὸ νοεῖν καὶ εἶναι. Καὶ ἔοικεν ἢ
 ἀντίληψις εἶναι καὶ γίνεσθαι ἀνακάμπτουτος τοῦ
 νοήματος καὶ τοῦ ἐνεργοῦντος τοῦ κατὰ τὸ ζῆν
 τῆς ψυχῆς οἷον ἀπωσθέντος πάλιν, ὥσπερ ἐν
 10 κατόπτρῳ περὶ τὸ λεῖον καὶ λαμπρὸν ἡσυχάζον.
 Ὡς οὖν ἐν τοῖς τοιοῦτοις παρόντος μὲν τοῦ κατόπτ-
 ρου ἐγένετο τὸ εἶδωλον, μὴ παρόντος δὲ ἢ μὴ
 οὕτως ἔχοντος ἐνεργεῖα πάρεστιν οὐδὲ τὸ εἶδωλον
 ἦν ἂν, οὕτω καὶ περὶ ψυχὴν ἡσυχίαν μὲν ἄγοντος
 τοῦ ἐν ἡμῖν τοιοῦτου, ᾧ ἐμφαίνεται τὰ τῆς
 15 διανοίας καὶ τοῦ νοῦ εἰκονίσματα, ἐνοράται ταῦτα
 καὶ οἷον αἰσθητῶς γινώσκεται μετὰ τῆς προτέρας
 γνώσεως, ὅτι ὁ νοῦς καὶ ἡ διάνοια ἐνεργεῖ.
 Συγκλασθέντος δὲ τούτου διὰ τὴν τοῦ σώματος
 παραπτομένην ἀρμονίαν ἄνευ εἰδώλου ἢ διάνοια καὶ
 ὁ νοῦς νοεῖ καὶ ἄνευ φαντασίας ἢ νόησις τότε·

¹ Parmenides fr. B3 Diels. What Parmenides may have really meant by these words is not relevant here. Plotinus,

selves, it would be ourselves that would be active [irrespective of the fact that we were unconscious of it]. Actually, however, we are not it, but we *are* the activity of the intellect; so that when that is active, we are active.

10. Perhaps we do not notice it because it is not concerned with any object of sense; for our minds, by means of sense-perception—which is a kind of intermediary when dealing with sensible things—do appear to work on the level of sense and think about sense-objects. But why should not intellect itself be active [without perception], and also its attendant soul, which comes before sense-perception and any sort of awareness? There must be an activity prior to awareness if “thinking and being are the same.”¹ It seems as if awareness exists and is produced when intellectual activity is reflexive and when that in the life of the soul which is active in thinking is in a way projected back, as happens with a mirror-reflection when there is a smooth, bright, untroubled surface. In these circumstances when the mirror is there the mirror-image is produced, but when it is not there or is not in the right state the object of which the image would have been is [all the same] actually there. In the same way as regards the soul, when that kind of thing in us which mirrors the images of thought and intellect is undisturbed, we see them and know them in a way parallel to sense-perception, along with the prior knowledge that it is intellect and thought that are active. But when this is broken because the harmony of the body is upset, thought and intellect

as his citation of them at V. 1. 8. 17 makes clear, interprets them as referring to his own doctrine of the unity of Real Being and Intellect.

20 ὥστε καὶ τοιοῦτον ἂν τι νοοῖτο μετὰ φαντασίας
 τὴν νόησιν γίνεσθαι οὐκ οὔσης τῆς νοήσεως
 φαντασίας. Πολλὰς δ' ἂν τις εὔροι καὶ ἐγρηγο-
 ρότων καλὰς ἐνεργείας καὶ θεωρίας καὶ πράξεις,
 ὅτε θεωροῦμεν καὶ ὅτε πράττομεν, τὸ παρακολου-
 θεῖν ἡμᾶς αὐταῖς οὐκ ἐχούσας. Οὐ γὰρ τὸν
 25 ἀναγινώσκοντα ἀνάγκη παρακολουθεῖν ὅτι ἀνα-
 γινώσκει καὶ τότε μάλιστα, ὅτε μετὰ τοῦ συντόνου
 ἀναγινώσκου· οὐδὲ ὁ ἀνδριζόμενος ὅτι ἀνδρίζεται
 καὶ κατὰ τὴν ἀνδρίαν ἐνεργεῖ ὅσω ἐνεργεῖ· καὶ
 ἄλλα μυρία· ὥστε τὰς παρακολουθήσεις κινδύ-
 νευειν ἀμυδροτέρας αὐτὰς τὰς ἐνεργείας αἷς
 30 παροκολουθοῦνσι ποιεῖν, μόνας δὲ αὐτὰς οὔσας
 καθαρὰς τότε εἶναι καὶ μᾶλλον ἐνεργεῖν καὶ μᾶλλον
 ζῆν καὶ δῆ καὶ ἐν τῷ τοιοῦτῳ πάθει τῶν σπουδαίων
 γενομένων μᾶλλον τὸ ζῆν εἶναι, οὐ κεχυμένον εἰς
 αἰσθησιν, ἀλλ' ἐν τῷ αὐτῷ ἐν ἑαυτῷ συνηγμένον.
 11. Εἰ δέ τις μὴδὲ ζῆν λέγοιεν τὸν τοιοῦτον,
 ζῆν μὲν αὐτὸν φήσομεν, λαθάνειν δ' αὐτοὺς τὴν
 εὐδαιμονίαν τοῦ τοιοῦτου, ὡσπερ καὶ τὸ ζῆν. Εἰ
 δὲ μὴ πείθονται, ἀξιώσομεν αὐτοὺς ὑποθεμένους
 5 τὸν ζῶντα καὶ τὸν σπουδαῖον οὕτω ζητεῖν εἰ
 εὐδαίμων, μὴδὲ τὸ ζῆν αὐτοῦ ἐλαττώσαντας τὸ
 εἶναι ζῆν ζητεῖν εἰ πάρεστι μὴδὲ ἀνελόντας τὸν
 ἄνθρωπον περὶ εὐδαιμονίας ἀνθρώπου ζητεῖν μὴδὲ
 τὸν σπουδαῖον συγχωρήσαντας εἰς τὸ εἶσω ἐπεστρά-
 φθαι ἐν ταῖς ἔξωθεν ἐνεργείαις αὐτὸν ζητεῖν μὴδὲ
 10 ὅλως τὸ βουλευτὸν αὐτοῦ ἐν τοῖς ἔξω. Οὕτω γὰρ

¹ *φαντασία* is here used in its Aristotelian sense, for which see *De Anima* III. 3. 427b-429a.

operate without an image, and then intellectual activity takes place without a mind-picture.¹ So one might come to this sort of conclusion, that intellectual activity is [normally] accompanied by a mind-picture but is not a mind-picture. One can find a great many valuable activities, theoretical and practical, which we carry on both in our contemplative and active life even when we are fully conscious, which do not make us aware of them. The reader is not necessarily aware that he is reading, least of all when he is really concentrating: nor the man who is being brave that he is being brave and that his action conforms to the virtue of courage; and there are thousands of similar cases. Conscious awareness, in fact, is likely to enfeeble the very activities of which there is consciousness; only when they are alone are they pure and more genuinely active and living; and when good men are in this state their life is increased, when it is not spilt out into perception, but gathered together in one in itself.

11. If some people were to say that a man in this state is not even alive, we shall maintain that he is alive, but they fail to observe his well-being just as they do his life. If they will not believe us, we shall ask them to take as their starting-point a living man and a good man and so to pursue the enquiry into his well-being, and not to minimise his life and then to enquire if he has a good life, or to take away his humanity and then enquire about human well-being, or to agree that the good man has his attention directed inward and then to look for him in external activities, still less to seek the object of his desire in outward things. There would not be any possibility

ἂν οὐδὲ ὑπόστασις εὐδαιμονίας εἴη, εἰ τὰ ἔξω
 βουλευτὰ λέγοι καὶ τὸν σπουδαῖον βούλεσθαι ταῦτα.
 Ἐθέλωι γὰρ ἂν καὶ πάντας ἀνθρώπους εὖ πράττειν
 καὶ μηδὲν τῶν κακῶν περὶ μηδένα εἶναι· ἀλλὰ μὴ
 γινομένων ὅμως εὐδαίμων. Εἰ δέ τις παράλογον
 15 ἂν αὐτὸν ποιήσειν φήσει, εἰ ταῦτα ἐθελήσει—μὴ
 γὰρ οἶόν τε τὰ κακὰ μὴ εἶναι—δῆλον ὅτι συγχωρή-
 σει ἡμῖν ἐπιστρέφουσι αὐτοῦ τὴν βούλησιν εἰς τὸ
 εἶσω.

12. Τὸ δὲ ἡδὺ τῷ βίῳ τοιούτῳ ὅταν ἀπαιτῶ-
 ναι, οὐ τὰς τῶν ἀκολάστων οὐδὲ τὰς τοῦ σώματος
 ἡδονὰς ἀξιώσουσι παρεῖναι—αὐταὶ γὰρ ἀδύνατοι
 παρεῖναι καὶ τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν ἀφανιοῦσιν—οὐδὲ μὴν
 5 τὰς περιχαρίας—διὰ τί γάρ;—ἀλλὰ τὰς συνούσας
 παρουσίᾳ ἀγαθῶν οὐκ ἐν κινήσεισιν οὔσας, οὐδὲ
 γινομένας τοίνυν· ἤδη γὰρ τὰ ἀγαθὰ πάρεστι, καὶ
 αὐτὸς αὐτῷ πάρεστι· καὶ ἔστηκε τὸ ἡδὺ καὶ τὸ
 ἴλεων τοῦτο· ἴλεως δὲ ὁ σπουδαῖος ἀεὶ καὶ
 κατάστασις ἡσυχος καὶ ἀγαπητὴ ἢ διάθεσις ἦν
 10 οὐδὲν τῶν λεγομένων κακῶν παρακινεῖ, εἴπερ
 σπουδαῖος. Εἰ δέ τις ἄλλο εἶδος ἡδονῆς περὶ τὸν
 [σπουδαῖον] βίον ζητεῖ, οὐ τὸν σπουδαῖον βίον
 ζητεῖ.

13. Οὐδ' αἱ ἐνέργειαι δὲ διὰ τὰς τύχας ἐμποδί-
 ζοιντο ἂν, ἀλλὰ ἄλλαι ἂν κατ' ἄλλας γίνοντο
 τύχας, πᾶσαι δὲ ὅμως καλαὶ καλλίους ἴσως ὅσω
 περιστατικά. Αἱ δὲ κατὰ τὰς θεωρίας ἐνέργειαι

of the existence of well being if one said that outward things were to be desired and that the good man desired them. He would like all men to prosper and no one to be subject to any sort of evil; but if this does not happen, he is all the same well off. But if anyone maintains that it will make the good man absurd to suppose him wanting anything like this—for it is impossible that evils should not exist—then the person who maintains this will obviously agree with us in directing the good man's desire inwards.

12. When they demand to be shown what is pleasant in a life of this kind, they will not be requiring the presence of the pleasures of debauchees, or of bodily pleasures at all—these could not be there and would abolish well-being—or of violent emotions of pleasure—why should the good man have any?—but only those pleasures which accompany the presence of goods, pleasures not consisting in movements, which are not the results of any process: for the goods are there already, and the good man is present to himself; his pleasure and happiness are at rest. The good man is always happy; his state is tranquil, his disposition contented and undisturbed by any so-called evils—if he is really good. If anyone looks for another kind of pleasure in life it is not the life of virtue he is looking for.

13. The good man's activities will not be hindered by changes of fortune, but will vary according to what change and chance brings; but they will all be equally fine, and, perhaps, finer for being adapted to circumstances. As for his speculative activities, some of them which are concerned with particular points will possibly be hindered by circumstances,

5 αἱ μὲν καθ' ἕκαστα τάχα ἄν, οἷον ὡς ζητήσας ἄν
καὶ σκεψάμενος προφέρουσι τὸ δὲ μέγιστον
μάθημα πρόχειρον αἰεὶ καὶ μετ' αὐτοῦ καὶ τοῦτο
μᾶλλον, κἂν ἐν τῷ Φαλάριδος ταύρω λεγομένῳ
ἦ, ὃ μάτην λέγεται ἢ δὴ δις ἢ καὶ πολλάκις
λεγόμενον. Ἐκεῖ μὲν γὰρ τὸ φβεγξάμενον τοῦτο
10 αὐτὸ ἔστι τὸ ἐν τῷ ἀλγεῖν ὑπάρχον, ἐνταῦθα δὲ τὸ
μὲν ἀλοῦν ἄλλο, τὸ δὲ ἄλλο, ὃ συνὸν ἑαυτῷ, ἕως
ἂν ἐξ ἀνάγκης συνῆ, οὐκ ἀπολελείψεται τῆς τοῦ
ἀγαθοῦ ὄλου θέας.

14. Τὸ δὲ μὴ συναμφοτέρων εἶναι τὸν ἄνθρωπον
καὶ μάλιστα τὸν σπουδαῖον μαρτυρεῖ καὶ ὁ
χωρισμὸς ὁ ἀπὸ τοῦ σώματος καὶ ἡ τῶν λεγομένων
ἀγαθῶν τοῦ σώματος καταφρόνησις. Τὸ δὲ καθό-
5 σον ἀξιοῦν τὸ ζῶον τὴν εὐδαιμονίαν εἶναι γελοῖον
εὐζωίας τῆς εὐδαιμονίας οὔσης, ἢ περὶ ψυχὴν
συνίσταται, ἐνεργείας ταύτης οὔσης καὶ ψυχῆς οὐ
πάσης—οὐ γὰρ δὴ τῆς φυτικῆς, ἢ ἂν καὶ ἐφήψατο
σώματος· οὐ γὰρ δὴ τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν τοῦτο ἦν
σώματος μέγεθος καὶ εὐεξία—οὐδ' αὖ ἐν τῷ
10 αἰσθάνεσθαι εὖ, ἐπεὶ καὶ κινδυνεύουσιν αἱ τούτων
πλεονεξίαι βαρύνασαι πρὸς αὐτὰς φέρειν τὸν
ἄνθρωπον. Ἀντισηκώσεως δὲ οἷον ἐπὶ θάτερα
πρὸς τὰ ἄριστα γενομένης μινύθειν καὶ χεῖρω τὰ
σώματα ποιεῖν, ἵνα δεικνύοιτο οἷτος ὁ ἄνθρωπος
ἄλλος ἢ τὰ ἕξαι. Ὁ δὲ τῶν τῆδε ἄνθρωπος
15 ἔστω καὶ καλὸς καὶ μέγας καὶ πλούσιος καὶ

¹ The "greatest study" is for both Plato and Plotinus that of the Good; cp. *Republic* VI. 505A2 and *Enn.* VI. 7. 36.

² The paradox that the wise and good man would be *ειδόμενος* on the rack or while being roasted in the brazen bull of Phalaris was common to Stoics and Epicureans.

those for instance which require research and investigation. But the "greatest study"¹ is always ready to hand and always with him, all the more if he is in the so-called "bull of Phalaris"—which it is silly to call pleasant, though people keep on saying that it is;² for according to their philosophy that which says that its state is pleasant is the very same thing which is in pain; according to ours that which suffers pain is one thing, and there is another which, even while it is compelled to accompany that which suffers pain, remains in its own company and will not fall short of the vision of the universal good.

14. Man, and especially the good man, is not the composite of soul and body; separation from the body and despising of its so-called goods make this plain. It is absurd to maintain that well-being extends as far as the living body, since well-being is the good life, which is concerned with soul and is an activity of soul, and not of all of it—for it is not an activity of the growth-soul, which would bring it into connexion with body. This state of well-being is certainly not in the body's size or health, nor again does it consist in the excellence of the senses, for too much of these advantages is liable to weigh man down and bring him to their level. There must be a sort of counterpoise on the other side, towards the best, to reduce the body and make it worse, so that it may be made clear that the real man is other than his outward parts. The man who belongs to this world may be handsome and tall and rich and the

Plotinus argues that it makes no sense on their assumptions about the nature of man, but does on his, for he distinguishes the lower self (which really suffers) from the higher self (which remains unaffected).

πάντων ἀνθρώπων ἄρχων ὡς ἂν ὦν τοῦδε τοῦ τόπου, καὶ οὐ φθονητέον αὐτῷ τῶν τοιούτων ἡπατημένῳ. Περὶ δὲ σοφὸν ταῦτα ἴσως μὲν ἂν οὐδὲ τὴν ἀρχὴν γένοιτο, γενομένων δὲ ἐλαττώσει αὐτός, εἴπερ αὐτοῦ κήδεται. Καὶ ἐλαττώσει μὲν
 20 καὶ μαραινέει ἀμελείᾳ τὰς τοῦ σώματος πλεονεξίας, ἀρχὰς δὲ ἀποθήσεται. Σώματος δὲ ὑγίειαν φυλάττων οὐκ ἄπειρος νόσων εἶναι παντάπασιν βουλήσεται· οὐδὲ μὴ οὐδὲ ἄπειρος εἶναι ἀλγηδόνων· ἀλλὰ καὶ μὴ γινομένων νέος ὦν μαθεῖν βουλήσεται, ἤδη δὲ ἐν γήρᾳ ὦν οὔτε ταύτας οὔτε ἡδονὰς
 25 ἐνοχλεῖν οὐδέ τι τῶν τῆδε οὔτε προσηγνὲς οὔτε ἐναντίον, ἵνα μὴ πρὸς τὸ σῶμα βλέπη. Γινόμενος δ' ἐν ἀλγηδόσι τὴν πρὸς ταύτας αὐτῷ πεπορισμένην δύναμιν ἀντιτάξει οὔτε προσθήκην ἐν ταῖς ἡδοναῖς καὶ ὑγείαις καὶ ἀπονίαις πρὸς τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν λαμβάνων οὔτε ἀφαίρεσιν ἢ ἐλάττωσιν ταύτης ἐν
 30 τοῖς ἐναντίοις τούτων. Τοῦ γὰρ ἐναντίου μὴ προστιθέντος τῷ αὐτῷ πῶς ἂν τὸ ἐναντίον ἀφαιροῖ;

15. Ἄλλ' εἰ δύο εἶεν σοφοί, τῷ δὲ ἐτέρῳ παρείη ὅσα κατὰ φύσιν λέγεται, τῷ δὲ τὰ ἐναντία, ἴσον φήσομεν τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν αὐτοῖς παρεῖναι; Φήσομεν, εἴπερ ἐπίσης σοφοί. Εἰ δὲ κυλὸς τὸ σῶμα ὁ
 5 ἕτερος καὶ πάντα τὰ ἄλλα ὅσα μὴ πρὸς σοφίαν μηδὲ ὅλως πρὸς ἀρετὴν καὶ τοῦ ἀρίστου θεῶν καὶ τὸ ἀρίστον εἶναι, τί τοῦτο ἂν εἴη; Ἐπεὶ οὐδὲ αὐτὸς ὁ ταῦτα ἔχων σεμννεῖται ὡς μᾶλλον εὐδαίμων τοῦ μὴ ἔχοντος· οὐδὲ γὰρ ἂν πρὸς
 206

ruler of all mankind (since he is essentially of this region), and we ought not to envy him for things like these, by which he is beguiled. The wise man will perhaps not have them at all, and if he has them will himself reduce them, if he cares for his true self. He will reduce and gradually extinguish his bodily advantages by neglect, and will put away authority and office. He will take care of his bodily health, but will not wish to be altogether without experience of illness, nor indeed also of pain. Rather, even if these do not come to him he will want to learn them when he is young, but when he is old he will not want either pains or pleasures to hinder him, or any earthly thing, pleasant or the reverse, so that he may not have to consider the body. When he finds himself in pain he will oppose to it the power which he has been given for the purpose; he will find no help to his well-being in pleasure and health and freedom from pain and trouble, nor will their opposites take it away or diminish it. For if one thing adds nothing to a state, how can its opposite take anything away?

15. But suppose there were two wise men, one of whom had all of what are called natural goods and the other their opposites, shall we say that they both have well-being equally? Yes, if they are equally wise. Even if one is good-looking and has all the other advantages which have nothing to do with wisdom, or in any way with virtue and the vision of the best, or with the best itself, what does that amount to? After all, even the man who has these advantages will not give himself airs about them as if he was better off than the one who has not got them; to have more of them than others would be no help

αὐλητικὸν τέλος ἢ τούτων πλεονεξία συμβάλλοιτο.
 10 Ἄλλα γὰρ θεωροῦμεν τὸν εὐδαίμονα μετὰ τῆς
 ἡμετέρας ἀσθενείας φρικτὰ καὶ δεινὰ νομίζοντες,
 ἃ μὴ ἂν ὁ εὐδαίμων νομίσειεν ἢ οὐπω οὔτε
 σοφὸς οὔτε εὐδαίμων εἶη μὴ τὰς περὶ τούτων
 φαντασίας ἀπάσας ἀλλαξάμενος καὶ οἷον ἄλλος
 παντάπασι γενόμενος πιστεύσας ἑαυτῷ, ὅτι μηδέν
 15 ποτε κακὸν ἔξει· οὕτω γὰρ καὶ ἀδεῆς ἔσται περὶ
 πάντα. Ἡ δειλαίνων περὶ τινα οὐ τέλος πρὸς
 ἀρετὴν, ἀλλὰ ἡμισύς τις ἔσται. Ἐπεὶ καὶ τὸ
 ἀπροαίρετον αὐτῷ καὶ τὸ γινόμενον πρὸ κρίσεως
 δέος κἂν ποτε πρὸς ἄλλοις ἔχοντι γένηται, προσελ-
 θὼν ὁ σοφὸς ἀπόσεται καὶ τὸν ἐν αὐτῷ κινηθέντα
 20 οἷον πρὸς λύπας παῖδα καταπαύσει ἢ ἀπειλῇ ἢ
 λόγῳ· ἀπειλῇ δὲ ἀπαθεί, οἷον εἰ ἐμβλέψαντος
 σεμνὸν μόνον παῖς ἐκπλαγείη. Οὐ μὴν διὰ ταῦτα
 ἄφιλος οὐδὲ ἀγνώμων ὁ τοιοῦτος· τοιοῦτος γὰρ
 καὶ περὶ αὐτὸν καὶ ἐν τοῖς ἑαυτοῦ. Ἀποδιδούς
 οὖν ὅσα αὐτῷ καὶ τοῖς φίλοις φίλος ἂν εἶη μάλιστα
 25 μετὰ τοῦ νοῦν ἔχειν.

16. Εἰ δέ τις μὴ ἐνταῦθα ἐν τῷ νῷ τούτῳ ἄρας
 θήσειε τὸν σπουδαῖον, κατάγοι δὲ πρὸς τύχης καὶ
 ταύτας φοβήσεται περὶ αὐτὸν γενέσθαι, οὔτε
 σπουδαῖον τηρήσει, οἷον ἀξιούμεν εἶναι, ἀλλ'
 5 ἐπιεικῆ ἀνθρώπων, καὶ μικτὸν ἐξ ἀγαθοῦ καὶ
 κακοῦ διδούς μικτὸν βίον ἐκ τινος ἀγαθοῦ καὶ
 κακοῦ ἀποδώσει τῷ τοιοῦτῳ, καὶ οὐ ῥάδιον
 γενέσθαι. Ὅς εἰ καὶ γένοιτο, οὐκ ἂν ὀνομάζεσθαι
 εὐδαίμων εἶη ἄξιος οὐκ ἔχων τὸ μέγα οὔτε ἐν
 208

even towards becoming a piper. But we bring our
 own weakness into it when we are considering
 whether a man is well off, and regard things as
 frightening and terrible which the man in a state of
 well-being would not so regard. He would not yet
 have attained to wisdom or well-being if he had not
 freed himself of all imaginations about this sort of
 thing, and become in a way quite a different man,
 with confidence in himself that evil can never touch
 him. In this state of mind he will be without fear
 of anything. If he is afraid at all he is not perfect
 in virtue, but a kind of half-man. If sometimes when
 he is concerned with other things an involuntary fear
 comes upon him before he has time to reflect, the
 wise man [in him] will come and drive it away and
 quiet the child in him which is stirred to a sort of
 distress, by threatening or reasoning; the threaten-
 ing will be unemotional, as if the child was shocked
 into quietness just by a severe look. A man of this
 sort will not be unfriendly or unsympathetic; he will
 be like this to himself and in dealing with his own
 affairs: but he will render to his friends all that he
 renders to himself, and so will be the best of friends
 as well as remaining intelligent.

16. If anyone does not set the good man up on
 high in this world of intellect, but brings him down
 to chance events and fears their happening to him,
 he is not keeping his mind on the good man as we
 consider he must be, but assuming an ordinary man,
 a mixture of good and bad, and assigning to him a
 life which is also a mixture of good and bad and of a
 kind which cannot easily occur. Even if a person of
 this sort did exist, he would not be worth calling well
 off; he would have no greatness in him, either of the

ἀξία σοφίας οὔτε ἐν καθαρότητι ἀγαθοῦ. Οὐκ
 10 ἔστιν οὖν ἐν τῷ κοινῷ εὐδαιμόνως ζῆν. Ὅρθως
 γὰρ καὶ Πλάτων ἐκεῖθεν ἄνωθεν τὸ ἀγαθὸν ἀξιοῖ
 λαμβάνειν καὶ πρὸς ἐκεῖνο βλέπειν τὸν μέλλοντα
 σοφὸν καὶ εὐδαίμονα ἔσεσθαι καὶ ἐκείνῳ ὁμοιοῦσθαι
 καὶ κατ' ἐκεῖνο ζῆν. Τοῦτο οὖν δεῖ ἔχειν μόνον
 πρὸς τὸ τέλος, τὰ δ' ἄλλα ὡς ἂν καὶ τόπους
 15 μεταβάλλοι οὐκ ἐκ τῶν τόπων προσθήκην πρὸς τὸ
 εὐδαιμονεῖν ἔχων, ἀλλ' ὡς στοχαζόμενος καὶ τῶν
 ἄλλων περικεχυμένων αὐτόν, οἷον εἰ ὠδὶ κατακείσε-
 ται ἢ ὠδί, διδοὺς μὲν τούτῳ ὅσα πρὸς τὴν χρείαν
 καὶ δύναται, αὐτὸς δὲ ὢν ἄλλος οὐ κωλυόμενος
 καὶ τοῦτον ἀφεῖναι, καὶ ἀφήσων δὲ ἐν καιρῷ
 20 φύσεως, κύριος δὲ καὶ αὐτὸς ὢν τοῦ βουλευσασθαι
 περὶ τούτου. Ὡστε αὐτῷ τὰ ἔργα τὰ μὲν πρὸς
 εὐδαιμονίαν συντείνοντα ἔσται, τὰ δ' οὐ τοῦ τέλους
 χάριν καὶ ὅλως οὐκ αὐτοῦ ἀλλὰ τοῦ προσεζευγμέ-
 νου, οἷ φροντιεῖ καὶ ἀνέξεται, ἕως δυνατόν, οἷον
 εἰ μουσικὸς λύρας, ἕως οἷόν τε χρῆσθαι· εἰ δὲ
 25 μὴ, ἄλλην ἀλλάξεται, ἢ ἀφήσει τὰς λύρας χρήσεις
 καὶ τοῦ εἰς λύραν ἐνεργεῖν ἀφέξεται ἄλλο ἔργον
 ἄνευ λύρας ἔχων καὶ κειμένην πλησίον περιόφεται
 ᾄδων ἄνευ ὀργάνων. Καὶ οὐ μάτην αὐτῷ ἐξ
 ὑρχῆς τὸ ὄργανον ἐδόθη· ἐχρήσατο γὰρ αὐτῷ ἥδη
 πολλάκις.

dignity of wisdom or the purity of good. The
 common life of body and soul cannot possibly be the
 life of well-being. Plato was right in maintaining
 that the man who intends to be wise and in a state
 of well-being must take his good from There, from
 above, and look to that good and be made like it and
 live by it.¹ He must hold on to this only as his goal,
 and change his other circumstances as he changes his
 dwelling-place, not because he derives any advantage
 in the point of well-being from one dwelling-place
 or another, but guessing, as it were, how his alien
 covering will be affected if he lodges here or there.
 He must give to this bodily life as much as it needs
 and he can, but he is himself other than it and free
 to abandon it, and he will abandon it in nature's
 good time, and, besides, has the right to decide
 about this for himself. So some of his activities will
 tend towards well-being; others will not be directed
 to the goal and will really not belong to him but to
 that which is joined to him, which he will care for
 and bear with as long as he can, like a musician
 with his lyre, as long as he can use it; if he cannot
 use it he will change to another, or give up using
 the lyre and abandon the activities directed to it.
 Then he will have something else to do which does
 not need the lyre, and will let it lie unregarded be-
 side him while he sings without an instrument. Yet
 the instrument was not given him at the beginning
 without good reason. He has used it often up till
 now.

¹ Plotinus is referring to *Symposium* 212A1 and the
Theaetetus passage (176B1) quoted at the beginning of the
 treatise *On Virtue* (I. 2).

I. 5. ON WHETHER WELL-BEING INCREASES WITH TIME

Introductory Note

THIS short treatise is No. 36 in the chronological order; its subject is one that had been much discussed in the philosophical schools since Aristotle (see *Nicomachean Ethics* I. ch. 10), and, for once, Peripatetics, Stoics and Epicureans were substantially in agreement that the length of time a man was well off made no essential difference to his well-being. Plotinus's own original contribution to the discussion is his argument (ch. 7) that the life of well-being is really lived in eternity, not in time, and so the passage of time cannot affect it.

Synopsis

Well-being must consist in an actual present state, not in memory or anticipation (chs. 1-2). Short refutations of opposing arguments (chs. 2-5). The case of the man who is badly off (ch. 6). Well-being, time, and eternity (ch. 7). Memory of past goodness and pleasure can add nothing to well-being (chs. 8-9). Well-being a matter, not primarily of good external acts but of a good interior disposition (ch. 10).

I. 5. (36) ΠΕΡΙ ΤΟΥ ΕΙ ΤΟ ΕΥΔΑΙΜΟΝΕΙΝ
ΕΠΙΔΟΣΙΝ ΧΡΟΝΩΙ ΛΑΜΒΑΝΕΙ

1. Εἰ τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν ἐπίδοσιν τῷ χρόνῳ λαμβάνει τοῦ εὐδαιμονεῖν αἰεὶ κατὰ τὸ ἐνεστῶς καμβανομένοι; Οὐδέ γὰρ ἡ μνήμη τοῦ εὐδαιμονήσαι ποιοῖ ἄν τι, οὐδ' ἐν τῷ λέγειν, ἀλλ' ἐν τῷ διακείσθαι
5 πῶς τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν. Ἡ δὲ διάθεσις ἐν τῷ παρῆναι καὶ ἡ ἐνέργεια τῆς ζωῆς.

2. Εἰ δ' ὅτι ἐφίεμεθα αἰεὶ τοῦ ζῆν καὶ τοῦ ἐνεργεῖν, τὸ τυγχάνειν τοῦ τοιούτου εὐδαιμονεῖν λέγοι μᾶλλον, πρῶτον μὲν οὕτω καὶ ἡ αὔριον εὐδαιμονία μείζων ἔσται καὶ ἡ ἐξῆς αἰεὶ τῆς προτέ-
5 ρας, καὶ οὐκέτι μετρηθήσεται τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν τῇ ἀρετῇ. Ἐπειτα καὶ οἱ θεοὶ νῦν μᾶλλον εὐδαιμονήσουσιν ἢ πρότερον καὶ οὐπω τέλειον καὶ οὐδέποτε τέλειον. Ἐπειτα καὶ ἡ ἔφεσις λαβοῦσα τὴν τεύξιν τὸ παρὸν εἴληφε καὶ αἰεὶ τὸ παρὸν καὶ ζητεῖ τὸ ἕως ἂν ἢ τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν ἔχειν. Ἡ δ' ἔφεσις τοῦ
10 ζῆν τὸ εἶναι ζητοῦσα τοῦ παρόντος ἂν εἴη, εἰ τὸ εἶναι ἐν τῷ παρόντι. Εἰ δὲ τὸ μέλλον καὶ τὸ ἐφεξῆς θέλοι, ὃ ἔχει θέλει καὶ ὃ ἔστω, οὐχ ὃ παρελήλυθεν οὐδ' ὃ μέλλει, ἀλλ' ὃ ἤδη ἐστὶ τοῦτο εἶναι, οὐ τὸ εἶσαεὶ ζητοῦσα, ἀλλὰ τὸ παρὸν ἤδη εἶναι ἤδη.

3. Τί οὖν τὸ "πλείονα χρόνον εὐδαιμόνησε καὶ πλείονα χρόνον εἶδε τοῖς ὄμμασι τὸ αὐτό"; Εἰ

I. 5. ON WHETHER WELL-BEING
INCREASES WITH TIME

1. Does well-being increase with time, though it is understood always to refer to our present state? Memory, surely, can play no part in well-being; nor is it a matter of talking, but of being in a particular state. And a state is something present, and so is actuality of life.

2. But if it is said that, because we are always aiming at life and actuality, attaining [progressively] to this is greater well-being; first of all tomorrow's well-being will always be greater, and that which comes after greater than what was before it, and well-being will no longer be measured by virtue. Even the gods will be better off now than they were before, but they will not be perfectly well off; they will never be perfectly well off. And then, desire when it attains its end attains something present, something present at each particular moment, and seeks to possess well-being as long as it exists. Then too, since the desire of life seeks existence, it will be desire of the present, if existence is in the present. Even if it does want the future and what comes after, it wants what it has and what it is, not what it has been or is going to be; it wants what is already to exist; it is not seeking for the everlasting but wants what is present now to exist now.

3. What, then, about the statement "he has been well off for longer and had the same thing before his

μὲν γὰρ ἐν τῷ πλείονι τὸ ἀκριβέστερον εἶδε, πλέον
 ἂν τι ὁ χρόνος αὐτῷ εἰργάσατο· εἰ δὲ ὁμοίως διὰ
 5 παντὸς εἶδε, τὸ ἴσον καὶ ὁ ἅπαξ θεασάμενος ἔχει.

4. Ἄλλὰ πλείονα ἄτερος ἦσθη χρόνον. Ἄλλὰ
 τοῦτο οὐκ ἂν ὀρθῶς ἔχοι ἀριθμεῖν εἰς τὸ εὐδαιμο-
 νεῖν. Εἰ δὲ τὴν ἡδονὴν λέγοι τις τὴν ἐνέργειαν τὴν
 ἀνεμπόδιστον, τὸ αὐτὸ τῷ ζητουμένῳ λέγει. Καὶ
 5 ἢ ἡδονὴ δὲ ἢ πλείων αἰεὶ τὸ παρὸν μόνον ἔχει, τὸ
 δὲ παρεληλυθὸς αὐτῆς οἴχεται.

5. Τί οὖν; Εἰ ὁ μὲν ἐξ ἀρχῆς εὐδαιμόνησεν εἰς
 τέλος, ὁ δὲ τὸν ὕστερον χρόνον, ὁ δὲ πρότερον
 εὐδαιμονήσας μετέβαλεν, ἔχουσι τὸ ἴσον; Ἡ
 ἐνταῦθα ἢ παραβολὴ οὐκ εὐδαιμονούντων γεγένηται
 5 πάντων, ἀλλὰ μὴ εὐδαιμονούντων, ὅτε μὴ εὐδαιμό-
 νουν, πρὸς εὐδαιμονούντα. Εἴ τι οὖν πλέον ἔχει,
 τοῦτο ἔχει, ὅσον ὁ εὐδαίμων πρὸς οὐκ εὐδαίμονας,
 ᾧ καὶ συμβαίνει πλεονεκτεῖν αὐτοὺς τῷ παρόντι.

6. Τί οὖν ὁ κακοδαίμων; Οὐ μᾶλλον κακοδαίμων
 τῷ πλείονι; Καὶ τὰ ἄλλα δὲ ὅσα δυσχερῆ οὐκ ἐν
 τῷ πλείονι χρόνῳ πλείω τὴν συμφορὰν δίδωσιν,
 οἷον ὀδύνας πολυχρόνιοι καὶ λύπαι καὶ πάντα τὰ
 5 τούτου τοῦ τύπου; Ἄλλ' εἰ ταῦτα οὕτω τῷ
 χρόνῳ τὸ κακὸν ἐπαύξει, διὰ τί οὐ καὶ τὰ ἐναντία
 καὶ τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν ὡσαύτως; Ἡ ἐπὶ μὲν τῶν
 λυπῶν καὶ ὀδυνῶν ἔχοι ἂν τις λέγειν, ὡς προσθήκη

¹ Cp. Aristotle, *Nicomachean Ethics* VII. 14. 1153b. 10-12.
 218

eyes for longer"? If in the longer time he gained a more accurate knowledge of it, then the time would have done something more for him. But if he knows it just the same all the time, the man who has seen it once has as much.

4. "But the first man had a longer period of pleasure." But it is not right to count pleasure in reckoning well-being. But if someone says that pleasure is "unhindered activity,"¹ he is stating just the conclusion we are seeking. And anyhow this longer-lasting pleasure at any moment only has what is present; past pleasure is gone and done with.

5. Well then, if one man has been well off from beginning to end, and another in the latter part of his life, and yet another has been well off at first and then changed his state, do they have equal shares? Here the comparison is not being made between people who are all in a state of well-being; it is a comparison of those who are not well off, at the time when they are not well off, with a man who is well off. So if this latter has anything more, he has just what the man in a state of well-being has in comparison with those who are not; and that means that his advantage is by something in the present.

6. Then what about the man who is badly off? Is he not worse off the longer his bad fortune lasts? And do not all other troubles make the misfortune worse the longer they last, long-lasting pains and griefs for instance, and other things of that stamp? But if these troubles in this way make the evil increase with the passage of time, why do not their opposites in the same way cause an increase of well-being? One could, certainly, say in the case of griefs and pains that time brings about an increase,

ὁ χρόνος δίδωσιν, οἷον τὸ ἐπιμένει τὴν νόσον·
 ἕξις γὰρ γίνεται, καὶ κακοῦται μᾶλλον τῷ χρόνῳ
 10 τὸ σῶμα. Ἐπεὶ, εἴ γε τὸ αὐτὸ μένει καὶ μὴ
 μείζων ἢ βλάβη, καὶ ἐνταῦθα τὸ παρὸν αἰεὶ τὸ
 λυπηρὸν ἔσται, εἰ μὴ τὸ παρεληλυθὸς προσαριθμοῖ
 ἀφορῶν εἰς τὸ γενόμενον καὶ μένον· ἐπὶ τε τῆς
 κακοδαίμονος ἕξεως τὸ κακὸν ἐς τὸν πλείονα
 χρόνον ἐπιτείνεσθαι αὐξανομένης καὶ τῆς κακίας
 15 τῷ ἐμμόνῳ. Τῇ γοῦν προσθήκῃ τοῦ μᾶλλον, οὐ
 τῷ πλείονι ἴσῳ τὸ μᾶλλον κακοδαμονεῖν γίνεται.
 Τὸ δὲ πλείον ἴσον οὐχ ἅμα ἐστὶν οὐδὲ δὴ πλείον
 ὅλως λεκτέον τὸ μηκέτι ὄν τῷ ὄντι συναριθμοῦντα.
 Τὸ δὲ τῆς εὐδαιμονίας ὄρον τε καὶ πέρας ἔχει καὶ
 ταῦτόν αἰεὶ. Εἰ δέ τις καὶ ἐνταῦθα ἐπίδοσις παρὰ
 20 τὸν πλείονα χρόνον, ὥστε μᾶλλον εὐδαιμονεῖν εἰς
 ἀρετὴν ἐπιδιδόντα μείζονα, οὐ τὴν πολυετῆ
 εὐδαιμονίαν ἀριθμῶν ἐπαινεῖ, ἀλλὰ τὴν μᾶλλον
 γενομένην τότε, ὅτε μᾶλλον ἐστίν.

7. Ἀλλὰ διὰ τί, εἰ τὸ παρὸν θεωρεῖν δεῖ μόνον
 καὶ μὴ συναριθμεῖν τῷ γενομένῳ, οὐ καπὶ τοῦ
 χρόνου τὸ αὐτὸ ποιοῦμεν, ἀλλὰ καὶ τὸν παρεληλυ-
 θότα τῷ παρόντι συναριθμοῦντες πλείω λέγομεν;
 5 Διὰ τί ὄν οὐχ, ὅσος ὁ χρόνος, τοσαύτην καὶ τὴν
 εὐδαιμονίαν ἐροῦμεν; Καὶ διαιροῦμεν ἂν κατὰ τὰς
 τοῦ χρόνου διαιρέσεις καὶ τὴν εὐδαιμονίαν· καὶ
 γὰρ αὐτὸ τῷ παρόντι μετροῦντες ἀδιαίρετον αὐτὴν

for instance in chronic illness; it becomes a per-
 manent state, and as time goes on the condition of the
 body grows worse. For if it remains the same and
 the damage is no greater, then here too it will be the
 present state always which is painful, if one does not
 add on what is past in consideration of the per-
 sistence of the illness once it has come into exist-
 ence; in the case of a state of ill-being, too, the evil
 will grow worse the longer it lasts since the badness
 of the state will be increased by its persistence. So
 the greater misfortune will be due to the addition of
 the increase, not to the persistence for a longer time
 in the same state. That which lasts longer in the
 same state is not all present at once; one ought not
 really to talk about "longer" at all, because it means
 reckoning that which does not any longer exist along
 with that which does. But as regards well-being,
 it has a boundary and a limit and is always the
 same. But if here too there is an increase with
 greater length of time, so that as a man progresses to
 greater virtue he is better off, one is not counting the
 many years of well-being and praising it for lasting so
 long, but praising it for being greater at the time
 when it is greater.

7. But why, if we ought only to consider the
 present and not to count it along with the past, do
 we not do the same with time? Why do we count
 the past along with the present and say that it is
 more? Why, then, should we not say that well-
 being is equal in quantity to the time it lasts? We
 should then divide well-being according to the divi-
 sions of time; of course if we measure it by the
 present we shall make it indivisible. Now it is not

ποιήσομεν. Ἡ τὸν μὲν χρόνον ἀριθμεῖν καὶ
 10 μηκέτι ὄντα οὐκ ἄτοπον, ἐπεὶ καὶ τῶν γενομέ-
 νων μὲν, μηκέτι δὲ ὄντων, ἀριθμὸν ἂν ποιησαίμεθα,
 οἷον τῶν τετελευτηκότων· εὐδαιμονίαν δὲ μηκέτι
 οὐσαν [παρεῖναι] λέγειν τῆς παρουσίας πλείονα
 ἄτοπον. Τὸ μὲν γὰρ εὐδαιμονεῖν συμμεμενηκέναι
 ἀξιοί, ὁ δὲ χρόνος ὁ πλείων παρὰ τὸν παρόντα τὸ
 15 σκέδασιν βούλεται ἐνός τινος ἐν τῷ παρόντι
 ὄντος. Διὸ καὶ εἰκῶν αἰῶνος εἰκότως λέγεται
 ἀφανίζεσθαι βουλομένη ἐν τῷ σκιδναμένῳ αὐτῆς τὸ
 ἐκείνου μένον. Ὅθεν κἂν ἀπὸ τοῦ αἰῶνος ἀφέληται,
 τὸ ἐν ἐκείνῳ μέιναν ἂν καὶ αὐτῆς ποιήσῃται,
 ἀπώλεσεν αὐτό, σωζόμενον τέως ἐκείνῳ τρόπον
 20 τινά, ἀπολόμενον δέ, ἐν αὐτῇ εἰ πᾶν γένοιτο.
 Εἴπερ οὖν τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν κατὰ ζωὴν ἀγαθὴν,
 δηλονότι κατὰ τὴν τοῦ ὄντος αὐτὴν θετέον ζωὴν
 αὕτη γὰρ ἀρίστη. Οὐκ ἄρα ἀριθμητέα χρόνῳ,
 ἀλλ' αἰῶνι· τοῦτο δὲ οὔτε πλέον οὔτε ἔλαττον
 25 καὶ τὸ οὐ χρονικὸν εἶναι. Οὐ συναπτέον τοίνυν
 τὸ ὄν τῷ μὴ ὄντι οὐδὲ [τῷ αἰῶνι] τὸν χρόνον οὐδὲ
 τὸ χρονικὸν δὲ αἰεὶ τῷ αἰῶνι οὐδὲ παρεκτατέον τὸ
 ἀδιάστατον, ἀλλὰ πᾶν ὅλον ληπτέον, εἰ ποτε
 λαμβάνοις, λαμβάνων οὐ τοῦ χρόνου τὸ ἀδιαίρετον,
 ἀλλὰ τοῦ αἰῶνος τὴν ζωὴν τὴν οὐκ ἐκ πολλῶν
 30 χρόνων, ἀλλὰ τὴν ἐκ παντός χρόνου πᾶσαν
 ὁμοί.

8. Εἰ δέ τις λέγοι τὴν μνήμην τῶν παρεληλυθό-
 των ἐν τῷ ἐνεστηκότι μένουσαν παρέχεσθαι τὸ
 πλέον τῷ πλείονα χρόνον ἐν τῷ εὐδαιμονεῖν
 γεγενημένῳ, τί ἂν τὸ τῆς μνήμης λέγοι; Ἡ γὰρ
 222

unreasonable to count time even when it does not
 exist any longer, since we reckon the number of
 things which have been there in the past but no
 longer exist, the dead for instance; but it is un-
 reasonable to say that well-being which no longer
 exists is more than that which is present. For well-
 being requires to persist, but time over and above the
 present admits of existing no longer. In general
 extension of time means the dispersal of a single
 present. That is why it is properly called "the
 image of eternity,"¹ since it intends to bring about
 the disappearance of what is permanent in eternity
 by its own dispersion. So if it takes from eternity
 what would be permanent in it and makes it its own,
 it destroys it—it is preserved, up to a point, by
 eternity, in one way, but destroyed if it passes
 altogether into temporal dispersion. So if well-
 being is a matter of good life, obviously the life
 concerned must be that of real being; for this is the
 best. So it must not be counted by time but by
 eternity; and this is neither more nor less nor of any
 extension, but is a "this here," unextended and
 timeless. So one must not join being to non-being or
 time or everlastingness of time to eternity nor must
 one extend the unextended; one must take it all as a
 whole, if one takes it at all, and apprehend, not the
 undividedness of time but the life of eternity, which is
 not made up of many times, but is all together from
 the whole of time.

8. But if someone says that the memory of the past
 remaining in the present gives more to the man who
 has been longer in a state of well-being, what does he
 mean by memory? If it is memory of previous

¹ Plato, *Timaeus* 37D5.

5 φρονήσεως μνήμη τῆς πρόσθεν γεγενημένης, ὥστε φρονιμώτερον ἂν λέγοι καὶ οὐκ ἂν τιμῶι τὴν ὑπόθεσιν· ἢ τῆς ἡδονῆς τὴν μνήμην, ὥσπερ πολλῆς περιχαρίας δεομένου τοῦ εὐδαίμονος καὶ οὐκ ἀρκουμένου τῇ παρουσίᾳ. Καίτοι τί ἂν ἡδὺ ἢ μνήμη τοῦ ἡδέος ἔχοι; Ὡσπερ ἂν, εἰ μνημονεύοι
 10 τις ὅτι ἐχθὲς ἐπὶ ὄψῳ ἦσθη· ἢ εἰς δέκατον ἔτος ἔτι ἂν εἶη γελιούτερος· τὸ δὲ τῆς φρονήσεως· ὅτι πέρυσιν ἐφρόνου.

9. Εἰ δὲ τῶν καλῶν εἶη ἡ μνήμη, πῶς οὐκ ἐνταῦθα λέγοιτο ἂν τι; Ἄλλὰ ἀνθρώπου ἐστὶ τοῦτο ἐλλείποντος τοῖς καλοῖς ἐν τῷ παρόντι καὶ τῷ μὴ ἔχειν νυνὶ ζητοῦντος τὴν μνήμην τῶν γεγενημένων.

10. Ἄλλ' ὁ πολὺς χρόνος πολλὰς ποιεῖ καλὰς πράξεις, ὧν ἄμοιρος ὁ πρὸς ὀλίγον εὐδαίμων· εἰ δεῖ λέγειν ὅλως εὐδαίμονα τὸν οὐ διὰ πολλῶν τῶν καλῶν. Ἡ δὲ ἐκ πολλῶν τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν καὶ
 5 χρόνων καὶ πράξεων λέγει, ἐκ τῶν μηκέτι ὄντων ἀλλ' ἐκ τῶν παρεληλυθότων καὶ ἐνός τινος τοῦ παρόντος τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν συνίστησι. Διὸ κατὰ τὸ παρὸν ἐθέμεθα τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν, εἶτα ἐζητοῦμεν εἰ μᾶλλον <ἐστὶ> τὸ ἐν πλείονι εὐδαιμονῆσαι [μᾶλλον ἐστὶ]. Τοῦτο οὖν ζητητέον, εἰ ταῖς πράξεσι ταῖς πλείοσι
 10 πλεονεκτεῖ τὸ ἐν πολλῷ χρόνῳ εὐδαιμονεῖν. Πρῶτον μὲν οὖν ἔστι καὶ μὴ ἐν πράξεσι γενόμενον εὐδαιμονεῖν καὶ οὐκ ἔλαττον ἀλλὰ μᾶλλον τοῦ πεπραγότος· ἔπειτα αἱ πράξεις οὐκ ἐξ αὐτῶν τὸ
 224

virtue and intelligence, he will be saying that the man is more virtuous and intelligent [not better off] and so will not be keeping to the point; if it is memory of pleasure, he will be representing the man in a state of well-being as needing a great deal of extra enjoyment and not being satisfied with what he has. And besides what pleasure is there in the memory of pleasantness—for instance, if someone remembers that yesterday he enjoyed some nice food? And if it was ten years ago that he enjoyed it, he would be even more ridiculous. The same applies to the memory that one was virtuous and intelligent last year.

9. But if it is memory of excellence that is in question, is there not some sense in this? This is the idea of a man whose life is without excellence in the present, and because he has not got it now is seeking for memories of past excellences.

10. But length of time brings many excellent actions, in which the man who has only been well off for a short time has no share; if indeed we can call anyone well off who is not so as the result of much well-doing. Anyone who says that the state of well-being is produced by many times and actions is putting it together out of pieces which no longer exist but are past and one which is present. That is why we started by positing well-being in the present, and then enquired whether longer duration of well-being meant an increase. So we must enquire whether well-being which lasts for a long time is increased by a greater number of actions. First of all, it is possible for someone who is not active to be well off, and better off than the active man; then, actions do not produce goodness of themselves, but

εὖ διδάσκειν, ἀλλ' αἱ διαθέσεις καὶ τὰς πράξεις
 καλὰς ποιοῦσι καρπούται τε ὁ φρόνιμος τὸ ἀγαθὸν
 15 καὶ πράττων, οὐχ ὅτι πράττει οὐδ' ἐκ τῶν συμβαι-
 νόντων, ἀλλ' ἐξ οὗ ἔχει. Ἐπεὶ καὶ ἡ σωτηρία
 τῆς πατρίδος γένοιτο ἂν καὶ παρὰ φαύλου, καὶ τὸ
 ἐπὶ σωτηρία τῆς πατρίδος ἡδὺ καὶ ἄλλου πράξαντος
 γένοιτο ἂν αὐτῷ. Οὐ τοίνυν τοῦτό ἐστι τὸ ποιοῦν
 τὴν τοῦ εὐδαιμόνου ἡδονήν, ἀλλ' ἡ ἕξις καὶ τὴν
 20 εὐδαιμονίαν καὶ εἴ τι ἡδὺ δι' αὐτὴν ποιεῖ. Τὸ δὲ
 ἐν ταῖς πράξεσι τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν τίθεσθαι ἐν τοῖς
 ἕξω τῆς ἀρετῆς καὶ τῆς ψυχῆς ἐστι τιθέντος· ἡ
 γὰρ ἐνέργεια τῆς ψυχῆς ἐν τῷ φρονεῖν καὶ ἐν
 ἑαυτῇ ὡδὲ ἐνεργῆσαι. Καὶ τοῦτο τὸ εὐδαιμόνως.

it is men's dispositions which make actions excellent,
 and the wise and good man gets the benefit of good-
 ness in his action, not from the fact that he acts nor
 the circumstances of his action, but from what he
 has. Even a bad man can save his country; and the
 good man's pleasure that his country is saved will be
 there even if someone else saves it. So it is not this
 which causes the pleasure of well-being; it is one's
 inner state which produces both well-being and any
 pleasure that results from it. To place well-being
 in actions is to locate it in something outside virtue
 and the soul; the activity of the soul lies in thought,
 and action of this kind within itself; and this is the
 state of well-being.

I. 6. ON BEAUTY

Introductory Note

THIS treatise is the first in Porphyry's chronological order (which does not necessarily mean that it was the first which Plotinus wrote). It has been perhaps the best known and most read treatise in the *Enneads*, both in ancient and modern times. It should be read with the later treatise *On the Intelligible Beauty* (V. 8). The two together give a fairly complete view of Plotinus's most original and important aesthetic philosophy and of how he understands the relationship of physical to moral beauty and of both to their origin in the intelligible beauty of the World of Forms and its principle, the Good. The object of the treatise *On Beauty*, as becomes clear in the later chapters, is not to provide its readers with an aesthetic philosophy but to exhort them to ascend through all the visible and invisible beauties of derived reality to the source of all beauty, the Good, on that journey of the mind to God which was always Plotinus's main concern.

Synopsis

What is it that makes things beautiful? We will start our enquiry by considering the beauty of bodies. The Stoic view that it is entirely a matter of good proportion will not do (ch. 1). It is due to the presence of form from the intelligible world (ch. 2) and we recognise and appreciate it by our inward knowledge of intelligible form (ch. 3). The beauty of virtue (ch. 4). It is the beauty of true reality in its transcendent purity, and its opposite, moral ugliness, is due to admixture with body (ch. 5). We attain to it by purifying ourselves (ch. 6). The supreme and absolute beauty, the Good (ch. 7). The way to it (ch. 8). The power of inner sight and how to develop it (ch. 9).

I. 6. (1) ΠΕΡΙ ΤΟΥ ΚΑΛΟΥ

1. Τὸ καλὸν ἔστι μὲν ἐν ὄψει πλεῖστον, ἔστι δ' ἐν ἀκοαῖς κατὰ τε λόγων συνθέσεις, ἔστι δὲ καὶ ἐν μουσικῇ καὶ ἀπάσῃ· καὶ γὰρ μέλη καὶ ῥυθμοὶ εἰσι καλοὶ· ἔστι δὲ καὶ προιοῦσι πρὸς τὸ ἄνω
 5 ἀπὸ τῆς αἰσθήσεως καὶ ἐπιτηδεύματα καλὰ καὶ πράξεις καὶ ἔξεις καὶ ἐπιστήμαί τε καὶ τῶν ἀρετῶν κάλλος. Εἰ δέ τι καὶ πρὸ τούτων, αὐτὸ δεῖξει. Τί οὖν δὴ τὸ πεποιηκὸς καὶ τὰ σώματα καλὰ φαντάζεσθαι καὶ τὴν ἀκοὴν ἐπινεύειν ταῖς φωναῖς, ὡς καλαί; Καὶ ὅσα ἐφεξῆς ψυχῆς ἔχεται,
 10 πῶς ποτε πάντα καλά; Καὶ ἄρα γε ἐνὶ καὶ τῷ αὐτῷ καλῷ τὰ πάντα, ἢ ἄλλο μὲν ἐν σώματι τὸ κάλλος, ἄλλο δὲ ἐν ἄλλῳ; Καὶ τίνα ποτὲ ταῦτα ἢ τοῦτο; Τὰ μὲν γὰρ οὐ παρ' αὐτῶν τῶν ὑποκειμένων καλά, οἷον τὰ σώματα, ἀλλὰ μεθέξει, τὰ δὲ κάλλη αὐτά, ὡσπερ ἀρετῆς ἢ φύσεως. Σώματα μὲν
 15 γὰρ τὰ αὐτὰ ὅτε μὲν καλά, ὅτε δὲ οὐ καλά φαίνεται, ὡς ἄλλου ὄντος τοῦ σώματα εἶναι, ἄλλου δὲ τοῦ καλά. Τί οὖν ἔστι τοῦτο τὸ παρὸν τοῖς σώμασι; Πρῶτον γὰρ περὶ τούτου σκεπτέον. Τί οὖν ἔστιν, ὃ κινεῖ τὰς ὄψεις τῶν θεωμένων καὶ ἐπιστρέφει πρὸς αὐτὸ καὶ ἔλκει καὶ εὐφραίνεισθαι τῇ θεᾷ ποιεῖ; Τοῦτο γὰρ εὐρόντες τάχ' ἂν
 20 ἐπιβάθρα αὐτῷ χρώμενοι καὶ τὰ ἄλλα θεασαί-

¹ Cf. Plato, *Symposium* 211C3.

I. 6. ON BEAUTY

1. Beauty is mostly in sight, but it is to be found too in things we hear, in combinations of words and also in music, and in all music [not only in songs]; for tunes and rhythms are certainly beautiful: and for those who are advancing upwards from sense-perception ways of life and actions and characters and intellectual activities are beautiful, and there is the beauty of virtue. If there is any beauty prior to these, it itself will reveal it.

Very well then, what is it which makes us imagine that bodies are beautiful and attracts our hearing to sounds because of their beauty? And how are all the things which depend on soul beautiful? Are they all made beautiful by one and the same beauty or is there one beautifulness in bodies and a different one in other things? And what are they, or what is it? Some things, bodies for instance, are not beautiful from the nature of the objects themselves, but by participation, others are beauties themselves, like the nature of virtue. The same bodies appear sometimes beautiful, sometimes not beautiful, so that their being bodies is one thing, their being beautiful another. What is this principle, then, which is present in bodies? We ought to consider this first. What is it that attracts the gaze of those who look at something, and turns and draws them to it and makes them enjoy the sight? If we find this perhaps we can use it as a stepping-stone¹ and get

μεθα. Λέγεται μὲν δὴ παρὰ πάντων, ὡς εἰπεῖν,
 ὡς συμμετρία τῶν μερῶν πρὸς ἄλληλα καὶ πρὸς
 τὸ ὅλον τὸ τε τῆς εὐχροίας προσθεθὲν τὸ πρὸς τὴν
 ὄψιν κάλλος ποιεῖ καὶ ἔστιν αὐτοῖς καὶ ὅλως τοῖς
 ἄλλοις πᾶσι τὸ καλοῖς εἶναι τὸ συμμετροῖς καὶ
 25 μεμετρημένοις ὑπάρχειν· οἷς ἀπλοῦν οὐδέν, μόνον
 δὲ τὸ σύνθετον ἐξ ἀνάγκης καλὸν ὑπάρξει· τό τε
 ὅλον ἔσται καλὸν αὐτοῖς, τὰ δὲ μέρη ἕκαστα οὐχ
 ἔξει παρ' ἑαυτῶν τὸ καλὰ εἶναι, πρὸς δὲ τὸ ὅλον
 συντελοῦντα, ἵνα καλὸν ἦ· καίτοι δεῖ, εἴπερ ὅλον,
 30 καὶ τὰ μέρη καλὰ εἶναι· οὐ γὰρ δὴ ἐξ αἰσχροῦν,
 ἀλλὰ πάντα κατεληφέναι τὸ κάλλος. Τὰ τε
 χρώματα αὐτοῖς τὰ καλὰ, οἶον καὶ τὸ τοῦ ἡλίου
 φῶς, ἀπλᾶ ὄντα, οὐκ ἐκ συμμετρίας ἔχοντα τὸ
 κάλλος ἔξω ἔσται τοῦ καλὰ εἶναι. Χρωσός τε δὴ
 πῶς καλόν; Καὶ νυκτὸς ἢ ἀστραπὴ ἢ ἄστρα
 35 ὁρᾶσθαι τῷ καλὰ; Ἐπί τε τῶν φωνῶν ὡσαύτως
 τὸ ἀπλοῦν οἰχήσεται, καίτοι ἐκάστου φθόγγου
 πολλαχῆ τῶν ἐν τῷ ὅλῳ καλῷ καλοῦ καὶ αὐτοῦ
 ὄντος. Ὅταν δὲ δὴ τῆς αὐτῆς συμμετρίας
 μενούσης ὅτε μὲν καλὸν τὸ αὐτὸ πρόσωπον, ὅτε
 δὲ μὴ φαίνεται, πῶς οὐκ ἄλλο δεῖ ἐπὶ τῷ συμ-
 40 μέτρῳ λέγειν τὸ καλὸν εἶναι, καὶ τὸ σύμμετρον
 καλὸν εἶναι δι' ἄλλο; Εἰ δὲ δὴ μεταβαίνοντες καὶ
 ἐπὶ τὰ ἐπιτηδεύματα καὶ τοὺς λόγους τοὺς καλοὺς
 τὸ σύμμετρον καὶ ἐπ' αὐτῶν αἰτιῶντο, τίς ἂν

¹ That good proportion was an essential part of beauty was a general Greek conviction, accepted by Plato and Aristotle; but it was the Stoics who defined beauty strictly and exclusively in these terms, cp. Cicero, *Tusculans* IV. 31, *et ut corporis est quaedam apta figura membrorum cum coloris*

a sight of the rest. Nearly everyone says that it is good proportion of the parts to each other and to the whole, with the addition of good colour,¹ which produces visible beauty, and that with the objects of sight and generally with everything else, being beautiful is being well-proportioned and measured. On this theory nothing single and simple but only a composite thing will have any beauty. It will be the whole which is beautiful, and the parts will not have the property of beauty by themselves, but will contribute to the beauty of the whole. But if the whole is beautiful the parts must be beautiful too; a beautiful whole can certainly not be composed of ugly parts; all the parts must have beauty. For these people, too, beautiful colours, and the light of the sun as well, since they are simple and do not derive their beautifulness from good proportion, will be excluded from beauty. And how do they think gold manages to be beautiful? And what makes lightning in the night and stars beautiful to see? And in sounds in the same way the simple will be banished, though often in a composition which is beautiful as a whole each separate sound is beautiful. And when, though the same good proportion is there all the time, the same face sometimes appears beautiful and sometimes does not, surely we must say that being beautiful is something else over and above good proportion, and good proportion is beautiful because of something else? But if when these people pass on to ways of life and beautiful expressions of thought they allege good proportion as the cause of

quadam suavitate eaque dicitur pulchritudo... repeated by S. Augustine with only slight variation in *De Civitate Dei* XXII. 19.

λέγοιτο ἐν ἐπιτηδεύμασι συμμετρία καλοῖς ἢ νόμοις ἢ μαθήμασιν ἢ ἐπιστήμασι; Θεωρήματα
 45 γὰρ σύμμετρα πρὸς ἄλληλα πῶς ἂν εἴη; Εἰ δ' ὅτι σύμφωνά ἐστι, καὶ κακῶν ἔσται ὁμολογία τε καὶ συμφωνία. Τῷ γὰρ τὴν σωφροσύνην ἡλιθιότητα εἶναι τὸ τὴν δικαιοσύνην γενναίαν εἶναι εὐθήθειαν σύμφωνον καὶ συνωδὸν καὶ ὁμολογεῖ πρὸς ἄλληλα. Κάλλος μὲν οὖν ψυχῆς
 50 ἀρετὴ πάσα καὶ κάλλος ἀληθινώτερον ἢ τὰ πρόσθεν· ἀλλὰ πῶς σύμμετρα; Οὔτε γὰρ ὡς μεγέθη οὔτε ὡς ἀριθμὸς σύμμετρα· καὶ πλείονων μερῶν τῆς ψυχῆς ὄντων, ἐν ποίῳ γὰρ λόγῳ ἢ σύνθεσις ἢ ἡ κράσις τῶν μερῶν ἢ τῶν θεωρημάτων; Τὸ δὲ τοῦ νοῦ κάλλος μονομένου τί ἂν εἴη;

2. Πάλιν οὖν ἀναλαβόντες λέγωμεν τί δῆτ' ἔστι τὸ ἐν τοῖς σώμασι καλὸν πρῶτον. Ἔστι μὲν γάρ τι καὶ βολῇ τῇ πρώτῃ αἰσθητὸν γινόμενον καὶ ἡ ψυχὴ ὡσπερ συνείσα λέγει καὶ ἐπιγνοῦσα
 5 ἀποδέχεται καὶ οἶον συναρμόττεται. Πρὸς δὲ τὸ αἰσχρὸν προσβαλοῦσα ἀνίλλεται καὶ ἀρνεῖται καὶ ἀνανεύει ἀπ' αὐτοῦ οὐ συμφωνοῦσα καὶ ἀλλοτριουμένη. Φαμὲν δὴ, ὡς τὴν φύσιν οὐσα ὅπερ ἔστι καὶ πρὸς τῆς κρείττονος ἐν τοῖς οὐσιν οὐσίας, ὅ τι ἂν ἴδη συγγενὲς ἢ ἴχνος τοῦ συγγενοῦς,
 10 χιίρει τε καὶ διεπιτόηται καὶ ἀναφέρει πρὸς ἑαυτὴν καὶ ἀναμνησκεται ἑαυτῆς καὶ τῶν ἑαυτῆς. Τίς οὖν ὁμοιότης τοῖς τῆδε πρὸς τὰ ἐκεῖ καλά;

Cicero, in the *Tusculans* passage quoted above, goes on to draw a precise parallel between the beauty of body, which consists in good proportion with pleasant colour, and beauty of soul.

beauty in these too,¹ what can be meant by good proportion in beautiful ways of life or laws or studies or branches of knowledge? How can speculations be well-proportioned in relation to each other? If it is because they agree, there can be concord and agreement between bad ideas. The statement that "righteousness is a fine sort of silliness" agrees with and is in tune with the saying that "morality is stupidity";² the two fit perfectly. Again, every sort of virtue is a beauty of the soul, a truer beauty than those mentioned before; but how is virtue well-proportioned? Not like magnitudes or a number. We grant that the soul has several parts, but what is the formula for the composition or mixture in the soul of parts or speculations? And what [on this theory] will the beauty of the intellect alone by itself be?

2. So let us go back to the beginning and state what the primary beauty in bodies really is. It is something which we become aware of even at the first glance; the soul speaks of it as if it understood it, recognises and welcomes it and as it were adapts itself to it. But when it encounters the ugly it shrinks back and rejects it and turns away from it and is out of tune and alienated from it. Our explanation of this is that the soul, since it is by nature what it is and is related to the higher kind of reality in the realm of being, when it sees something akin to it or a trace of its kindred reality, is delighted and thrilled and returns to itself and remembers itself and its own possessions. What likeness, then, is there between beautiful things here and there? If

² Cp. Plato, *Republic* 348C11-12 and 560D2-3.

καὶ γάρ, εἰ ὁμοιότης, ὅμοια μὲν ἔστω· πῶς δὲ
καλὰ κάκεῖνα καὶ ταῦτα; Μετοχῇ εἶδους φαιμέν
ταῦτα. Πᾶν μὲν γὰρ τὸ ἄμορφον πεφυκὸς μορφήν
15 καὶ εἶδος δέχεσθαι ἄμοιρον ὄν λόγου καὶ εἶδους
αἰσχροὺν καὶ ἔξω θείου λόγου καὶ τὸ πάντη
αἰσχροὺν τοῦτο. Αἰσχροὺν δὲ καὶ τὸ μὴ κρατηθὲν
ὑπὸ μορφῆς καὶ λόγου οὐκ ἀνασχομένης τῆς ὕλης
τὸ πάντη κατὰ τὸ εἶδος μορφοῦσθαι. Προσιὸν
οὖν τὸ εἶδος τὸ μὲν ἐκ πολλῶν ἐσόμενον μερῶν ἐν
20 συνθέσει συνέταξέ τε καὶ εἰς μίαν συντέλειαν
ἤγαγε καὶ ἐν τῇ ὁμολογίᾳ πεποίηκεν, ἐπεὶ περ ἐν
ἦν αὐτὸ ἐν τε ἔδει τὸ μορφοῦμενον εἶναι ὡς
δυνατὸν αὐτῷ ἐκ πολλῶν ὄντι. Ἰδρυται οὖν ἐπ'
αὐτοῦ τὸ κάλλος ἤδη εἰς ἐν συναχθέντος καὶ τοῖς
μέρεσι διδόν ἑαυτὸ καὶ τοῖς ὅλοις. Ὅταν δὲ ἐν
25 τι καὶ ὁμοιομερὲς καταλάβῃ, εἰς ὅλον δίδωσι τὸ
αὐτό· ὅλον ὅτε μὲν πάσι οἰκία μετὰ τῶν μερῶν,
ὅτε δὲ ἐνὶ λίθῳ διδοίη τις φύσις τὸ κάλλος, τῇ
δὲ ἡ τέχνη. Οὕτω μὲν δὴ τὸ καλὸν σῶμα γίνεται
λόγου ἀπὸ θείων ἐλθόντος κοινωνία.

3. Γινώσκει δὲ αὐτὸ ἢ ἐπ' αὐτῷ δύναμις
τεταγμένη, ἧς οὐδὲν κυριώτερον εἰς κρίσιν τῶν
ἑαυτῆς, ὅταν καὶ ἡ ἄλλη συνεπικρίνη ψυχῆ, τάχα
δὲ καὶ αὕτη λέγη συναρμόττουσα τῷ παρ' αὐτῇ
εἶδει κάκεῖνω πρὸς τὴν κρίσιν χρωμένη ὡς περ
238

there is a likeness, let us agree that they are alike.
But how are both the things in that world and the
things in this beautiful? We maintain that the
things in this world are beautiful by participating in
form; for every shapeless thing which is naturally
capable of receiving shape and form is ugly and out-
side the divine formative power as long as it has no
share in formative power and form. This is abso-
lute ugliness. But a thing is also ugly when it is
not completely dominated by shape and formative
power, since its matter has not submitted to be
completely shaped according to the form. The
form, then, approaches and composes that which is to
come into being from many parts into a single
ordered whole; it brings it into a completed unity
and makes it one by agreement of its parts; for since
it is one itself, that which is shaped by it must also
be one as far as a thing can be which is composed of
many parts. So beauty rests upon the material thing
when it has been brought into unity, and gives itself
to parts and wholes alike. When it comes upon
something that is one and composed of like parts it
gives the same gift to the whole; as sometimes art
gives beauty to a whole house with its parts, and
sometimes a nature gives beauty to a single stone.
So then the beautiful body comes into being by
sharing in a formative power which comes from the
divine forms.

3. The power ordained for the purpose recognises
this, and there is nothing more effective for judging
its own subject-matter, when the rest of the soul
judges along with it; or perhaps the rest of the soul
too pronounces the judgement by fitting the beauti-
ful body to the form in itself and using this for judg-

ὁ κανόνι τοῦ εὐθέος. Πῶς δὲ συμφωνεῖ τὸ περὶ
 σῶμα τῷ πρὸ σώματος; Πῶς δὲ τὴν ἔξω οἰκίαν
 τῷ ἔνδον οἰκίας εἶδει ὁ οἰκοδομικὸς συναρμόσας
 καλὴν εἶναι λέγει; Ἡ ὅτι ἐστὶ τὸ ἔξω, εἰ χωρίσειας
 τοὺς λίθους, τὸ ἔνδον εἶδος μερισθὲν τῷ ἔξω ὕλης
 ὄγκῳ, ἀμερὲς ὃν ἐν πολλοῖς φανταζόμενον.
 10 Ὅταν οὖν καὶ ἡ αἴσθησις τὸ ἐν σώμασιν εἶδος
 ἴδῃ συνδησάμενον καὶ κρατήσαν τῆς φύσεως τῆς
 ἐναντίας ἀμόρφου οὐσης καὶ μορφῆν ἐπὶ ἄλλαις
 μορφαῖς ἐκπρεπῶς ἐποχουμένην, συνελούσα ἀθρόον
 αὐτὸ τὸ πολλαχῆ ἀνήνεγκέ τε καὶ εἰσήγαγεν εἰς
 τὸ εἶσω ἀμερὲς ἤδη καὶ ἔδωκε τῷ ἔνδον σύμφωνον
 15 καὶ συναρμόττον καὶ φίλον· οἷα ἀνδρὶ ἀγαθῷ
 προσήνεκός ἐπιφανόμενον ἀρετῆς ἔχνος ἐν νέῳ
 συμφωνοῦν τῷ ἀληθεῖ τῷ ἔνδον. Τὸ δὲ τῆς χροῆας
 κάλλος ἀπλοῦν μορφῆ καὶ κρατήσει τοῦ ἐν ὕλη
 σκοτεινοῦ παρουσίᾳ φωτὸς ἀσωμάτου καὶ λόγου
 καὶ εἶδους ὄντος. Ὅθεν καὶ τὸ πῦρ αὐτὸ παρὰ
 20 τὰ ἄλλα σώματα καλόν, ὅτι τάξιν εἶδους πρὸς τὰ
 ἄλλα υποχεῖται ἔχει, ἅν μὲν τῇ θέσει, λεπτότατον
 δὲ τῶν ἄλλων σωμάτων, ὡς ἐγγύς ὢν τοῦ ἀσωμά-
 του, μόνον δὲ αὐτὸ οὐκ εἰσδεχόμενον τὰ ἄλλα· τὰ
 δ' ἄλλα δέχεται αὐτό. Θερμαίνεται γὰρ ἐκεῖνα,
 οὐ ψύχεται δὲ τοῦτο, κέχρωσταί τε πρῶτως, τὰ δ'
 25 ἄλλα παρὰ τούτου τὸ εἶδος τῆς χροῆας λαμβάνει.
 Λάμπει οὖν καὶ στίλβει, ὡς ἂν εἶδος ὢν. Τὸ δὲ

ing beauty as we use a ruler for judging straightness.
 But how does the bodily agree with that which is
 before body? How does the architect declare the
 house outside beautiful by fitting it to the form of
 house within him? The reason is that the house out-
 side, apart from the stones, is the inner form divided
 by the external mass of matter, without parts but
 appearing in many parts. When sense-perception,
 then, sees the form in bodies binding and mastering
 the nature opposed to it, which is shapeless, and
 shape riding gloriously upon other shapes, it gathers
 into one that which appears dispersed and brings it
 back and takes it in, now without parts, to the soul's
 interior and presents it to that which is within as
 something in tune with it and fitting it and dear to
 it; just as when a good man sees a trace of virtue in
 the young, which is in tune with his own inner truth,
 the sight delights him. And the simple beauty of
 colour comes about by shape and the mastery of the
 darkness in matter by the presence of light which is
 incorporeal¹ and formative power and form. This
 is why fire itself is more beautiful than all other
 bodies, because it has the rank of form in relation to
 the other elements; it is above them in place and is
 the finest and subtlest of all bodies, being close to the
 incorporeal.² It alone does not admit the others;
 but the others admit it: for it warms them but is
 not cooled itself; it has colour primarily and all
 other things take the form of colour from it. So it
 shines and glitters as if it was a form. The inferior

¹ For Plotinus light is the incorporeal ἐνέργεια of the luminous body; cp. IV. 5, chs. 6 and 7.

² This seems to be a Platonic adaptation of the Stoic doctrine of fire as the divine formative principle.

μη κρατοῦν ἐξίτηλον τῷ φωτὶ γινόμενον οὐκέτι
καλόν, ὡς ἂν τοῦ εἶδους τῆς χροῆς οὐ μετέχον
ἔλου. Αἱ δὲ ἁρμονίαι αἱ ἐν ταῖς φωναῖς αἱ
ἀφανεῖς τὰς φανεράς ποιήσασαι καὶ ταύτη τὴν
30 ψυχὴν σύνεσιν καλοῦ λαβεῖν ἐποίησαν, ἐν ἄλλῳ τὸ
αὐτὸ δεῖξασαι. Παρακολουθεῖ δὲ ταῖς αἰσθηταῖς
μετρεῖσθαι ἀριθμοῖς ἐν λόγῳ οὐ παντί, ἀλλ' ὅς
ἂν ἢ δουλεύων εἰς ποιήσιν εἶδους εἰς τὸ κρατεῖν.
Καὶ περὶ μὲν τῶν ἐν αἰσθήσει καλῶν, ἃ δὴ εἶδωλα
35 καὶ σκιαὶ οἶον ἐκδραμοῦσαι εἰς ὕλην ἐλθούσαι
ἐκόσμησάν τε καὶ διεπτόησαν φανεῖσαι, τσαῦτα.
4. Περὶ δὲ τῶν προσωτέρω καλῶν, ἃ οὐκέτι
αἰσθησις ὄραν εἴληχε, ψυχὴ δὲ ἄνευ ὀργάνων ὄρα
καὶ λέγει, ἀναβαίνοντας δεῖ θεάσασθαι καταλιπόν-
τας τὴν αἰσθησιν κάτω περιμένειν. Ὡσπερ δὲ
5 ἐπὶ τῶν τῆς αἰσθήσεως καλῶν οὐκ ἦν περὶ αὐτῶν
λέγειν τοῖς μήτε ἑωρακόσι μήθ' ὡς καλῶν ἀντει-
λημμένοις, οἶον εἴ τινες ἐξ ἀρχῆς τυφλοὶ γεγονότες,
τὸν αὐτὸν τρόπον οὐδὲ περὶ κάλλους ἐπιτηδευμάτων
τοῖς μὴ ἀποδεξαμένοις τὸ τῶν ἐπιτηδευμάτων καὶ
ἐπιστημῶν καὶ τῶν ἄλλων τῶν τοιούτων κάλλος,
10 οὐδὲ περὶ ἀρετῆς φέγγους τοῖς μηδὲ φαντασθεῖσιν
ὡς καλὸν τὸ τῆς δικαιοσύνης καὶ σωφροσύνης
πρόσωπον, καὶ οὔτε ἔσπερος οὔτε ἑῷος

¹ τὸ μη κρατοῦν in this sense is very odd, and unparalleled, but not quite impossible. I take the point of the sentence to be that Plotinus had noticed that dull, ugly colours sometimes look uglier and not more beautiful in a bright light and is trying to explain this in terms of his own theory; the matter of the thing is incapable of receiving enough of the form of colour which the light gives it to look beautiful. Another

thing¹ which becomes faint and dull by the fire's light is not beautiful any more, as not participating in the whole form of colour. The melodies in sounds, too, the imperceptible ones which make the perceptible ones, make the soul conscious of beauty in the same way, showing the same thing in another medium. It is proper to sensible melodies to be measured by numbers, not according to any and every sort of formula but one which serves for the production of form so that it may dominate. So much, then, for the beauties in the realm of sense, images and shadows which, so to speak, sally out and come into matter and adorn it and excite us when they appear.

4. But about the beauties beyond, which it is no more the part of sense to see, but the soul sees them and speaks of them without instruments—we must go up to them and contemplate them and leave sense to stay down below. Just as in the case of the beauties of sense it is impossible for those who have not seen them or grasped their beauty—those born blind, for instance—to speak about them, in the same way only those can speak about the beauty of ways of life who have accepted the beauty of ways of life and kinds of knowledge and everything else of the sort; and people cannot speak about the splendour of virtue who have never even imagined how fair is the face of justice and moral order; “neither the evening nor the morning star are as

possible translation is “fire that is overcome and vanishes in the sunlight.” This has been suggested by Professor Post, who cites for comparison Plutarch *De Facie in Orbe Lunae* 933 D. It has obviously very much to commend it; my only reason for hesitation about adopting it is that there is nothing about the sun and its relationship to earthly fires in the context.

οὕτω καλά. Ἀλλὰ δεῖ ἰδόντας μὲν εἶναι ᾧ ψυχῇ
 τὰ τοιαῦτα βλέπει, ἰδόντας δὲ ἡσθῆναι καὶ
 ἔκπληξιν λαβεῖν καὶ πτοηθῆναι πολλῶ μᾶλλον ἢ
 15 ἐν τοῖς πρόσθεν, ἅτε ἀληθινῶν ἤδη ἐφαπτομένων.
 Ταῦτα γὰρ δεῖ τὰ πάθη γενέσθαι περὶ τὸ ὅ τι ἂν
 ᾗ καλόν, θάμβος καὶ ἔκπληξιν ἠδεῖαν καὶ πόθον
 καὶ ἔρωτα καὶ πτόησιν μεθ' ἡδονῆς. Ἔστι δὲ
 ταῦτα παθεῖν καὶ πάσχουσιν αἱ ψυχαὶ καὶ περὶ τὰ
 μὴ ὁρώμενα πάσαι μὲν, ὡς εἶπεν, μᾶλλον μέντοι
 20 αἱ τούτων ἐρωτικώτεραι, ὥσπερ καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν
 σωμάτων πάντες μὲν ὁρῶσι, κεντοῦνται δ' οὐκ
 ἴσα, ἀλλ' εἰσὶν οἱ μάλιστα, οἱ καὶ λέγονται ἐράν.
 5. Τῶν δὴ καὶ περὶ τὰ ἐν οὐκ αἰσθήσει ἐρωτικῶν
 ἀναπυθάνεσθαι δεῖ τί πάσχετε περὶ τὰ λεγόμενα
 ἐπιτηδεύματα καλὰ καὶ τρόπους καλοὺς καὶ ἡθῆ
 σώφρονα καὶ ὅλως ἔργα ἀρετῆς καὶ διαθέσεις καὶ
 5 τὸ τῶν ψυχῶν κάλλος; Καὶ ἑαυτοὺς δὲ ἰδόντες τὰ
 ἔνδον καλοὺς τί πάσχετε; Καὶ πῶς ἀναβακχεύεσθε
 καὶ ἀνακινεῖσθε καὶ ἑαυτοῖς συνείναι ποθεῖτε
 συλλεξάμενοι αὐτοὺς ἀπὸ τῶν σωμάτων; Πάσχουσι
 μὲν γὰρ ταῦτα οἱ ὄντως ἐρωτικοί. Τί δέ ἐστι,
 10 περὶ ὃ ταῦτα πάσχουσιν; Οὐ σχῆμα, οὐ χρῶμα,
 οὐ μέγεθός τι, ἀλλὰ περὶ ψυχὴν, ἀχρώματον
 μὲν αὐτήν, ἀχρώματον δὲ καὶ τὴν σωφροσύνην
 ἔχουσαν καὶ τὸ ἄλλο τῶν ἀρετῶν φέγγος, ὅταν
 ἢ ἐν αὐτοῖς ἴδητε, ἢ καὶ ἐν ἄλλῳ θεάσησθε μέγεθος

¹ Aristotle applies this quotation, probably from the *Melanippe* of Euripides (fr. 486 Nauck), to justice in *Nicomachean Ethics* V. 3. 1129b 28-9. Plotinus recalls the passage again at VI. 6. 6. 39.

² Cp. Plato, *Symposium* 210B-C.

fair."¹ But there must be those who see this beauty by that with which the soul sees things of this sort, and when they see it they must be delighted and overwhelmed and excited much more than by those beauties we spoke of before, since now it is true beauty they are grasping. These experiences must occur whenever there is contact with any sort of beautiful thing, wonder and a shock of delight and longing and passion and a happy excitement. One can have these experiences by contact with invisible beauties, and souls do have them, practically all, but particularly those who are more passionately in love with the invisible, just as with bodies all see them, but all are not stung as sharply, but some, who are called lovers, are most of all.

5. Then we must ask the lovers of that which is outside sense "What do you feel about beautiful ways of life, as we call them, and beautiful habits and well-ordered characters and in general about virtuous activities and dispositions and the beauty of souls?"² What do you feel when you see your own inward beauty?³ How are you stirred to wild exultation, and long to be with yourselves, gathering your selves together away from your bodies?"⁴ For this is what true lovers feel. But what is it which makes them feel like this? Not shape or colour⁴ or any size, but soul, without colour itself and possessing a moral order without colour and possessing all the other light of the virtues; you feel like this when you see, in yourself or in someone else,

³ Socrates prays for "inward beauty" at the end of the *Phaedrus*, 279B9.

⁴ Plato's real being, the World of Forms, is described as "without colour or shape" at *Phaedrus* 247C6.

ψυχῆς καὶ ἦθος δίκαιον καὶ σωφροσύνην καθαρὰν
 καὶ ἀνδρίαν βλοσυρὸν ἔχουσαν πρόσωπον καὶ
 15 σεμνότητα καὶ αἰδῶ ἐπιθέουσαν ἐν ἀτρεμεὶ καὶ
 ἀκύμονι καὶ ἀπαθεί διαθέσει, ἐπὶ πᾶσι δὲ τούτοις
 τὸν θεοειδῆ νοῦν ἐπιλάμποντα. Ταῦτα οὖν ἀγάμε-
 νοι καὶ φιλοῦντες πῶς αὐτὰ λέγομεν καλά; Ἔστι
 μὲν γὰρ καὶ φαίνεται καὶ οὐ μήποτε ὁ ἰδὼν ἄλλο
 20 τι φῆ ἢ τὰ ὄντως ὄντα ταῦτα εἶναι. Τί ὄντα
 ὄντως; Ἡ καλά. Ἄλλ' ἔτι ποθεῖ ὁ λόγος, τί
 ὄντα πεποίηκε τὴν ψυχὴν εἶναι ἐράυμιον· τί τὸ
 ἐπὶ πάσαις ἀρεταῖς διαπρέπον οἶον φῶς; Βούλει
 δὴ καὶ τὰ ἐναντία λαβῶν, τὰ περὶ ψυχὴν αἰσχρο-
 γινόμενα, ἀντιπαραθεῖναι; Τάχα γὰρ ἂν συμβάλ-
 25 λοιτο πρὸς ὃ ζητοῦμεν τὸ αἰσχρὸν ὃ τί ποτέ ἐστι
 καὶ διότι φανέν. Ἔστω δὴ ψυχὴ αἰσχροῦ, ἀκόλα-
 τὸς τε καὶ ἄδικος, πλείστων μὲν ἐπιθυμιῶν
 γέμουσα, πλείστης δὲ ταραχῆς ἐν φόβοις διὰ
 δειλίαν, ἐν φθόνοις διὰ μικροπρέπειαν, πάντα
 φρονούσα ἃ δὴ καὶ φρονεῖ θνητὰ καὶ ταπεινά,
 30 σκολιὰ πανταχοῦ, ἡδονῶν οὐ καθαρῶν φίλη, ζῶσα
 ζωὴν τοῦ ὅτι ἂν πάθη διὰ σώματος ὡς ἡδὺ
 λαβοῦσα αἰσχος. Αὐτὸ τοῦτο τὸ αἰσχος αὐτῇ ἄρα
 οὐ προσγεγονέναι οἶον ἐπακτὸν καλὸν φήσομεν, ὃ
 ἐλωβήσατο μὲν αὐτῇ, πεποίηκε δὲ αὐτὴν ἀκάθαρτον
 καὶ πολλῶ τῷ κακῷ συμπεφυρμένην, οὐδὲ
 35 ζωὴν ἔτι ἔχουσαν οὐδὲ αἰσθησιν καθαρὰν, ἀλλὰ
 τῷ μίγματι τοῦ κακοῦ ἀμυδρῆ τῇ ζωῇ κεχρημένην
 καὶ πολλῶ τῷ θανάτῳ κεκραμένην, οὐκέτι μὲν
 ὀρώσαν ἃ δεῖ ψυχὴν ὀρᾶν, οὐκέτι δὲ ἐωμένην ἐν

¹ The phrase is taken from the description of Ajax advancing to battle in *Iliad* 7. 212.

greatness of soul, a righteous life, a pure morality,
 courage with its noble look,¹ and dignity and modesty
 advancing in a fearless, calm and unperturbed dis-
 position, and the godlike light of intellect shining
 upon all this. We love and delight in these quali-
 ties, but why do we call them beautiful? They
 exist and appear to us and he who sees them can-
 not possibly say anything else except that they are
 what really exists. What does "really exists"
 mean? That they exist as beauties. But the argu-
 ment still requires us to explain why real beings
 make the soul lovable. What is this kind of glorify-
 ing light on all the virtues? Would you like to take
 the opposites, the uglinesses in soul, and contrast
 them with the beauties? Perhaps a consideration of
 what ugliness is and why it appears so will help us
 to find what we are looking for. Suppose, then, an
 ugly soul, dissolute and unjust, full of all lusts, and
 all disturbance, sunk in fears by its cowardice and
 jealousies by its pettiness, thinking mean and mortal
 thoughts as far as it thinks at all, altogether dis-
 torted, loving impure pleasures, living a life which
 consists of bodily sensations and finding delight in
 its ugliness. Shall we not say that its ugliness came
 to it as a "beauty"² brought in from outside, in-
 juring it and making it impure and "mixed with a
 great deal of evil,"³ with its life and perceptions no
 longer pure, but by the admixture of evil living a dim
 life and diluted with a great deal of death, no longer
 seeing what a soul ought to see, no longer left in

² A beauty, that is, to the soul's corrupt perception; its perversion makes it apprehend αἰσχος as καλὸν as well as ἡδύ.

³ From a violently dualistic passage in the *Phaedo* 66B5.

αὐτῇ μένειν τῷ ἔλκεσθαι αἰεὶ πρὸς τὸ ἔξω καὶ τὸ
κάτω καὶ τὸ σκοτεινόν; Ἀκάθαρτος δὴ, οἶμαι,
10 οὐσα καὶ φερομένη πανταχοῦ ὀλκαῖς πρὸς τὰ τῇ
αἰσθήσει προσπίπτοντα, πολὺ τὸ τοῦ σώματος
ἔχουσα ἐγκεκραμένον, τῷ ὑλικῷ πολλῶ συνοῦσα
καὶ εἰς αὐτὴν εἰσδεξαμένη εἶδος ἕτερον ἠλλάξατο
κράσει τῇ πρὸς τὸ χεῖρον· οἶον εἴ τις δὺς εἰς
πηλὸν ἢ βόρβορον τὸ μὲν ὅπερ εἶχε κάλλος μηκέτι
45 προφαῖνοι, τοῦτο δὲ ὀρώτο, ὃ παρὰ τοῦ πηλοῦ ἢ
βορβύρου ἀπεμάξατο· ᾧ δὴ τὸ αἰσχρὸν προσθήκη
τοῦ ἀλλοτρίου προσήθε καὶ ἔργον αὐτῷ, εἴπερ
ἔσται πάλιν καλός, ἀπονημαμένῳ καὶ καθηραμένῳ
ὅπερ ἦν εἶναι. Αἰσχρὰν δὴ ψυχὴν λέγοντες μίξει
καὶ κράσει καὶ νεύσει τῇ πρὸς τὸ σῶμα καὶ ὕλην
50 ὀρθῶς ἂν λέγοιμεν. Καὶ ἔστι τοῦτο αἰσχος ψυχῆ
μὴ καθαρᾷ μηδὲ εἰλικρινεῖ εἶναι ὥσπερ χρυσῷ,
ἀναπεπλήσθαι δὲ τοῦ γεώδους, ὃ εἴ τις ἀφέλοι,
καταλέλειπται χρυσοῦ καὶ ἔστι καλός, μονούμενος
μὲν τῶν ἄλλων, αὐτῷ δὲ συνὼν μόνῳ. Τὸν αὐτὸν
δὴ τρόπον καὶ ψυχῆ, μονωθείσα μὲν ἐπιθυμιῶν,
55 ἄς διὰ τὸ σῶμα ἔχει, ᾧ ἄγαν προσωμίλει,
ἀπαλλαγείσα δὲ τῶν ἄλλων παθῶν καὶ καθαρ-
θείσα ἃ ἔχει σωματωθείσα, μείνασα μόνῃ τὸ
αἰσχρὸν τὸ παρὰ τῆς ἑτέρας φύσεως ἅπαν ἀπεθή-
κατο.

6. Ἔστι γὰρ δὴ, ὡς ὁ παλαιὸς λόγος, καὶ ἡ
σωφροσύνη καὶ ἡ ἀνδρεία καὶ πᾶσα ἀρετὴ
κάθαρσις καὶ ἡ φρόνησις αὐτή. Διὸ καὶ αἱ
τελεταὶ ὀρθῶς αἰνίττονται τὸν μὴ κεκαθαρμέ-
νον καὶ εἰς Ἄιδου κείσεσθαι ἐν βορβόρῳ,
5 ὅτι τὸ μὴ καθαρὸν βορβόρῳ διὰ κάκην φίλον· οἶα

peace in itself because it keeps on being dragged
out, and down, and to the dark? Impure, I think,
and dragged in every direction towards the objects
of sense, with a great deal of bodily stuff mixed into
it, consorting much with matter and receiving a form
other than its own it has changed by a mixture
which makes it worse; just as if anyone gets into
mud or filth he does not show any more the beauty
which he had: what is seen is what he wiped off on
himself from the mud and filth; his ugliness has
come from an addition of alien matter, and his busi-
ness, if he is to be beautiful again, is to wash and clean
himself and so be again what he was before. So we
shall be right in saying that the soul becomes ugly
by mixture and dilution and inclination towards the
body and matter. This is the soul's ugliness, not
being pure and unmixed, like gold, but full of earthi-
ness; if anyone takes the carthy stuff away the gold
is left, and is beautiful, when it is singled out from
other things and is alone by itself. In the same way
the soul too, when it is separated from the lusts
which it has through the body with which it
consorted too much, and freed from its other affec-
tions, purged of what it gets from being embodied,
when it abides alone has put away all the ugliness
which came from the other nature.

6. For, as was said in old times, self-control, and
courage and every virtue, is a purification, and so is
even wisdom itself. This is why the mysteries are
right when they say riddlingly that the man who has
not been purified will lie in mud when he goes to
Hades, because the impure is fond of mud by reason
of its badness; just as pigs, with their unclean

¹ Cp. Plato, *Phaedo* 69C1-6.

δὴ καὶ ὅς, οὐ καθαραὶ τὸ σῶμα, χαίρουσι τῷ
 τοιοῦτῳ. Τί γὰρ ἂν καὶ εἴη σωφροσύνη ἀληθῆς
 ἢ τὸ μὴ προσομιλεῖν ἡδοναῖς τοῦ σώματος,
 φεύγειν δὲ ὡς οὐ καθαράς οὐδὲ καθαροῦ; Ἡ δὲ
 ἀνδρία ἀφοβία θανάτου. Ὁ δὲ ἐστὶν ὁ θάνατος
 10 χωρὶς εἶναι τὴν ψυχὴν τοῦ σώματος. Οὐ φοβείται
 δὲ τοῦτο, ὅς ἀγαπᾷ μόνος γενέσθαι. Μεγαλοψυχία
 δὲ δὴ ὑπεροψία τῶν τῆδε. Ἡ δὲ φρόνησις νόησις
 ἐν ἀποστροφῇ τῶν κάτω, πρὸς δὲ τὰ ἄνω τὴν
 ψυχὴν ἄγουσα. Γίνεται οὖν ἡ ψυχὴ καθαρθεῖσα
 εἶδος καὶ λόγος καὶ πάντη ἀσώματος καὶ νοερά
 15 καὶ ὅλη τοῦ θεοῦ, ὅθεν ἡ πηγὴ τοῦ καλοῦ καὶ τὰ
 συγγενῆ πάντα τοιαῦτα. Ψυχὴ οὖν ἀναχθείσα
 πρὸς νοῦν ἐπὶ τὸ μᾶλλον ἐστὶ καλόν. Νοῦς δὲ
 καὶ τὰ παρὰ νοῦ τὸ κάλλος αὐτῇ οἰκείον καὶ οὐκ
 ἀλλότριον, ὅτι τότε ἐστὶν ὄντως μόνον ψυχὴ.
 Διὸ καὶ λέγεται ὀρθῶς τὸ ἀγαθὸν καὶ καλὸν τὴν
 20 ψυχὴν γίνεσθαι ὁμοιωθῆναι εἶναι θεῷ, ὅτι ἐκείθεν
 τὸ καλὸν καὶ ἡ μοῖρα ἡ ἑτέρα τῶν ὄντων. Μᾶλλον
 δὲ τὰ ὄντα ἢ καλλονὴ ἐστὶν, ἢ δ' ἑτέρα φύσις τὸ
 αἰσχρόν, τὸ δ' αὐτὸ καὶ πρῶτον κακόν, ὥστε
 κάκεινῳ ταῦτόν ἀγαθόν τε καὶ καλόν, ἢ τὰγαθόν
 τε καὶ καλλονή. Ὅμοίως οὖν ζητητέον καλόν τε
 25 καὶ ἀγαθόν καὶ αἰσχρόν τε καὶ κακόν. Καὶ τὸ
 πρῶτον θετέον τὴν καλλονήν, ὅπερ καὶ τὰγαθόν·
 ἀφ' οὗ νοῦς εὐθὺς τὸ καλόν· ψυχὴ δὲ νῶ καλόν·

¹ Diels, followed by Henry-Schwyzler, thinks that there is an allusion here to a remark Heraclitus appears to have made about pigs liking mud (fr. B13): but it seems to me at least possible that Plotinus might have thought of pigs at this point for himself, without any assistance from earlier philosophy.

² Cp. *Phaedo* 64C5-7.

bodies, like that sort of thing.¹ For what can true self-control be except not keeping company with bodily pleasures, but avoiding them as impure and belonging to something impure? Courage, too, is not being afraid of death. And death is the separation of body and soul;² and a man does not fear this if he welcomes the prospect of being alone. Again, greatness of soul is despising the things here: and wisdom is an intellectual activity which turns away from the things below and leads the soul to those above. So the soul when it is purified becomes form and formative power,³ altogether bodiless and intellectual and entirely belonging to the divine, whence beauty springs and all that is akin to it. Soul, then, when it is raised to the level of intellect increases in beauty. Intellect and the things of intellect are its beauty, its own beauty and not another's, since only then [when it is perfectly conformed to intellect] is it truly soul. For this reason it is right to say that the soul's becoming something good and beautiful is its being made like to God, because from Him come beauty and all else which falls to the lot of real beings. Or rather, beautiful-ness is reality, and the other kind of thing is the ugly, and this same is the primary evil; so for God the qualities of goodness and beauty are the same, or the realities, the good and beauty.³ So we must follow the same line of enquiry to discover beauty and goodness, and ugliness and evil. And first we must posit beauty which is also the good; from this immediately comes intellect, which is beauty; and

³ God, the First Principle of reality, has no qualities, but is absolutely single and simple, at once Absolute Good and Absolute Beauty.

τὰ δὲ ἄλλα ἤδη παρὰ ψυχῆς μορφώσεως καλά, τὰ
 τε ἐν ταῖς πράξεσι τὰ τε ἐν τοῖς ἐπιτηδεύμασι.
 30 Καὶ δὴ καὶ τὰ σώματα, ὅσα οὕτω λέγεται, ψυχῆ
 ἤδη ποιεῖ· ἄτε γὰρ θεῖον οὐσα καὶ οἶον μοῖρα
 τοῦ καλοῦ, ὧν ἂν ἐφάπτηται καὶ κρατῆ, καλὰ ταῦτα,
 ὡς δυνατὸν αὐτοῖς μεταλαβεῖν, ποιεῖ.

7. Ἀναβατέον οὖν πάλιν ἐπὶ τὸ ἀγαθόν, οὗ
 ὀρέγεται πᾶσα ψυχῆ. Εἴ τις οὖν εἶδεν αὐτό, οἶδεν
 ὃ λέγω, ὅπως καλόν. Ἐφετὸν μὲν γὰρ ὡς
 ἀγαθόν καὶ ἡ ἔφεσις πρὸς τοῦτο, τεύξις δὲ αὐτοῦ
 5 ἀναβαίνουσι πρὸς τὸ ἄνω καὶ ἐπιστραφεῖσι καὶ
 ἀποδουμένους ἢ καταβαίνοντες ἡμφιέσμεθα· οἶον
 ἐπὶ τὰ ἅγια τῶν ἱερῶν τοῖς ἀνιούσι καθάρσεις τε
 καὶ ἱματίων ἀποθέσεις τῶν πρὶν καὶ τὸ γυμνοῖς
 ἀνιέναι· ἕως ἂν τις παρελθὼν ἐν τῇ ἀναβάσει πᾶν
 ὅσον ἀλλότριον τοῦ θεοῦ αὐτῷ μόνῳ αὐτὸ μόνον
 10 ἴδῃ εἰλικρινές, ἀπλοῦν, καθαρὸν, ἀφ' οὗ πάντα
 ἐξήρτηται καὶ πρὸς αὐτὸ βλέπει καὶ ἔστι καὶ ζῆ
 καὶ νοεῖ· ζωῆς γὰρ αἴτιος καὶ νοῦ καὶ τοῦ εἶναι.
 Τοῦτο οὖν εἴ τις ἴδῃ, ποίους ἂν ἴσχοι ἔρωτας,
 ποίους δὲ πόθους, βουλόμενος αὐτῷ συγκεκρισθῆναι,
 πῶς δ' ἂν (οὐκ) ἐκπλαγείη μεθ' ἡδονῆς; Ἔστι γὰρ
 15 τῷ μὲν μήπω ἰδόντι ὀρέγεσθαι ὡς ἀγαθοῦ· τῷ δὲ
 ἰδόντι ὑπάρχει ἐπὶ καλῷ ἀγασθαί τε καὶ θάμβους
 πίμπλασθαι μεθ' ἡδονῆς καὶ ἐκπλήττεσθαι ἀβλαβῶς
 καὶ ἐμὴν ἀληθῆ ἔρωτα καὶ δριμύεις πόθους καὶ τῶν
 ἄλλων ἐρώτων καταγελάειν καὶ τῶν πρόσθεν νομι-
 ζομένων καλῶν καταφρονεῖν· ὅποιον πάσχουσι
 20 ὅσοι θεῶν εἶδουσι ἢ δαιμόνων προστυχόντες οὐκέτ'
 ἂν ἀποδέχοντο ὁμοίως ἄλλων κάλλη σωματίων.

¹ Cp. *Symposium* 211E1.

soul is given beauty by intellect. Everything else is
 beautiful by the shaping of soul, the beauties in
 actions and in ways of life. And soul makes beauti-
 ful the bodies which are spoken of as beautiful;
 for since it is a divine thing and a kind of part of
 beauty, it makes everything it grasps and masters
 beautiful, as far as they are capable of partici-
 pation.

7. So we must ascend again to the good, which
 every soul desires. Anyone who has seen it knows
 what I mean when I say that it is beautiful. It is
 desired as good, and the desire for it is directed to
 good, and the attainment of it is for those who go
 up to the higher world and are converted and strip
 off what we put on in our descent; (just as for those
 who go up to the celebrations of sacred rites there
 are purifications, and strippings off of the clothes
 they wore before, and going up naked) until, passing
 in the ascent all that is alien to the God, one sees
 with one's self alone That alone, simple, single and
 pure,¹ from which all depends and to which all look
 and are and live and think: for it is cause of life and
 mind and being. If anyone sees it, what passion
 will he feel, what longing in his desire to be united
 with it, what a shock of delight! The man who has
 not seen it may desire it as good, but he who has
 seen it glories in its beauty and is full of wonder and
 delight, enduring a shock which causes no hurt,
 loving with true passion and piercing longing; he
 laughs at all other loves and despises what he thought
 beautiful before; it is like the experience of those
 who have met appearances of gods or spirits and do
 not any more appreciate as they did the beauty of
 other bodies. "What then are we to think, if any-

Τί δῆτα οἰόμεθα, εἴ τις αὐτὸ τὸ καλὸν
θεῶτο αὐτὸ ἐφ' ἑαυτοῦ καθαρὸν, μὴ σαρκῶν,
μὴ σώματος ἀνάπλεων, μὴ ἐν γῆ, μὴ ἐν οὐρανῷ,
ἢ ἢ καθαρὸν; Καὶ γὰρ ἐπακτὰ πάντα ταῦτα καὶ
25 μέμικται καὶ οὐ πρῶτα, παρ' ἐκείνου δέ. Εἰ οὖν
ἐκείνο, ὃ χορηγεῖ μὲν ἅπασιν, ἐφ' ἑαυτοῦ δέ μένει
δίδωσι καὶ οὐ δέχεται τι εἰς αὐτό, ἴδοι, μένων ἐν
τῇ θεᾷ τοῦ τοιούτου καὶ ἀπολαύων αὐτοῦ ὁμοιούμε-
νος, τίνας ἂν ἔτι δέοιτο καλοῦ; Τοῦτο γὰρ αὐτὸ
μάλιστα κάλλος ὃν αὐτὸ καὶ τὸ πρῶτον ἐργάζεται
30 τοὺς ἔραστὰς αὐτοῦ καλοὺς καὶ ἔραστοὺς ποιεῖ.
Οὐδὲ δὴ καὶ ἀγὰν μέγιστος καὶ ἔσχατος
ψυχαῖς πρόκειται, ὑπὲρ οὐ καὶ ὁ πᾶς πόνος,
μὴ ἀμοίρους γενέσθαι τῆς ἀρίστης θεᾶς, ἧς ὁ μὲν
τυχῶν μακάριος ὄψιν μακαρίαν τεθεαμένος
ἀτυχῆς δὲ [οὗτος] ὁ μὴ τυχῶν. Οὐ γὰρ ὁ χρωμάτων
35 ἢ σωμάτων καλῶν μὴ τυχῶν οὐδὲ δυνάμεως οὐδὲ
ἀρχῶν οὐδὲ ὁ βασιλείας μὴ τυχῶν ἀτυχῆς, ἀλλ'
ὁ τούτου καὶ μόνου, ὑπὲρ οὐ τῆς τεύξεως καὶ
βασιλείας καὶ ἀρχᾶς γῆς ἀπάσης καὶ θαλάττης καὶ
οὐρανοῦ προσέσθαι χρεῶν, εἰ καταλιπὼν τις ταῦτα
καὶ ὑπεριδὼν εἰς ἐκείνο στραφεῖς ἴδοι.

8. Τίς οὖν ὁ τρόπος; Τίς μηχανή; Πῶς τις
θεάσεται κάλλος ἀμήχανον οἷον ἔνδον ἐν ἁγίοις
ἱεροῖς μένον οὐδὲ προϊὼν εἰς τὸ ἔξω, ἵνα τις καὶ
βέβηλος ἴδῃ; Ἴτω δὴ καὶ συνεπέσθω εἰς τὸ εἶσω
5 ὁ δυνάμενος ἔξω καταλιπὼν ὄψιν ὁμμάτων μηδ'

¹ Cp. *Symposium* 211A8 and D8-E2 (this is not an exact quotation but is amplified by Plotinus).

² A partial quotation from *Phaedrus*, 247B5-6.

one contemplates the absolute beauty which exists pure by itself, uncontaminated by flesh or body, not in earth or heaven, that it may keep its purity?"¹ All these other things are external additions and mixtures and not primary, but derived from it. If then one sees That which provides for all and remains by itself and gives to all but receives nothing into itself, if he abides in the contemplation of this kind of beauty and rejoices in being made like it, how can he need any other beauty? For this, since it is beauty most of all, and primary beauty, makes its lovers beautiful and lovable. Here the greatest, the ultimate contest is set before our souls;² all our toil and trouble is for this, not to be left without a share in the best of visions. The man who attains this is blessed in seeing that "blessed sight", and he who fails to attain it has failed utterly. A man has not failed if he fails to win beauty of colours or bodies, or power or office or kingship even, but if he fails to win this and only this. For this he should give up the attainment of kingship and of rule over all earth and sea and sky, if only by leaving and overlooking them he can turn to That and see.

8. But how shall we find the way?³ What method can we devise? How can one see the "inconceivable beauty"⁴ which stays within the holy sanctuary and does not come out where the profane may see it? Let him who can, follow and come within, and leave outside the sight of his eyes and

³ This chapter made a deep impression on the mind of S. Augustine, and he uses phrases from it more than once in speaking of the return of the soul to God; cp. *De Civitate Dei* IX. 17 and *Confessions* I. 18 and VIII. 8.

⁴ *Symposium* 218E2.

ἐπιστρέφων αὐτὸν εἰς τὰς προτέρας ἀγλαίας
 σωμάτων. Ἰδόντα γὰρ δεῖ τὰ ἐν σώμασι καλὰ
 μήτοι προστρέχειν, ἀλλὰ γνόντας ὡς εἰσὼ εἰκόνες
 καὶ ἴχνη καὶ σκιαί φεύγειν πρὸς ἐκεῖνο οὗ ταῦτα
 εἰκόνες. Εἰ γὰρ τις ἐπιδράμει λαβεῖν βουλόμενος
 10 ὡς ἀληθινόν, οἷα εἰδώλου καλοῦ ἐφ' ὕδατος
 ὄχουμένου, ὁ λαβεῖν βουληθείς, ὡς πού τις
 μῦθος, δοκῶ μοι, αἰνίττεται, δὺς εἰς τὸ κάτω τοῦ
 ρεύματος ἀφανῆς ἐγένετο, τὸν αὐτὸν δὴ τρόπον ὁ
 ἐχόμενος τῶν καλῶν σωμάτων καὶ μὴ ἀφίεις οὐ
 τῷ σώματι, τῇ δὲ ψυχῇ καταδύσεται εἰς σκοτεινὰ
 15 καὶ ἀτερπῆ τῷ νῶ βάθη, ἔνθα τυφλὸς ἐν Ἄιδου
 μένων καὶ ἐνταῦθα κάκει σκiais συνέσται. Φεύ-
 γωμεν δὴ φίλην ἐς πατρίδα, ἀληθέστερον ἄν
 τις παρακελεύοιτο. Τίς οὖν ἡ φυγὴ καὶ πῶς;
 ἀναξόμεθα οἶον ἀπὸ μάγου Κίρκης (φησὶν) ἢ
 Καλυψοῦς Ὀδυσσεὺς (αἰνιτόμενος, δοκεῖ μοι)
 20 μέναι οὐκ ἀρεσθεῖς, καίτοι ἔχων ἡδονὰς δι'
 ὀμμάτων καὶ κάλλει πολλῷ αἰσθητῶ συνών.
 Πατὴρ δὴ ἡμῖν, ὅθεν παρήλθομεν, καὶ πατὴρ
 ἐκεῖ. Τίς οὖν ὁ στόλος καὶ ἡ φυγὴ; Οὐ ποσὶ δεῖ
 διανύσαι· πανταχοῦ γὰρ φέρουσι πόδες ἐπὶ γῆν
 ἄλλην ἀπ' ἄλλης· οὐδέ σε δεῖ ἵππων ὄχημα ἢ τι

not turn back to the bodily splendours which he saw before. When he sees the beauty in bodies he must not run after them; we must know that they are images, traces, shadows, and hurry away to that which they image. For if a man runs to the image and wants to seize it as if it was the reality (like a beautiful reflection playing on the water, which some story somewhere, I think, said riddlingly a man wanted to catch and sank down into the stream and disappeared) then this man who clings to beautiful bodies and will not let them go, will, like the man in the story, but in soul, not in body, sink down into the dark depths where intellect has no delight, and stay blind in Hades, consorting with shadows there and here. This would be truer advice "Let us fly to our dear country."¹ What then is our way of escape, and how are we to find it? We shall put out to sea, as Odysseus did, from the witch Circe or Calypso—as the poet says (I think with a hidden meaning)—and was not content to stay though he had delights of the eyes and lived among much beauty of sense. Our country from which we came is there, our Father is there. How shall we travel to it, where is our way of escape? We cannot get there on foot; for our feet only carry us everywhere in this world, from one country to another. You

¹ The quotation is from *Iliad* 2, 140 (of course from a quite irrelevant context). But Plotinus's mind turns immediately to reminiscences of *Odyssey* 9, 29 ff. and 10, 488-4, where Odysseus tells Alcinoos how Calypso and Circe had loved him and tried to detain him on his journey home. Odysseus became in late antiquity, for Christians as well as pagans, the type of the soul journeying to its true home and overcoming all difficulties and temptations on the way.

25 θαλάττιον παρασκευάσαι, ἀλλὰ ταῦτα πάντα ἀφεί-
ναι δεῖ καὶ μὴ βλέπειν, ἀλλ' οἷον μύσαντα ὄψιν
ἄλλην ἀλλάξασθαι καὶ ἀνεγεῖραι, ἣν ἔχει μὲν πᾶς,
χρῶνται δὲ ὀλίγοι.

9. Τί οὖν ἐκείνη, ἣ ἔνδον βλέπει; Ἄρτι μὲν
ἐγειρομένη οὐ πᾶν τὰ λαμπρὰ δύναται βλέπειν.
Ἐθιστέον οὖν τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτὴν πρῶτον μὲν τὰ
καλὰ βλέπειν ἐπιτηδεύματα· εἶτα ἔργα καλά,
5 οὐχ ὅσα αἱ τέχναι ἐργάζονται, ἀλλ' ὅσα οἱ ἄνδρες
οἱ λεγόμενοι ἀγαθοί· εἶτα ψυχὴν ἴδε τῶν τὰ ἔργα
τὰ καλὰ ἐργαζομένων. Πῶς ἂν οὖν ἴδοις ψυχὴν
ἀγαθὴν οἷον τὸ κάλλος ἔχει; Ἄναγε ἐπὶ σαυτὸν
καὶ ἴδε· κἴν μήπω σαυτὸν ἴδης καλόν, οἷα ποιητῆς
ἀγάλματος, ὃ δεῖ καλὸν γενέσθαι, τὸ μὲν ἀφαίρει,
10 τὸ δὲ ἀπέξεσε, τὸ δὲ λείον, τὸ δὲ καθαρὸν ἐποίησεν,
ἕως ἔδειξε καλὸν ἐπὶ τῷ ἀγάλματι πρόσωπον,
οὕτω καὶ σὺ ἀφαίρει ὅσα περιττὰ καὶ ἀπεύθυνε
ὅσα σκολιά, ὅσα σκοτεινὰ καθαίρων ἐργάζου εἶναι
λαμπρὰ καὶ μὴ παύσῃ τεκταίνων τὸ σὸν
ἄγαλμα, ἕως ἂν ἐκλάμψῃ σοι τῆς ἀρετῆς ἡ
15 θεοειδῆς ἀγλαία, ἕως ἂν ἴδῃς σωφροσύνην ἐν
ἀγνῶ βεβῶσαν βάρβω. Εἰ γέγονας τοῦτο καὶ
εἶδες αὐτὸ καὶ σαυτῷ καθαρὸς συνεγένου οὐδὲν
ἔχων ἐμπόδιον πρὸς τὸ εἰς οὕτω γενέσθαι
οὐδὲ σὺν αὐτῷ ἄλλο τι ἐντὸς μεμιγμένον ἔχων,
ἀλλ' ὅλος αὐτὸς φῶς ἀληθινὸν μόνον, οὐ μεγέθει
μεμετρημένον οὐδὲ σχήματι εἰς ἐλάττωσιν περι-
20 γραφὴν οὐδ' αὖ εἰς μέγεθος δι' ἀπειρίας αὐξηθῆν,
ἀλλ' ἀμέτρητον πανταχοῦ, ὡς ἂν μείζον παντὸς

must not get ready a carriage, either, or a boat.
Let all these things go, and do not look. Shut your
eyes, and change to and wake another way of seeing,
which everyone has but few use.

9. And what does this inner sight see? When it
is just awakened it is not at all able to look at the
brilliance before it. So that the soul must be trained,
first of all to look at beautiful ways of life: then at
beautiful works, not those which the arts produce,
but the works of men who have a name for goodness:
then look at the souls of the people who produce the
beautiful works. How then can you see the sort of
beauty a good soul has? Go back into yourself and
look; and if you do not yet see yourself beautiful,
then, just as someone making a statue which has to
be beautiful cuts away here and polishes there and
makes one part smooth and clears another till he has
given his statue a beautiful face, so you too must cut
away excess and straighten the crooked and clear the
dark and make it bright, and never stop "working
on your statue"¹ till the divine glory of virtue shines
out on you, till you see "self-mastery enthroned
upon its holy seat."² If you have become this, and
see it, and are at home with yourself in purity, with
nothing hindering you from becoming in this way one,
with no inward mixture of anything else, but wholly
yourself, nothing but true light, not measured by
dimensions, or bounded by shape into littleness, or
expanded to size by unboundedness, but everywhere
unmeasured, because greater than all measure and

¹ A reference to *Phaedrus* 252D7; but in Plato it is the
lover who works on the soul of his beloved, fashioning it into
the likeness of the god they once followed together.

² *Phaedrus* 254B7.

μέτρον καὶ παντὸς κρείσσον ποσοῦ· εἰ τοῦτο
γενόμενον σαυτὸν ἴδοις, ὅψις ἤδη γενόμενος
θαρήσῃσας περὶ σαυτῷ καὶ ἐνταῦθα ἤδη ἀναβε-
βηκῶς μηκέτι τοῦ δεικνύντος δεηθεῖς ἀτενίσας
25 ἴδε· οὗτος γὰρ μόνος ὁ ὀφθαλμὸς τὸ μέγα κάλλος
βλέπει. Ἐὰν δὲ ἔῃ ἐπὶ τὴν θεάν λημῶν κακίαις
καὶ οὐ κεκαθαρμένος ἢ ἀσθενής, ἀνανδρία οὐ
δυνάμενος τὰ πάνυ λαμπρὰ βλέπειν, οὐδὲν βλέπει,
καὶ ἄλλος δεικνύη παρὸν τὸ ὄραθῆναι δυνάμενον.
Τὸ γὰρ ὄρων πρὸς τὸ ὀρώμενον συγγενὲς καὶ
30 ὅμοιον ποιησάμενον δεῖ ἐπιβάλλειν τῇ θεᾷ. Οὐ
γὰρ ἂν πώποτε εἶδεν ὀφθαλμὸς ἥλιον ἡλιοειδῆς
μὴ γεγεννημένος, οὐδὲ τὸ καλὸν ἂν ἴδοι ψυχὴ μὴ
καλῇ γενομένη. Γενέσθω δὴ πρῶτον θεοειδῆς
πᾶς καὶ καλὸς πᾶς, εἰ μέλλει θεάσασθαι θεόν τε
καὶ καλόν. Ἡξει γὰρ πρῶτον ἀναβαίνων ἐπὶ τὸν
35 νοῦν κάκει πάντα εἴσεται καλὰ τὰ εἶδη καὶ φήσει
τὸ κάλλος τοῦτο εἶναι, τὰς ιδέας· πάντα γὰρ
ταύταις καλὰ, τοῖς νοῦ γενήμασι καὶ οὐσίαις. Τὸ
δὲ ἐπέκεινα τούτου τὴν τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ λέγομεν φύσιν
προβεβλημένον τὸ καλὸν πρὸ αὐτῆς ἔχουσαν.
40 Ὡστε ὀλοσχερεῖ μὲν λόγῳ τὸ πρῶτον καλὸν
διαίρων δὲ τὰ νοητὰ τὸ μὲν νοητὸν καλὸν τὸν τῶν
εἰδῶν φήσει τόπον, τὸ δ' ἀγαθὸν τὸ ἐπέκεινα καὶ

superior to all quantity; when you see that you have
become this, then you have become sight; you can
trust yourself then; you have already ascended and
need no one to show you; concentrate your gaze and
see. This alone is the eye that sees the great
beauty. But if anyone comes to the sight blear-
eyed with wickedness, and unpurified, or weak
and by his cowardice unable to look at what is very
bright, he sees nothing, even if someone shows him
what is there and possible to see. For one must come
to the sight with a seeing power made akin and like
to what is seen. No eye ever saw the sun without
becoming sun-like,¹ nor can a soul see beauty with-
out becoming beautiful. You must become first all
godlike and all beautiful if you intend to see God and
beauty. First the soul will come in its ascent to
intellect and there will know the Forms, all beauti-
ful, and will affirm that these, the Ideas, are
beauty; for all things are beautiful by these, by
the products of intellect and essence. That which
is beyond this we call the nature of the Good,
which holds beauty as a screen before it.) So in a
loose and general way of speaking the Good is the
primary beauty; but if one distinguishes the
intelligibles [from the Good] one will say that the
place of the Forms² is the intelligible beauty, but
the Good is That which is beyond, the "spring and

¹ Cp. *Republic* VI. 508B3 and 509A1. Plato's point in these passages is, however, not that the eye must become sun-like in order to see the sun, but that the eye (the symbol of knowledge) is sun-like but *not* the sun (the symbol of the Good). This Platonic context may perhaps be relevant to the correct interpretation of Plotinus's thought here and elsewhere where he speaks of the vision of the Good.

² Cp. *Republic* VII. 517E5.

PLOTINUS: ENNEAD I. 6.

πηγήν καὶ ἀρχὴν τοῦ καλοῦ. ἼΙ ἐν τῷ αὐτῷ
τάγαθόν καὶ καλὸν πρῶτον θήσεται· πλὴν ἐκεῖ τὸ
καλόν.

¹ Cp. *Phaedrus* 245C9: the context of the phrase there is, however, quite different.

² Plotinus in these last sentences is discussing questions of language; he is very conscious of the inadequacy of all human

ON BEAUTY

origin"¹ of beauty; or one will place the Good and the primal beauty on the same level: in any case, however, beauty is in the intelligible world.²

language to describe the realities here under discussion, and is prepared to tolerate a variety of ways of expressing the relationship of beauty to the Good; cp. the discussions of the same subject in V. 5. 12 and VI. 7. 22. The one thing he insists on is that true beauty is only to be found in the intelligible world, not in that of sense-perception.

I. 7. ON THE PRIMAL GOOD

Introductory Note

THIS short treatise is the last which Plotinus wrote before his death; in it we find the essentials of his moral and religious teaching in their simplest form. In the first chapter he establishes briefly the necessity of accepting the transcendent Platonic Good, refuting Aristotle's rejection of it according to Aristotle's own principles. Then, after stating that life is a way of sharing in the Good and so a good, he shows that death, the death he himself saw approaching, is a greater good than life in the body.

Synopsis

If, as Aristotle says, a thing's proper good is its full natural activity, then that to which the soul directs its best activity will be the Absolute Good; this has no activity directed towards other things but is the source and goal of all activities; it is, in a truer sense than Aristotle's Unmoved Mover, the supreme object of desire (ch. 1). Unity, existence, form, life, intellect are all in their degree ways of sharing in the Good, and soul approaches the Good through its life and intellect (ch. 2). But if life, then, is a good, is not death an evil? No, for life in the body is only good in so far as the soul separates itself from the body by virtue, and death, the separation of soul and body, brings the soul to a better life (ch. 3).

I. 7. (54) ΠΕΡΙ ΤΟΥ ΠΡΩΤΟΥ ΑΓΑΘΟΥ
ΚΑΙ ΤΩΝ ΑΛΛΩΝ ΑΓΑΘΩΝ

1. Ἄρ' ἂν τις ἕτερον εἴποι ἀγαθὸν ἐκάστῳ εἶναι
ἢ τὴν κατὰ φύσιν τῆς ζωῆς ἐνέργειαν, καὶ εἴ τι ἐκ
πολλῶν εἴη, τούτῳ εἶναι ἀγαθὸν τὴν τοῦ ἀμείνονος
ἐν αὐτῷ ἐνέργειαν οἰκείαν καὶ κατὰ φύσιν ἀεὶ
5 μηδὲν ἐλλείπουσαν; Ψυχῆς δὲ ἐνέργεια τὸ κατὰ
φύσιν ἀγαθὸν αὐτῆς. Εἰ δὲ καὶ πρὸς τὸ ἄριστον
ἐνεργοὶ ἀρίστη οὔσα, οὐ μόνον πρὸς αὐτὴν τὸ
ἀγαθόν, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀπλῶς τοῦτο ἀγαθὸν ἂν εἴη.
Εἰ οὖν τι μὴ πρὸς ἄλλο ἐνεργοὶ ἄριστον ὄντων
ὄντων καὶ ἐπέκεινα τῶν ὄντων, πρὸς αὐτὸ δὲ τὰ
10 ἄλλα, δῆλον, ὡς τοῦτο ἂν εἴη τὸ ἀγαθόν, δι' ὃ
καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις ἀγαθοῦ μεταλαμβάνειν ἔστι· τὰ
δὲ ἄλλα διχῶς ἂν ἔχοι, ὅσα οὕτω τὸ ἀγαθόν, καὶ τῷ
πρὸς αὐτὸ ὁμοιωθῆναι καὶ τῷ πρὸς αὐτὸ τὴν
ἐνέργειαν ποιείσθαι. Εἰ οὖν ἔφεσις καὶ ἐνέργεια
πρὸς τὸ ἄριστον ἀγαθόν, δεῖ τὸ ἀγαθὸν μὴ πρὸς
15 ἄλλο βλέπον μηδ' ἐφιέμενον ἄλλου ἐν ἡσυχίᾳ οὔσαν
πηγὴν καὶ ἀρχὴν ἐνεργειῶν κατὰ φύσιν οὔσαν
καὶ τὰ ἄλλα ἀγαθοειδῆ ποιούσαν οὐ τῇ πρὸς
ἐκεῖνα ἐνεργείᾳ—ἐκεῖνα γὰρ πρὸς αὐτὴν—οὐ τῇ
ἐνεργείᾳ οὐδὲ τῇ νοήσει τὰγαθὸν εἶναι, ἀλλ' αὐτῇ

¹ These first lines are a compressed summary of Aristotelian and Stoic views about the good of the individual which are

I. 7. ON THE PRIMAL GOOD AND
THE OTHER GOODS

1. Could one say that the good for a thing was anything else than the full natural activity of its life? If the thing was made up of many parts, would not its good be the proper, natural, and never-failing activity of the better part of it? So the soul's activity will be its natural good.¹ Now if it is of the best sort itself and its activity is directed towards the best, this best will not only be the good for it but it will be the good absolutely. Then if something does not direct its activity towards another thing, since it is the best of beings and transcends all beings, and all other things direct their activities towards it, it is obvious that this will be the Good, through which other things are enabled to participate in good. All the other things which have the good like this will have it in two ways, by being made like it and by directing their activity towards it. So if the aspiration and activity towards the best is good, the Good must not look or aspire to something else, but stay quiet and be the "spring and origin" of natural activities, and give other things the form of good, not by its activity directed to them—for they are directed to it, their source. It must not be the Good by activity or thought, but by reason of its

made in what follows to lead up to a Platonic view of the Absolute Good.

μονῇ τὰγαθὸν εἶναι. Καὶ γὰρ ὅτι ἐπέκεινα
 20 οὐσίας, ἐπέκεινα καὶ ἐνεργείας καὶ ἐπέκεινα νοῦ
 καὶ νοήσεως. Καὶ γὰρ αὐτὸ τοῦτο δεῖ τὰγαθὸν
 τίθεσθαι, εἰς ὃ πάντα ἀνήρηται, αὐτὸ δὲ εἰς
 μηδέν· οὕτω γὰρ καὶ ἀληθὲς τὸ οὐ πάντα
 ἐφίεται. Δεῖ οὖν μένειν αὐτό, πρὸς αὐτὸ δὲ
 25 ἀφ' οὗ πᾶσαι γραμμαί. Καὶ παράδειγμα ὁ ἥλιος
 ὡσπερ κέντρον ὦν πρὸς τὸ φῶς τὸ παρ' αὐτοῦ
 ἀνηρητὸν πρὸς αὐτόν· πανταχοῦ γοῦν μετ'
 αὐτοῦ καὶ οὐκ ἀποτέμνεται· κἄν ἀποτεμεῖν
 ἐθελήσῃς ἐπὶ θάτερα, πρὸς τὸν ἥλιόν ἐστι τὸ φῶς.

2. Τὰ δὲ ἄλλα πάντα πρὸς αὐτὸ πῶς; Ἡ τὰ
 μὲν ἄψυχα πρὸς ψυχὴν, ψυχὴ δὲ πρὸς αὐτὸ διὰ
 νοῦ. Ἔχει δὲ τι αὐτοῦ τῷ ἔν πως καὶ τῷ ὄν πως
 ἕκαστον εἶναι. Καὶ μετέχει δὲ καὶ εἶδους· ὡς
 οὖν μετέχει τούτων, οὕτω καὶ τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ.
 5 Εἰδώλου ἄρα· ὦν γὰρ μετέχει, εἶδωλα ὄντος καὶ
 ἑνός, καὶ τὸ εἶδος ὡσαύτως. Ψυχῇ δὲ τὸ ζῆν,
 τῇ μὲν πρώτῃ τῇ μετὰ νοῦν, ἐγγυτέρω ἀληθείας,
 καὶ διὰ νοῦ ἀγαθειδὲς αὕτη· ἔχει δ' ἂν τὸ
 ἀγαθόν, εἰ πρὸς ἐκεῖνο βλέπει· νοῦς δὲ μετὰ
 τὰγαθόν. Ζωὴ τοίνυν, ὅτω τὸ ζῆν, τὸ ἀγαθόν,

¹ The famous phrase in Plato, *Republic* VI. 509B9, which is one of the foundations of Neo-Platonic theology.

very abiding. For because it is "beyond being,"¹ it transcends activity and transcends mind and thought. For, to put it another way, one must assume the Good to be that on which everything else depends and which itself depends on nothing; for so the statement is true that it is that "to which everything aspires."² So it must stay still, and all things turn back to it, as a circle does to the centre from which all the radii come. The sun, too, is an example, since it is like a centre in relation to the light which comes from it and depends on it; for the light is everywhere with it and is not cut off from it; even if you want to cut it off on one side, the light remains with the sun.

2. And how is everything else directed towards it? Soulless things are directed towards soul, and soul to the Good through intellect. But soulless things too have something of it, because each particular thing is one somehow and is existent somehow. Soulless things, too, share in form; and as they share in unity, existence and form so they share in the Good. In an image of the Good, that is to say; for what they share in are images of existence and the One, and their form is an image too. But the life of soul, of the first soul which comes next after intellect, is nearer to truth, and this first soul has through intellect the form of good. It can have the Good if it looks to it (Intellect comes after the Good). Life, then, is the good to that which

² Aristotle's definition of the Good (*Nicomachean Ethics* I. 1094a3) here applied to the transcendent Platonic Good, probably not without some remembrance of Aristotle's Unmoved Mover in *Metaphysics* Λ 7. 1072a-b, which moves all things as the object of desire.

10 καὶ νοῦς, ὅτω νοῦ μέτεστιν· ὥστε ὅτω ζωὴ μετὰ νοῦ, διχῶς καὶ ἐπ' αὐτό.

3. Εἰ δ' ἡ ζωὴ ἀγαθόν, ὑπάρχει τοῦτο ζῶντι παντί; Ἡ οὐ χωλεύει γὰρ ἡ ζωὴ τῷ φαύλῳ, ὡς περ ὄμμα τῷ μὴ καθαρῶς ὁρῶντι· οὐ γὰρ ποιεῖ τὸ ἔργον αὐτοῦ. Εἰ δὲ ἡ ζωὴ ἡμῶν, ἢ μέμικται
5 κακόν, ἀγαθόν, πῶς οὐχ ὁ θάνατος κακόν; Ἡ τίς; Τὸ γὰρ κακόν συμβεβηκέναι δεῖ τῷ· ὁ δ' οὐκ ἔστιν ἐτι ὄν, ἢ, εἰ ἔστιν, ἔστερημένον ζωῆς, οὐδ' οὕτω κακόν (οὐδέν, ὡς περ οὐδέν κακόν) τῷ λίθῳ. Εἰ δ' ἔστι ζωὴ καὶ ψυχὴ μετὰ θάνατον, ἤδη ἂν εἴη ἀγαθόν, ὅσῳ μᾶλλον ἐνεργεῖ τὰ αὐτῆς ἀνευ σώματος. Εἰ δὲ
10 τῆς ὅλης γίνεται, τί ἂν ἐκεῖ οὐσῆ εἴη κακόν; Καὶ ὅλως ὡς περ τοῖς θεοῖς ἀγαθόν μὲν ἔστι, κακόν δὲ οὐδέν, οὕτως οὐδὲ τῇ ψυχῇ τῇ σωζούσῃ τὸ καθαρὸν αὐτῆς· εἰ δὲ μὴ σώζοι, οὐχ ὁ θάνατος ἂν εἴη κακόν αὐτῇ, ἀλλ' ἡ ζωὴ. Εἰ δὲ καὶ ἐν Ἄιδου δίκαι, πάλιν αὐτῇ ἡ ζωὴ κακεῖ κακόν, ὅτι μὴ ζωὴ μόνον. Ἄλλ' εἰ σύνοδος μὲν ψυχῆς καὶ σώματος
15 ζωῆ, θάνατος δὲ διάλυσις τούτων, ἢ ψυχὴ ἔσται ἀμφοτέρων δεκτικὴ. Ἄλλ' εἰ ἀγαθὴ ἡ ζωὴ, πῶς ὁ θάνατος οὐ κακόν; Ἡ ἀγαθὴ μὲν ἡ ζωὴ οἷς ἔστιν, ἀγαθόν οὐ καθόσον σύνοδος, ἀλλ' ὅτι δι' ἀρετῆς ἀμύνεται τὸ κακόν· ὁ δὲ θάνατος μᾶλλον
20 ἀγαθόν. Ἡ λεκτέον αὐτὴν μὲν τὴν ἐν σώματι ζωὴν κακόν παρ' αὐτῆς, τῇ δὲ ἀρετῇ ἐν ἀγαθῷ γίνεσθαι τὴν ψυχὴν οὐ ζῶσαν τὸ σύνθετον, ἀλλ' ἤδη χωρίζουσαν ἑαυτήν.

lives, and intellect to that which has a share in intellect; so that if something has life and intellect, it has a twofold approach to the Good.

3. If life is a good, does every living thing have this good? No; in the bad, life limps; it is like an eye in one who does not see clear; it is not doing its proper work. But if our life, with its mixture of evil, is good, why is not death an evil? Evil for whom? Evil must happen to *someone*; and as for what does not exist any more or, if it exists, is deprived of life, there is nothing evil for this, just as nothing is evil for a stone. But if life and soul exist after death, then there is good, in proportion as it pursues its proper activity better without the body. If it becomes part of the universal soul, what evil can there be for it there? And altogether, just as the gods have good and no evil, so there is no evil for the soul which keeps its purity; and if it does not keep pure, it is not death that is an evil for it, but life. Even if there are punishments in Hades, it will be again life that is an evil for it, there too, because it is not simply life. But if life is a union of soul and body, and death is their separation, then the soul will be adapted to both. But if life is good, how can death not be an evil? Life is good to those for whom it is a good, not in so far as it is a union but because by virtue it keeps away evil; and death is a greater good. We must say that life in a body is an evil in itself, but the soul comes into good by its virtue, by not living the life of the compound but separating itself even now.

I. 8. ON WHAT ARE AND WHENCE COME EVILS

Introductory Note

THIS is again a very late treatise (No. 51 in Porphyry's chronological order). Its primary object appears to be to provide a solid metaphysical foundation for Plotinus's moral teaching about the necessity of purifying the soul by separating it from the material: this it does by showing that evil is not an imperfection or weakness of the soul but has an independent quasi-existence and is identical with matter. The treatise falls into three parts; the first (chs. 1-5) is intended to show that there is an absolute evil and that it is identical with matter, absolute formlessness; the second (chs. 6-7) is a commentary on Plotinus's favourite text from the *Theaetetus* (176A), coupled in ch. 7 with others from the *Timaeus* (47E-48A and 41B), in which two important objections to the idea of an absolute contrary to good, drawn from Aristotle's logic, are refuted; they are, that the existence of a term does not necessarily imply the existence of its contrary and that substance has no contrary; the third part (chs. 8 to 15) deals with a series of objections to the idea of matter as absolute evil, which come from various sources, mostly Aristotelian and Stoic.

The genuineness of various parts of the treatise has been attacked by Thedinga and Heinemann. Bréhier refutes their arguments briefly but adequately in the introduction to the treatise in his edition.

Synopsis

What is evil and how do we know it (ch. 1)? It cannot be included in what exists or in what is beyond existence;

ON WHAT ARE EVILS

there is no evil in the Good, Intellect or Soul (ch. 2). It must, then, be absolute non-existence, formlessness and unmeasuredness (ch. 3). Bodies are evil in the second degree, not absolute evil, and soul is not evil in itself at all; its evil comes from matter (ch. 4). Matter is absolute deficiency, not any particular evil but the source of them all (ch. 5). Commentary on a text from the *Theaetetus*, with refutation of objections drawn from Aristotle's logic (ch. 6). Linking of the *Theaetetus* text with texts from the *Timaeus* (ch. 7). It is never pure form, but form in matter and corrupted by matter which causes particular evils like ignorance and bad desires (ch. 8). We know particular evils by measuring them against good and seeing the falling short, but absolute evil by a process of extreme abstraction which leads to a "seeing which is not seeing" (ch. 9). Matter is evil by its very absence of quality (ch. 10). Refutation of arguments which make evil a privation, an impediment, or a weakness in the soul (chs. 11-14). The relationship between matter and soul and the nature of the soul's fall into matter (ch. 14). Summing-up, with emphasis on the moral implications of the doctrine (ch. 15).

I. 8. (51) ΠΕΡΙ ΤΟΥ ΤΙΝΑ ΚΑΙ ΠΟΘΕΝ
ΤΑ ΚΑΚΑ

1. Οἱ ζητοῦντες, πόθεν τὰ κακὰ, εἴτ' οὖν εἰς τὰ
ὄντα εἴτε περὶ γένος τῶν ὄντων παρελήλυθεν,
ἀρχὴν ἂν προσήκουσαν τῆς ζητήσεως ποιοῖντο, εἰ
τί ποτ' ἐστὶ τὸ κακὸν καὶ ἢ κακοῦ φύσις πρότερον
5 ὑποθεῖντο. Οὕτω γὰρ καὶ ὅθεν ἐλήλυθε καὶ ὅπου
ἴδρυνται καὶ ὅτω συμβέβηκε γνωσθεῖη, καὶ ὅπως
εἰ ἔστιν ἐν τοῖς οὐσίᾳ ὁμολογηθεῖη. Κακοῦ δὲ
φύσιν τίνι ποτὲ δυνάμει τῶν ἐν ἡμῖν γνωσθήμεν ἂν,
τῆς γνώσεως ἐκάστων δι' ὁμοιότητος γιγνομένης,
ἄπορον ἂν εἴη. Νοῦς μὲν γὰρ καὶ ψυχὴ εἶδη ὄντα
10 εἰδῶν καὶ τὴν γνῶσιν ἂν ποιοῖντο, καὶ πρὸς αὐτὰ
ἂν ἔχοιεν τὴν ὄρεξιν· εἶδος δὲ τὸ κακὸν πῶς ἂν
τις φαντάζοιτο ἐν ἀπουσίᾳ παντὸς ἀγαθοῦ ἰνδαλ-
λόμενον; Ἄλλ' εἰ, ὅτι τῶν ἐναντίων ἢ αὐτῇ
γένοιτ' ἂν ἐπιστήμη καὶ τῷ ἀγαθῷ ἐναντίον τὸ
κακόν, ἢ περ τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ, καὶ τοῦ κακοῦ ἔσται,
15 ἀναγκαῖον περὶ ἀγαθοῦ διδεῖν τοῖς μέλλουσι τὰ
κακὰ γνῶσεσθαι, ἐπεὶ περ προηγούμενα τὰ ἀμείνω
τῶν χειρόνων καὶ εἶδη, τὰ δ' οὐ, ἀλλὰ στέρησις
μᾶλλον. Ζήτημα δ' ὅμως καὶ πῶς ἐναντίον τὸ
ἀγαθὸν τῷ κακῷ· εἰ μὴ ἄρα, ὡς τὸ μὲν ἀρχή, τὸ
δὲ ἔσχατον, ἢ τὸ μὲν ὡς εἶδος, τὸ δὲ ὡς στέρησις.
20 Ἄλλὰ ταῦτα μὲν ὕστερον.

I. 8. ON WHAT ARE AND WHENCE
COME EVILS

1. Those who enquire whence evils come, either
into reality as a whole or to a particular kind of
reality, would make an appropriate beginning of
their enquiry if they proposed the question first,
what evil is and what is its nature. In this way one
would know whence it came and where its seat is
and what it affects, and one would be able to decide
the general question whether it really exists. But
there would be no way to decide by which of the
powers in us we know evil, if knowledge of everything
comes by likeness. For intellect and soul, since they
are Forms, would produce knowledge of Forms and
have a natural tendency towards them. But how
could anyone imagine that evil is a Form when it
appears in the absence of every sort of good? But if,
because opposites are known by one and the same kind
of knowledge and evil is opposite to good, the know-
ledge of good will also be knowledge of evil, then
those who mean to know evils must have a clear
perception of good, since the better precedes the
worse, and the better is Form, and the worse is not,
but rather privation of form. How good is the
opposite of evil is also something to investigate—
perhaps one is the beginning, the other the end,
and one is Form, the other privation. But we shall
discuss this later.

2. Νῦν δὲ λεγέσθω, τίς ἢ τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ φύσις, καθ' ὅσον τοῖς παροῦσι λόγοις προσήκει. Ἔστι δὲ τοῦτο, εἰς ὃ πάντα ἀνήρτηται καὶ οὐ πάντα τὰ ὄντα ἐφίεται ἀρχὴν ἔχοντα αὐτὸ κἀκείνου 5 δεόμενα· τὸ δ' ἐστὶν ἀνευδέες, ἰκανὸν ἑαυτῶ, μηδενὸς δεόμενον, μέτρον πάντων καὶ πέρας, δοὺς ἐξ αὐτοῦ νοῦν καὶ οὐσίαν καὶ ψυχὴν καὶ ζωὴν καὶ περὶ νοῦν ἐνέργειαν. Καὶ μέχρι μὲν τούτου καλὰ πάντα· αὐτὸς τε γὰρ ὑπέρκαλος καὶ ἐπέκεια τῶν ἀρίστων βασιλεύων ἐν τῷ νοητῷ, νοῦ ἐκείνου 10 ὄντος οὐ κατὰ νοῦν, ὃν οἰήθει ἂν τις κατὰ τοὺς παρ' ἡμῖν λεγομένους νοὺς εἶναι τοὺς ἐκ προτάσεων συμπληρουμένους καὶ τῶν λεγομένων συνιέναι δυναμένους λογιζομένους τε καὶ τοῦ ἀκολουθοῦ θεωρίαν ποιουμένους ὡς ἐξ ἀκολουθίας τὰ ὄντα θεωμένους ὡς πρότερον οὐκ ἔχοντας, ἀλλὰ κενούς 15 ἔτι πρὶν μαθεῖν ὄντας, καίτοι νοὺς ὄντας. Οὐ δὲ ἐκεῖνος ὁ νοὺς τοιοῦτος, ἀλλ' ἔχει πάντα καὶ ἔστι πάντα καὶ οὐνεστιν αὐτῷ συνῶν καὶ ἔχει πάντα οὐκ ἔχων. Οὐ γὰρ ἄλλα, ὁ δὲ ἄλλος· οὐδὲ χωρὶς ἕκαστον τῶν ἐν αὐτῷ· ὅλον τε γὰρ ἐστὶν ἕκαστον καὶ πανταχῇ πᾶν· καὶ οὐ συγκέχυται, ἀλλὰ αὐ 20 χωρὶς. Τὸ γοῦν μεταλαμβάνον οὐχ ὁμοῦ πάντων, ἀλλ' ὅτου δύναται μεταλαμβάνει. Καὶ ἔστι πρώτη ἐνέργεια ἐκείνου καὶ πρώτη οὐσία ἐκείνου μένοντος ἐν ἑαυτῷ· ἐνεργεῖ μέντοι περὶ ἐκείνον ὅσον περὶ ἐκείνον ζῶν. Ἡ δὲ ἔξωθεν περὶ τοῦτον χορεύουσα ψυχὴ ἐπὶ αὐτὸν βλέπουσα καὶ τὸ εἶσω αὐτοῦ 25 θεωμένη τὸν θεὸν δι' αὐτοῦ βλέπει. Καὶ οὗτος θεῶν ἀπήμων καὶ μακάριος βίος καὶ τὸ κακὸν

¹ The Aristotelian definition of the Good; cp. I. 7. 1.

2. Now we must state what is the nature of the Good, as far as the present argument requires. It is that on which everything depends and "to which all beings aspire";¹ they have it as their principle and need it: but it is without need, sufficient to itself, lacking nothing, the measure and bound of all things, giving from itself intellect and real being and soul and life and intellectual activity. Up to it all things are beautiful. But he is beautiful beyond all beauty, and is king in the intelligible realm, transcending the best—intellect there is not the sort one might conceive on the analogy of our so-called intellects which get their content from premises and are able to understand what is said, and reason discursively and observe what follows, contemplating reality as the result of a process of reasoning since they did not have it before but were empty before they learnt, though they were intellects. Intellect there is not like this, but has all things and is all things, and is with them when it is with itself and has all things without having them. For it is not one thing and they another; nor is each individual thing in it separate; for each is the whole and in all ways all, and yet they are not confused, but each is in a different sense separate; at any rate what participates in it does not participate in everything at once, but in what it is capable of. That intellect is the first act of the Good and the first substance; the Good stays still in himself; but intellect moves about him in its activity, as also it lives around him. And soul dances round intellect outside, and looks to it, and in contemplating its interior sees God through it. "This is the life of the gods,"² without

² *Phaedrus* 248A1.

οὐδαμοῦ ἐνταῦθα καὶ εἰ ἐνταῦθα ἔσται, κακὸν οὐδὲν
 ἂν ᾔην, ἀλλὰ πρῶτον καὶ δεύτερα τὰγαθὰ καὶ
 τρίτα· περὶ τὸν πάντων βασιλέα πάντα ἐστί,
 30 καὶ ἐκείνο αἴτιον πάντων καλῶν, καὶ πάντα
 ἐστὶν ἐκείνου, καὶ δεύτερον περὶ τὰ δεύτερα
 καὶ τρίτον περὶ τὰ τρίτα.

3. Εἰ δὴ ταῦτά ἐστι τὰ ὄντα καὶ τὸ ἐπέκεινα
 τῶν ὄντων, οὐκ ἂν ἐν τοῖς οὐσι τὸ κακὸν ἐνείη,
 οὐδ' ἐν τῷ ἐπέκεινα τῶν ὄντων· ἀγαθὰ γὰρ ταῦτα.
 Λείπεται τοίνυν, εἴπερ ἔστιν, ἐν τοῖς μὴ οὐσιν
 5 εἶναι οἷον εἰδός τι τοῦ μὴ ὄντος ὄν καὶ περὶ τι τῶν
 μεμιγμένων τῷ μὴ ὄντι ἢ ὅπως οὐδὲν κοινωνοῦντων
 τῷ μὴ ὄντι. Μὴ ὄν δὲ οὐτι τὸ παντελῶς μὴ ὄν,
 ἀλλ' ἕτερον μόνον τοῦ ὄντος· οὐχ οὕτω δὲ μὴ ὄν
 ὡς κίνησις καὶ στάσις ἢ περὶ τὸ ὄν, ἀλλ' ὡς
 εἰκῶν τοῦ ὄντος ἢ καὶ ἔτι μᾶλλον μὴ ὄν. Τοῦτο
 10 δ' ἐστὶ τὸ αἰσθητὸν πᾶν καὶ ὅσα περὶ τὸ αἰσθητὸν
 πάθη ἢ ὑστερόν τι τούτων καὶ ὡς συμβεβηκὸς
 τούτοις ἢ ἀρχὴ τούτων ἢ ἐν τι τῶν συμπλη-
 ρούντων τοῦτο τοιοῦτον ὄν. Ἦδη γὰρ ἂν τις εἰς
 ἐννοίαν ἦκοι αὐτοῦ οἷον ἀμετρίαν εἶναι πρὸς μέτρον
 καὶ ἄπειρον πρὸς πέρας καὶ ἀνείδεον πρὸς εἶδο-
 15 ποιητικὸν καὶ αἰεὶ ἐνδεὲς πρὸς αὐταρκές, αἰεὶ
 ἀόριστον, οὐδαμῇ ἐστῶς, παμπαθές, ἀκόρητον,
 πενία παντελής· καὶ οὐ συμβεβηκότα ταῦτα

¹ This passage from the doubtfully genuine Platonic Second Letter (312E1-4) is one of the foundation-texts of Neo-Platonic theology.

² Cp. V. 8. 7. 22, where matter is called εἰδός τι ἔσχατον.

³ Plotinus is alluding to the discussion in Plato, *Sophist*, 250 ff. The point he is making is that he is not using "non-being" here in the sense in which it could be applied to a term

sorrow and blessed; evil is nowhere here, and if things had stopped here there would not have been any evil, only a First and the second and third goods. "All things are around the King of all, and That is the cause of all good and beautiful things, and all things belong to That, and the second things are around the Second and the third around the Third."¹

3. If, then, these are what really exists and what is beyond existence, then evil cannot be included in what really exists or in what is beyond existence; for these are good. So it remains that if evil exists, it must be among non-existent things, as a sort of form of non-existence,² and pertain to one of the things that are mingled with non-being or somehow share in non-being. Non-being here does not mean absolute non-being but only something other than being; not non-being in the same way as the movement and rest which affect being,³ but like an image of being or something still more non-existent. The whole world of sense is non-existent in this way, and also all sense-experience and whatever is posterior or incidental to this, or its principle, or one of the elements which go to make up the whole which is of this non-existent kind. At this point one might be able to arrive at some conception of evil as a kind of unmeasuredness in relation to measure, and unboundedness in relation to limit, and formlessness in relation to formative principle, and perpetual neediness in relation to what is self-sufficient; always undefined, nowhere stable, subject to every sort of influence, insatiate, complete poverty: and

logically distinct from being ("motion" means something different from "being") but to refer to matter as a pseudo-being, something which really is not being, a real unreality.

αὐτῷ, ἀλλ' οἷον οὐσία αὐτοῦ ταῦτα, καὶ ὅ τι ἂν
 αὐτοῦ μέρος ἴδῃς, καὶ αὐτὸ πάντα ταῦτα· τὰ δ'
 ἄλλα, ὅσα ἂν αὐτοῦ μεταλάβῃ καὶ ὁμοιωθῇ, κακὰ
 20 μὲν γίνεσθαι, οὐχ ὅπερ δὲ κακὰ εἶναι. Τίνι οὖν
 ὑποστάσει ταῦτα πάρεστιν οὐχ ἕτερα ὄντα ἐκείνης,
 ἀλλ' ἐκείνης; Καὶ γὰρ εἰ ἐτέρῳ συμβαίνει τὸ κακόν,
 δεῖ τι πρότερον αὐτὸ εἶναι, κἂν μὴ οὐσία τις ᾗ.
 Ὡς γὰρ ἀγαθὸν τὸ μὲν αὐτό, τὸ δὲ ὁ συμβέβηκεν,
 οὕτω καὶ κακὸν τὸ μὲν αὐτό, τὸ δὲ ἦδη κατ' ἐκείνο
 25 συμβεβηκὸς ἐτέρῳ. Τίς οὖν ἀμετρία, εἰ μὴ ἐν
 τῷ ἀμέτρῳ; [Τί δὲ "μέτρον μὴ ἐν τῷ μεμετρη-
 μένῳ";] Ἄλλ' ὥσπερ ἐστὶ μέτρον μὴ ἐν τῷ
 μεμετρημένῳ, οὕτω καὶ ἀμετρία οὐκ ἐν ἀμέτρῳ.
 Εἰ γὰρ ἐν ἄλλῳ, ἢ ἐν ἀμέτρῳ—ἀλλ' οὐ δεῖ αὐτῷ
 ἀμετρίας αὐτῷ ἀμέτρῳ ὄντι—ἢ ἐν μεμετρημένῳ·
 30 ἀλλ' οὐχ οἷον τε τὸ μεμετρημένον ἀμετρίαν ἔχειν
 καθ' αὐτὸ καὶ ἀνείδεον αὐ αὐτὸ καὶ τὰ ἄλλα τὰ
 πρόσθεν, ἃ τὴν τοῦ κακοῦ ἐχαρακτήριζε φύσιν,
 καὶ εἴ τι μετ' ἐκείνο τοιοῦτον, ἢ μεμιγμένον ἔχει
 τοῦτο ἢ βλέπον πρὸς αὐτὸ ἐστὶ τοιοῦτον ἢ ποιητι-
 35 κόν ἐστι τοιοῦτου. Τὴν δ' ὑποκειμένην σχήμασι
 καὶ εἶδεσι καὶ μορφαῖς καὶ μέτρῳ καὶ πέρασι καὶ
 ἀλλοτρίῳ κόσμῳ κοσμουμένην, μηδὲν παρ' αὐτῆς
 ἀγαθὸν ἔχουσαν, εἶδωλον δὲ ὡς πρὸς τὰ ὄντα,

¹ These words seem to be a rather stupid gloss on the sentence which follows. Plotinus speaks of both Intellect (VI. 5. 11, VI. 6. 18) and the One (V. 5. 4) as "measure which is not measured," the absolute standard of measurement which transcends all that is measured or numbered and is the source of measure or number.

all this is not accidental to it but in a sort of way its essence; whatever part of it you see, it is all this; and everything which participates in it and is made like it becomes evil, though not essential evil. What sort of entity, then, is it, in which all this is present, not as something different from itself but as itself? For if evil occurs accidentally in something else, it must be something itself first, even if it is not a substance. Just as there is absolute good and good as a quality, so there must be absolute evil and the evil derived from it which inheres in something else. What then is unmeasuredness, if it is not in what is unmeasured? [But what about "measure which is not in that which is measured?"]¹ But just as there is measure which is not in that which is measured, so there is unmeasuredness which is not in the unmeasured. If it is in something else, it is either in something unmeasured—and then this something will have no need of unmeasuredness if it is unmeasured itself—or in something measured; but it is not possible for that which is measured to have unmeasuredness in the respect in which it is measured. So there must be something which is unbounded in itself and absolutely formless and has all the other attributes which we mentioned before as characterising the nature of evil; and if there is anything of the same sort posterior to this, it either has an admixture of this or is of the same sort because it directs its attention towards it, or because it is productive of something of this kind. So that which underlies figures and forms and shapes and measures and limits, decked out with an adornment which belongs to something else, having no good of its own, only a shadow in comparison with real being,

κακοῦ δὴ οὐσίαν, εἴ τις καὶ δύναται κακοῦ οὐσία
εἶναι, ταύτην ἀνευρίσκει ὁ λόγος κακὸν εἶναι
40 πρῶτον καὶ καθ' αὐτὸ κακόν.

4. Σωμάτων δὲ φύσις, καθόσον μετέχει ὕλης,
κακὸν ἂν οὐ πρῶτον εἴη· ἔχει μὲν γὰρ εἶδος τι
οὐκ ἀληθινὸν ἐστέρηται τε ζωῆς φθείρει τε ἀλληλα
φορά τε παρ' αὐτῶν ἄτακτος ἐμποδία τε ψυχῆς
5 πρὸς τὴν αὐτῆς ἐνέργειαν φεύγει τε οὐσίαν ἀεί
ρέοντα, δεύτερον κακόν· ψυχὴ δὲ καθ' ἑαυτὴν μὲν
οὐ κακὴ οὐδ' αὖ πᾶσα κακὴ. Ἄλλὰ τίς ἡ κακὴ;
Οἷόν φησι δουλωσάμενοι μὲν ᾧ πέφυκε
κακία ψυχῆς ἐγγίγνεσθαι, ὡς τοῦ ἀλόγου τῆς
ψυχῆς εἶδους τὸ κακὸν δεχομένου, ἀμετρίαν καὶ
10 ὑπερβολὴν καὶ ἔλλειψιν, ἐξ ὧν καὶ ἀκολασία καὶ
δειλία καὶ ἡ ἄλλη ψυχῆς κακία, ἀκούσια παθήματα,
δόξας ψευδεῖς ἐμποιοῦντα κακά τε νομίζειν καὶ
ἀγαθὰ ἃ φεύγει τε καὶ διώκει. Ἄλλὰ τί τὸ
πεποιηκὸς τὴν κακίαν ταύτην καὶ πῶς εἰς ἀρχὴν
ἐκείνην καὶ αἰτίαν ἀνάξεις; Ἡ πρῶτον μὲν οὐκ
15 ἔξω ὕλης οὐδὲ καθ' αὐτὴν εἶναι ἡ ψυχὴ ἢ τοιαύτη.
Μέμικται οὖν ἀμετρία καὶ ἄμοιρος εἶδους τοῦ
κουμοῦντος καὶ εἰς μέτρον ἄγοντος· σώματι γὰρ
ἐγκέκραται ὕλην ἔχοντι. Ἐπειτα δὲ καὶ τὸ λογι-
ζόμενον εἰ βλάπτοιο, ὄραν κωλύεται καὶ τοῖς
πάθεισι καὶ τῷ ἐπισκοτεῖσθαι τῇ ὕλῃ καὶ πρὸς
20 ὕλην νενευκέναι καὶ ὅλως οὐ πρὸς οὐσίαν, ἀλλὰ
πρὸς γένεσιν ὄραν, ἧς ἀρχὴ ἡ ὕλης φύσις οὕτως

¹ Phaedrus 256B2-3.

is the substance of evil (if there really can be a
substance of evil); this is what our argument
discovers to be the primal evil, absolute evil.

4. The nature of bodies, in so far as it participates
in matter, will be an evil, not the primal evil. For
bodies have a sort of form which is not true form,
and they are deprived of life, and in their disorderly
motion they destroy each other, and they hinder the
soul in its proper activity, and they evade reality in
their continual flow, being secondary evil. The soul
is not in itself evil, nor is it all evil. Which, then, is
the evil soul? It is the sort of thing which Plato
means when he says "those in whom the part of the
soul in which evil naturally resides has been brought
into subjection,"¹ that is, it is the irrational part of
the soul which is receptive of evil, that is of un-
measuredness and excess and defect, from which
come unrestrained wickedness and cowardice and
all the rest of the soul's evil, involuntary affections
which produce false opinions, making it think that
the things which it shuns and seeks after are evil
and good respectively. But what is it which pro-
duces this evil, and how are you going to trace it
back to the source and cause of evil which you have
just described? First of all, this kind of soul is not
outside matter or by itself. So it is mixed with un-
measuredness and without a share in the form which
brings order and reduces to measure, since it is fused
with a body which has matter. And then its reason-
ing part, if that is damaged, is hindered in its seeing
by the passions and by being darkened by matter,
and inclined to matter, and altogether by looking
towards becoming, not being; and the principle of
becoming is the nature of matter, which is so evil

οὔσα κακὴ ὡς καὶ τὸ μήπω ἐν αὐτῇ, μόνον δὲ βλέψαν εἰς αὐτὴν, ἀναπιμπλάναι κακοῦ ἑαυτῆς. Ἄμοιρος γὰρ παντελῶς οὔσα ἀγαθοῦ καὶ στέρησις τούτου καὶ ἄκρατος ἔλλειψις ἐξομοιοῖ ἑαυτῇ πάν
 25 ὅ τι ἂν αὐτῆς προσάβηται ὅπως οὖν. Ἡ μὲν οὖν τελεία καὶ πρὸς νοῦν νεύουσα ψυχὴ αἰεὶ καθαρὰ καὶ ὕλην ἀπέστραπται καὶ τὸ ἀόριστον ἅπαν καὶ τὸ ἄμετρον καὶ κακὸν οὔτε ὄρα ὄντε πελάζει· καθαρὰ οὖν μένει ὀρισθεῖσα νῦν παντελῶς. Ἡ δὲ μὴ μένυσα τοῦτο, ἀλλ' ἐξ αὐτῆς προελθοῦσα τῷ μὴ
 30 τελείῳ μηδὲ πρώτῳ οἶον ἵνδαλμα ἐκείνης τῷ ἐλλείμματι καθόσον ἐνέλιπεν ἀοριστίας πληρωθεῖσα σκότος ὄρα καὶ ἔχει ἤδη ὕλην βλέπουσα εἰς ὃ μὴ βλέπει, ὡς λεγόμεθα ὄραν καὶ τὸ σκότος.

5. Ἄλλ' εἰ ἡ ἔλλειψις τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ αἰτία τοῦ ὄραν καὶ συνεῖναι τῷ σκότει, τὸ κακὸν εἴη ἂν ἐν τῇ ἐλλείψει [ἢ τῷ σκότῳ] τῇ ψυχῇ καὶ πρώτον—
 5 δεύτερον δὲ ἔστω τὸ σκότος—καὶ ἡ φύσις τοῦ κακοῦ οὐκέτι ἐν τῇ ὕλῃ, ἀλλὰ καὶ πρὸ τῆς ὕλης. Ἡ οὐκ ἐν τῇ ὅπως οὖν ἐλλείψει, ἀλλ' ἐν τῇ παντελεῖ τὸ κακόν· τὸ γοῦν ἐλλείπον ὀλίγῳ τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ οὐ κακόν, δύναται γὰρ καὶ τέλειον εἶναι ὡς πρὸς φύσιν τὴν αὐτοῦ. Ἄλλ' ὅταν παντελῶς ἐλλείπη, ὅπερ ἐστὶν ἡ ὕλη, τοῦτο τὸ ὄντως κακόν
 10 μηδεμίαν ἔχον ἀγαθοῦ μοῖραν. Οὐδὲ γὰρ τὸ εἶναι ἔχει ἡ ὕλη, ἵνα ἀγαθοῦ ταύτῃ μετείχεν, ἀλλ' ὁμώνυμον αὐτῇ τὸ εἶναι, ὡς ἀληθὲς εἶναι λέγειν αὐτὸ μὴ εἶναι. Ἡ οὖν ἔλλειψις ἔχει μὲν τὸ μὴ
 288

that it infects with its own evil that which is not in it but only directs its gaze to it. For since it is altogether without any share in good and is a privation of good and a pure lack of it, it makes everything which comes into contact with it in any way like itself. The perfect soul, then, which directs itself to intellect is always pure and turns away from matter and neither sees nor approaches anything undefined and unmeasured and evil. It remains, therefore, pure, completely defined by intellect. That which does not stay like this, but goes out from itself because it is not perfect or primary but is a sort of ghost of the first soul, because of its deficiency, as far as it extends, is filled with indefiniteness and sees darkness, and has matter by looking at that which it does not look at (as we say that we see darkness as well as the things we really see).

5. But if lack of good is the cause of seeing and keeping company with darkness, then evil for the soul will lie in the lack [or the dark] and this will be primary evil—the darkness can be put second—and the nature of evil will no longer be in matter but before matter. Yes, but evil is not in any sort of deficiency but in absolute deficiency; a thing which is only slightly deficient in good is not evil, for it can even be perfect on the level of its own nature. But when something is absolutely deficient—and this is matter—this is essential evil without any share in good. For matter has not even being—if it had it would by this means have a share in good; when we say it “is” we are just using the same word for two different things, and the true way of speaking is to say it “is not.” Deficiency, then, involves being not good, but

ἀγαθὸν εἶναι, ἢ δὲ παντελῆς τὸ κακόν· ἢ δὲ
 πλείων τὸ πεσεῖν εἰς τὸ κακὸν δύνασθαι καὶ ἤδη
 15 κακόν. Τῷ χρηῖ [δη] τὸ κακὸν νοεῖσθαι μὴ τότε τὸ
 κακόν, οἷον ἀδικίαν ἢ ἄλλην τινὰ κακίαν, ἀλλ'
 ἐκείνο δ' οὐδὲν μὲν πῶ τούτων, ταῦτα δὲ οἷον
 εἶδη ἐκείνου προσθήκαις εἰδοποιούμενα· οἷον ἐν
 μὲν ψυχῇ πονηρίαν καὶ ταύτης αὐτῆς εἶδη ἢ ὕλη περι
 ἦν, ἢ τοῖς μέρεσι τῆς ψυχῆς, ἢ τῷ τὸ μὲν οἷον
 20 ὀράν εἶναι, τὸ δὲ ὀρμάν ἢ πάσχειν. Εἰ δὲ τις
 θεῖτο καὶ τὰ ἔξω ψυχῆς κακὰ εἶναι, πῶς ἐπ'
 ἐκείνην τὴν φύσιν ἀνάξει, οἷον νόσον, πενίαν; Ἡ
 νόσον μὲν ἔλλειψιν καὶ ὑπερβολὴν σωμάτων ἐνύλων
 τάξιν καὶ μέτρον οὐκ ἀνεχομένων, αἰσχος δὲ
 ὕλην οὐ κρατηθείσαν εἶδει, πενίαν δὲ ἐνδειαν
 25 καὶ στέρησιν ὧν ἐν χρειᾷ ἐσμὲν διὰ τὴν ὕλην ἢ
 συνεζεύγμεθα φύσιν ἔχουσιν χρησιμοσύνην εἶναι.
 Εἰ δὴ ταῦτα ὀρθῶς λέγεται, οὐ θετέον ἡμᾶς
 ἀρχὴν κακῶν εἶναι κακοῦς παρ' αὐτῶν ὄντας,
 ἀλλὰ πρὸ ἡμῶν ταῦτα· ἃ δ' ἂν ἀνθρώπους
 30 ἀποφυγῆν κακῶν τῶν ἐν ψυχῇ τοῖς δυναθεῖσι,
 πάντας δὲ οὐ δύνασθαι. Θεοῖς δὲ ὕλης παρουσίης
 τοῖς αἰσθητοῖς τὸ κακὸν μὴ παρεῖναι, τὴν κακίαν
 ἢ ἀνθρώποι ἔχουσιν, μηδ' ἀνθρώποις ἅπασιν
 κρατεῖν γὰρ αὐτῆς—ἀμείνους δέ, οἷς μὴ πάρεστι—
 καὶ τούτῳ κρατεῖν δὲ τῷ μὴ ἐν ὕλη ἐν αὐτοῖς ὄντι.
 6. Ἐπισκεπτέον δὲ καὶ πῶς λέγεται μὴ ἂν
 ἀπολέσθαι τὰ κακὰ, ἀλλ' εἶναι ἐξ ἀνάγκης·
 καὶ ἐν θεοῖς μὲν οὐκ εἶναι, περιπολεῖν δὲ τὴν

¹ θεοῖς (Heintz) seems a certain correction for the MSS θεοῖς or
 θέσεις.

absolute deficiency evil; great deficiency involves
 the possibility of falling into evil and is already an
 evil in itself. On this principle one must not think of
 evil as this or that particular kind of evil, injustice
 for instance or any other vice, but that which is not
 yet any of these particular evils; these are a sort of
 species of evil, specified by their own particular
 additions; as wickedness in the soul and its species
 are specified by the matter which they concern or the
 parts of the soul, or by the fact that one is like a sort of
 seeing, another like an impulse or experience.

But if one considers that things external to the soul
 are evils, illness or poverty for instance, how will one
 trace them back to the nature of matter? Illness is
 defect and excess of material bodies which do not
 keep order and measure; ugliness is matter not
 mastered by form; poverty is lack and deprivation of
 things which we need because of the matter with
 which we are coupled, whose very nature is to be
 need. If this is true, then we must not be assumed
 to be the principle of evil as being evil by and from
 ourselves; evils are prior to us, and those that take
 hold on men do not do so with their good will, but
 there is an "escape from the evils in the soul" for
 those who are capable of it, though not all men
 are. Though there is matter with the visible gods¹,
 evil is not there, not the vice which men have—since
 not even all men have it; the visible gods master
 matter,—yet the gods with whom there is no matter
 are better—and they master it by that in them which
 is not in matter.

6. We must consider, too, what Plato means when
 he says "Evils can never be done away with," but
 exist "of necessity"; and that "they have no

θνητὴν φύσιν καὶ τόνδε τὸν τόπον αἰεὶ.
 Ἄρ' οὖν οὕτως εἴρηται, ὡς τοῦ μὲν οὐρανοῦ
 5 καθαροῦ κακῶν ὄντος αἰεὶ ἐν τάξει ἰόντος καὶ
 κόσμῳ φερομένου καὶ μήτε ἀδικίας ἐκεῖ οὔσης
 μήτε ἄλλης κακίας μήτε ἀδικούντα ἄλληλα, κόσμῳ
 δὲ φερόμενα, ἐν γῆ δὲ τῆς ἀδικίας καὶ τῆς ἀταξίας
 οὔσης; Τοῦτο γάρ ἐστιν ἡ θνητὴ φύσις καὶ ὁδε ὁ
 τόπος. Ἄλλὰ τὸ ἐντεῦθεν φεύγειν δεῖ οὐκέτι
 10 περὶ τῶν ἐπὶ γῆς λέγεται. Φυγὴ γάρ, φησιν,
 οὐ τὸ ἐκ γῆς ἀπελθεῖν, ἀλλὰ καὶ ὄντα ἐπὶ γῆς
 δίκαιον καὶ ὅσιον εἶναι μετὰ φρονήσεως, ὡς
 εἶναι τὸ λεγόμενον φεύγειν κακίαν δεῖν, ὥστε τὰ
 κακὰ αὐτῷ ἢ κακία καὶ ὅσα ἐκ κακίας· καὶ τοῦ
 προσδιαλεγόμενου δὲ ἀναίρεσιν λέγοντος κακῶν
 15 ἔσσεσθαι, εἰ πείθοι τοὺς ἀνθρώπους ἃ λέγει,
 ὁ δὲ φησι μὴ δύνασθαι τοῦτο γενέσθαι· τὰ γάρ
 κακὰ εἶναι ἀνάγκη, ἐπεὶ περ τοῦναντίον τι δεῖ
 εἶναι τῷ ἀγαθῷ. Τὴν μὲν οὖν κακίαν τὴν περὶ
 ἀνθρώπων πῶς οἶόν τε ἐναντίον εἶναι ἐκείνῳ τῷ
 ἀγαθῷ; Ἐναντίον γὰρ τοῦτο τῇ ἀρετῇ, αὕτη δὲ οὐ
 20 τὸ ἀγαθόν, ἀλλὰ ἀγαθόν, ὃ κρατεῖν τῆς ὕλης
 ποιεῖ. Ἐκείνῳ δὲ τῷ ἀγαθῷ πῶς ἂν τι εἴη
 ἐναντίον; Οὐ γὰρ δὴ ποῖόν. Εἶτα τίς ἀνάγκη
 πανταχοῦ, εἰ θάτερον τῶν ἐναντίων, καὶ θάτερον;
 Ἐνδεχέσθω μὲν γὰρ καὶ ἔστω γε καὶ τὸ ἐναντίον
 τοῦ ἐναντίου αὐτῷ ὄντος—οἶον ὑγιείας οὔσης
 25 ἐνδέχεται καὶ νόσον εἶναι—οὐ μὴν ἐξ ἀνάγκης.

¹ Here again we have *Theaetetus* 176A (cp. I. 2. 1).

² Plotinus clearly means to reject the suggested interpretation of Plato in terms of the spatial other-worldliness common in his own day, which would make earth the place of evil

place among the gods, but haunt our mortal nature and this region for ever."¹ Is it meant that heaven is "clean of evil" because it always moves regularly and goes on in order, and there is no injustice or other vice there, nor do the heavenly bodies do injustice to each other, but go on in order, but on earth there is injustice and disorder? For this is what is meant by "mortal nature" and "this place." But when he says "we must take flight from thence" he is no longer referring to life on earth.² For "flight," he says, is not going away from earth but being on earth "just and holy with the help of wisdom"; what he means is that we must fly from wickedness; so evil for him is wickedness and all that comes from wickedness; and when the answering speaker in the dialogue says that there would be an end of evils "if he convinced men of the truth of his words" Socrates answers that "this cannot be; evils must exist of necessity, since the good must have its contrary." But how can human wickedness be the contrary of that transcendent Good? Human wickedness is contrary to virtue, and virtue is not the Good, but a good, which enables us to master matter. How can anything be contrary to the transcendent Good? It is not of a particular quality; and then what universal necessity is there, that if one of a pair of contraries exists, the other must also exist? Granted that it is possible, and may in fact be the case, that when one contrary exists, the other does also—as when health exists sickness can also exist—all the same it is not necessarily so. But Plato does

and the visible heavens above the moon altogether good and pure. The quotations here and in what follows are all from *Theaetetus*, 176-7.

Ἡ οὐκ ἀνάγκη λέγειν αὐτόν, ὡς ἐπὶ παντός ἐναντίου τοῦτο ὑληθές, ἀλλ' ἐπὶ τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ εἴρηται. Ἄλλ' εἰ οὐσία τὰγαθόν, πῶς ἔστιν αὐτῷ τι ἐναντίον; ἢ τῷ ἐπέκεινα οὐσίας; Τὸ μὲν οὖν μὴ εἶναι μηδὲν οὐσία ἐναντίον ἐπὶ τῶν καθ' ἕκαστα οὐσιῶν ἔστι πιωτόν τῇ ἐπαγωγῇ δεδειγμένον. ὅλως δὲ οὐσία οὐκ ἔστι δεδειγμένον. Ἄλλὰ τί τῇ καθόλου οὐσία ἔσται ἐναντίον καὶ ὅλως τοῖς πρώτοις; Ἡ τῇ μὲν οὐσία ἢ μὴ οὐσία, τῇ δὲ ἀγαθοῦ φύσει ἢτις ἐστὶ κακοῦ φύσις καὶ ἀρχή· ἀρχαὶ γὰρ ἄμφω, ἢ μὲν κακῶν, ἢ δὲ ἀγαθῶν. καὶ πάντα τὰ ἐν τῇ φύσει ἑκατέρω ἐναντία. ὥστε καὶ τὰ ὅλα ἐναντία καὶ μᾶλλον ἐναντία ἢ τὰ ἄλλα. Τὰ μὲν γὰρ ἄλλα ἐναντία ἢ ἐν τῷ αὐτῷ εἶδει ὄντα ἢ ἐν τῷ αὐτῷ γένει καὶ κοινοῦ τινός ἐστι μετεληφότα ἐν οἷς ἔστιν. οὐα δὲ χωρὶς ἔστι, καὶ ἂ τῷ ἐτέρω ἐστὶ συμπληρώσει τοῦ ὅ ἐστι, τούτων τὰ ἐναντία ἐν τῷ ἐτέρω ἐστί, πῶς οὐ μάλιστα ἂν εἴη ἐναντία, εἴπερ ἐναντία τὰ πλείστον ἀλλήλων ἀφεστηκότα; Πέρατι δὲ καὶ μέτρῳ καὶ [τὰ ἄλλα,] ὅσα ἔνεστιν ἐν τῇ θείᾳ φύσει, ἀπειρία καὶ ἀμετρία καὶ τὰ ἄλλα, ὅσα ἔχει ἢ κακῆ φύσις, ἐναντία. ὥστε καὶ τὸ ὅλον τῷ ὅλῳ ἐναντίον. Καὶ τὸ εἶναι δὲ ψευδόμενον ἔχει καὶ πρώτως καὶ ὄντως ψεῦδος· τῷ δὲ τὸ εἶναι τὸ ἀληθῶς εἶναι. ὥστε καὶ καθὰ τὸ ψεῦδος τῷ ἀληθεί ἐναντίον καὶ τὸ <μῆ> κατ' οὐσίαν τῷ κατ' οὐσίαν αὐτῆς ἐναντίον. Ὡστε ἡμῖν ἀνα-

not necessarily mean that this is true in the case of every contrary; he is only referring to the Good. But if the Good is substance, or something which transcends substance, how can it have any contrary? That there is nothing contrary to substance is established by inductive demonstration in the case of particular substances; but it has not been demonstrated that this applies in general. But what can there be contrary to universal substance and, in general, to the first principles? Non-substance is contrary to substance, and that which is the nature and principle of evil to the nature of good: for both are principles, one of evils, the other of goods; and all the things which are included in each nature are contrary to those in the other; so that the wholes are contrary, and more contrary to each other than are the other contraries. For the other contraries belong to the same species or the same genus and have something in common as a result of this belonging. But things which are completely separate, and in which there are present in one the contraries to whatever is necessary for the fulfilment of the being of the other, must surely be most of all contraries, if by contraries we mean things that are furthest of all removed from each other. Indefiniteness and unmeasuredness and all the other characteristics which the evil nature has are contrary to the definition and measure and all the characteristics present in the divine nature; so the whole, too, is contrary to the whole. The evil nature, too, has a false being, primary and absolute falsehood; the being of the divine is true being; so that as falsehood is contrary to truth, so is the non-substantiality of the evil nature contrary to the substantial reality of

πέφανται τὸ μὴ πανταχοῦ οὐσίᾳ μηδὲν εἶναι
 ἐναντίον· ἐπεὶ καὶ ἐπὶ πυρὸς καὶ ὕδατος ἐδεξάμεθα
 50 ἂν εἶναι ἐναντία, εἰ μὴ κοινὸν ἦν ἡ ὕλη ἐν αὐτοῖς,
 ἐφ' ἧς τὸ θερμὸν καὶ ξηρὸν καὶ ὑγρὸν καὶ ψυχρὸν
 συμβεβηκότα ἐγένετο· εἰ δ' ἐπ' αὐτῶν ἦν μόνα
 τὴν οὐσίαν αὐτῶν συμπληροῦντα ἄνευ τοῦ κοινοῦ,
 ἐγένετο ἂν ἐναντίον καὶ ἐνταῦθα, οὐσία οὐσία
 ἐναντίον. Τὰ ἄρα πάντα κεχωρισμένα καὶ μηδὲν
 55 ἔχοντα κοινὸν καὶ πλείστην ἀπόστασιν ἔχοντα ἐν
 τῇ φύσει αὐτῶν ἐναντία· ἐπεὶπερ ἡ ἐναντίωσις
 οὐχ ἡ ποῖόν τι οὐδὲ ὅπως ὅτιοῦν γένος τῶν ὄντων,
 ἀλλ' ἡ πλείστον ἀλλήλων κεχώρισται καὶ ἐξ
 ἀντιθέτων συνέστηκε καὶ τὰ ἐναντία ποιεῖ.

7. Ἀλλὰ πῶς οὖν ἐξ ἀνάγκης, εἰ τὸ ἀγαθόν, καὶ
 τὸ κακόν; Ἄρ' οὖν οὕτως ὅτι ἐν τῷ παντὶ δεῖ
 τὴν ὕλην εἶναι; Ἐξ ἐναντίων γὰρ ἐξ ἀνάγκης τόδε
 τὸ πᾶν ἢ οὐδ' ἂν εἴη μὴ ὕλης οὐσης. Μεμιγ-
 5 μένη γὰρ οὖν δὴ ἡ τοῦδε τοῦ κόσμου φύσις
 ἔκ τε νοῦ καὶ ἀνάγκης, καὶ ὅσα παρὰ θεοῦ εἰς
 αὐτὸν ἦκει, ἀγαθὰ, τὰ δὲ κακὰ ἐκ τῆς ἀρχαίας
 φύσεως, τὴν ὕλην λέγων τὴν ὑποκειμένην οὕτω
 κοσμηθείσαν [εἰ θεῶτο]. Ἀλλὰ πῶς θνητὴν

¹ *Timaeus* 47E5-48A1.

² There is an allusion here to *Politics* 273B5 and D4.

³ *Timaeus* 41B2-4. If the material universe is never to be dissolved, then matter-evil is a permanent element in our mortal life, from which we cannot escape by getting into a

the divine. So we have shown that it is not universally true that there is nothing contrary to substance. Besides, even in the case of fire and water, we should accept that they were contraries if they did not have matter as a common element in them, in which hot and dry and wet and cold occurred as accidents. If they only had the things which go to make up their substantial forms without what they have in common, there would be here too a contrariety of substance to substance. So things which are altogether separate, and have nothing in common, and are as far apart as they can be, are contrary in their very nature: for their contrariety does not depend on quality or any other category of being, but on their furthest possible separation from each other, and on their being made up of opposites and on their contrary action.

7. But how then is it necessary that if the Good exists, so should evil? Is it because there must be matter in the All? This All must certainly be composed of contrary principles; it would not exist at all if matter did not exist. "For the generation of this universe was a mixed result of the combination of intellect and necessity."¹ What comes into it from God is good; the evil comes from the "ancient nature" (Plato means the underlying matter, not yet set in order).² But what does he mean by "mortal nature," granted that "this place" refers to the All? The answer is given where he says "Since you have come into being, you are not immortal, but you shall by no means be dissolved" through me.³ If this is so, the statement is superior part of the universe but only by a radical inner detachment from the body.

φύσιν; Τὸ μὲν γὰρ τόνδε τὸν τόπον ἔστω
 δεικνύειν τὸ πᾶν. Ἡ τὸ ἄλλ' ἐπέειπερ ἐγένεσθε,
 10 ἀθάνατοι μὲν οὐκ ἔστε, οὔτι γε μὴν λυθή-
 σεσθε δι' ἐμέ. Εἰ δὴ οὕτως, ὀρθῶς ἂν λέγοιτο
 μὴ ἂν ἀπολέσθαι τὰ κακά. Πῶς οὖν ἐκφεύξε-
 ται; Οὐ τῷ τόπῳ, φησίν, ἀλλ' ἀρετὴν κτησάμενος
 καὶ τοῦ σώματος αὐτὸν χωρίσας· οὕτω γὰρ καὶ
 ὕλης· ὡς ὁ γε συνὼν τῷ σώματι καὶ ὕλῃ σύνεστι.
 15 Ἐὶ δὲ χωρίσαι καὶ μὴ δῆλόν που αὐτὸς ποιεῖ τὸ
 δ' ἐν θεοῖς εἶναι, ἐν τοῖς νοητοῖς· οὗτοι γὰρ
 ἀθάνατοι. Ἔστι δὲ τοῦ κακοῦ λαβεῖν καὶ οὕτω
 τὴν ἀνάγκην. Ἐπεὶ γὰρ οὐ μόνον τὸ ἀγαθόν,
 ἀνάγκη τῇ ἐκβάσει τῇ παρ' αὐτό, ἢ, εἰ οὕτω τις
 ἐθέλοι λέγειν, τῇ αἰεὶ ὑποβάσει καὶ ἀποστάσει, τὸ
 20 ἔσχατον, καὶ μεθ' ὃ οὐκ ἦν ἔτι γενέσθαι ὀτιοῦν,
 τοῦτο εἶναι τὸ κακόν. Ἐξ ἀνάγκης δὲ εἶναι τὸ
 μετὰ τὸ πρῶτον, ὥστε καὶ τὸ ἔσχατον· τοῦτο δὲ
 ἢ ὕλη μὴδὲν ἔτι ἔχουσα αὐτοῦ. Καὶ αὕτη ἢ
 ἀνάγκη τοῦ κακοῦ.

8. Εἰ δέ τις λέγοι μὴ διὰ τὴν ὕλην ἡμᾶς γενέσθαι
 κακοῦς—μήτε γὰρ τὴν ἄγνοιαν διὰ τὴν ὕλην εἶναι
 μήτε τὰς ἐπιθυμίας τὰς πονηράς· καὶ γὰρ, εἰ διὰ
 σώματος κακίαν ἢ σύστασις γίνουτο, μὴ τὴν ὕλην,
 5 ἀλλὰ τὸ εἶδος ποιεῖν, οἷον θερμότητος, ψυχρότητας,
 πικρὸν, ἀλμυρὸν καὶ ὅσα χυμῶν εἶδη, ἔτι πληρί-
 σεις, κενώσεις, καὶ πληρώσεις οὐχ ἀπλῶς, ἀλλὰ
 πληρώσεις τοιῶνδε, καὶ ὅλως τὸ τοιῶνδε εἶναι τὸ
 ποιοῦν τὴν διαφορὰν τῶν ἐπιθυμιῶν καί, εἰ βούλει,
 δοξῶν ἐσφαλμένων, ὥστε τὸ εἶδος μᾶλλον ἢ τὴν
 10 ὕλην τὸ κακόν εἶναι—καὶ οὗτος οὐδὲν ἤττον τὴν
 ὕλην συγχωρεῖν ἀναγκασθήσεται τὸ κακὸν εἶναι.
 298

correct that "evils will never be done away with."
 How then is one to escape? Not by movement in
 place, Plato says, but by winning virtue and separat-
 ing oneself from the body: for in this way one
 separates oneself from matter as well, since the man
 who lives in close connection with the body is also
 closely connected with matter. Plato himself
 explains somewhere about separating or not separat-
 ing oneself: but being "among the gods" means
 "among the beings of the world of intellect"; for
 these are immortal.

One can grasp the necessity of evil in this way too.
 Since not only the Good exists, there must be the
 last end to the process of going out past it, or if one
 prefers to put it like this, going down or going away:
 and this last, after which nothing else can come into
 being, is evil. Now it is necessary that what comes
 after the First should exist, and therefore that the
 Last should exist; and this is matter, which possesses
 nothing at all of the Good. And in this way too evil
 is necessary.

8. But if someone says that we do not become evil
 because of matter—giving as a reason that ignorance
 is not caused by matter, nor are bad desires; even
 supposing that their coming into existence is caused
 by the badness of body, it is not the matter but the
 form that causes them, heat, cold, bitter, salt and all
 the forms of flavour, and also fillings and emptyings,
 and not just fillings, but fillings with bodies of a
 particular quality; and in general it is the qualified
 thing which produces the distinction of desires, and,
 if you like, of falsified opinions, so that form rather
 than matter is evil—he too will be compelled all the
 same to admit that matter is evil. For what the

Ἄ τε γὰρ ποιεῖ ἢ ἐν ὕλῃ ποιότης, οὐ χωρὶς οὐσα
 ποιεῖ, ὥσπερ οὐδὲ τὸ σχῆμα τοῦ πελέκεως ἀνεῖ
 σιδήρου ποιεῖ· εἶτα καὶ τὰ ἐν τῇ ὕλῃ εἶδη οὐ
 ταῦτά ἐστιν, ἅπερ ἦν, εἰ ἐφ' αὐτῶν ὑπήρχεν, ἀλλὰ
 15 λόγοι ἐνυλοὶ φθαρέντες ἐν ὕλῃ καὶ τῆς φύσεως
 τῆς ἐκείνης ἀναπλησθέντες· οὐδὲ γὰρ τὸ πῦρ
 αὐτὸ καίει οὐδὲ ἄλλο τι τῶν ἐφ' ἑαυτῶν ταῦτα
 ἐργάζεται, ἀ ἐν τῇ ὕλῃ γενόμενα λέγεται ποιεῖν.
 Γενομένη γὰρ κυρία τοῦ εἰς αὐτὴν ἐμφαντασθέντος
 20 φθείρει αὐτὸ καὶ διόλλυσι τὴν αὐτῆς παραθεῖσα
 φύσιν ἐναντίαν οὐσαν, οὐ τῷ θερμῷ τὸ ψυχρὸν
 προσφέρουσα, ἀλλὰ τῷ εἶδει τοῦ θερμοῦ τὸ αὐτῆς
 ἀνείδεον προσάγουσα καὶ τὴν ἀμορφίαν τῇ μορφῇ
 καὶ ὑπερβολὴν καὶ ἔλλειψιν τῷ μεμετρημένῳ, ἕως
 ἂν αὐτὸ ποιήσῃ αὐτῆς, ἀλλὰ μὴ αὐτοῦ ἔτι εἶναι,
 25 ὥσπερ ἐν τροφῇ ζώων τὸ εἰσενεχθὲν μηκέτι εἶναι
 ὅπερ προσελήλυθεν, ἀλλ' αἷμα κινὸς καὶ πᾶν
 κύνιον, καὶ χυμοὶ πάντες ὅσπερ τοῦ δεξαμένου
 ἐκείνου. Εἰ δὲ τὸ σῶμα αἴτιον τῶν κακῶν, ὕλη ἂν
 εἶη καὶ ταύτη αἴτιον τῶν κακῶν. Ἄλλὰ κρατεῖν
 ἔδει, ἄλλος ἂν εἴποι. Ἄλλ' οὐ καθαρὸν τὸ
 30 δυνάμενον κρατεῖν, εἰ μὴ φύγοι. Καὶ σφοδρότεραι
 δὲ αἱ ἐπιθυμίαι κράσει τοιαύδε σωμάτων, ἀλλαι δὲ
 ἄλλων, ὥστε μὴ κρατεῖν τὸ ἐν ἐκάστῳ, ἀμβλύτεροι
 δὲ καὶ πρὸς τὸ κρίνειν διὰ σωμάτων κάκιον
 κατεψηγμένοι καὶ ἐμπεποδισμένοι, αἱ δ' ἐναντίαι
 ποιοῦσιν ἀνερματίστους. Μαρτυροῦσι δὲ ταῦτα καὶ
 35 αἱ πρὸς καιρὸν ἕξεις. Πλήρεις μὲν γὰρ ἄλλοι καὶ

¹ Cp. Aristotle, *De Anima* B. 1. 412b12. This is good
 Aristotelian doctrine used to lead to a very un-Aristotelian
 conclusion.

quality in matter does, it does not do when it is
 separate, as the shape of the axe does not do anything
 without the iron.¹ Then, too, the forms in matter
 are not the same as they would be if they were by
 themselves; they are formative forces immanent in
 matter, corrupted in matter and infected with its
 nature. Essential fire does not burn, nor do any
 other forms existing by themselves do what they are
 said to do when they come to exist in matter. For
 matter masters what is imaged in it and corrupts and
 destroys it by applying its own nature which is
 contrary to form, not bringing cold to hot but putting
 its own formlessness to the form of heat and its
 shapelessness to the shape and its excess and defect
 to that which is measured, till it has made the form
 belong to matter and no longer to itself; just as
 when animals feed that which is taken in is no longer
 as it came but becomes dog's blood and everything
 doggish, and all the juices become like those of the
 animal which receives them. If then the body is the
 cause of evils, matter would be in this way too the
 cause of evils.

But, someone else might say, we have to get the
 better of it. But that which could get the better of it
 is not in a pure state unless it escapes. And the
 passions are stronger because of a corresponding
 mixture of bodies, and some people's passions are
 stronger than others', so that the individual's power
 cannot get the better of them, and some people
 have their powers of judgement dulled because
 bodily badness has chilled and restricted them; the
 opposite vices of bodily constitution make them
 unstable. The variations in our state of mind at
 different times are evidence of this too. When we

ταῖς ἐπιθυμίαις καὶ ταῖς διανοαίαις, κενοὶ δὲ ἄλλοι,
καὶ ταδὶ πληρωθέντες ἄλλοι, ταδὶ δὲ ἄλλοι.
Ἐστω δὴ πρῶτως μὲν τὸ ἄμετρον κακόν, τὸ δ' ἐν
ἀμετρίᾳ γενόμενον ἢ ὁμοιώσει ἢ μεταλήψει τῷ
40 συμβεβηκέναι αὐτῷ δευτέρως κακόν· καὶ πρῶτως
μὲν τὸ σκότος, τὸ δὲ ἐσκοτισμένον δευτέρως
ὡσαύτως. Κακία δὴ ἄγνοια οὔσα καὶ ἀμετρία
περὶ ψυχὴν δευτέρως κακόν καὶ οὐκ αὐτοκακόν·
οὐδὲ γὰρ ἀρετὴ πρῶτον ἀγαθόν, ἀλλ' ὅ τι ὁμοίωται
ἢ μετέληφεν αὐτοῦ.

9. Τίνοι οὖν ἐγνωρίσαμεν ταῦτα; Καὶ πρῶτον
κακίαν τίνοι; Ἀρετὴν μὲν γὰρ νῶ αὐτῷ καὶ
φρονήσει· αὐτὴν γὰρ γνωρίζει· κακίαν δὲ πῶς;
Ἦ ὡσπερ κανόνι τὸ ὀρθὸν καὶ μή, οὕτω καὶ τὸ
5 μὴ ἐναρμόζον τῇ ἀρετῇ [κακίαν]. Βλέποντες οὖν
αὐτὸ ἢ μὴ βλέποντες, τὴν κακίαν λέγω; Ἦ τὴν
μὲν παντελῆ κακίαν οὐ βλέποντες· καὶ γὰρ
ἄπειρον ἀφαιρέσει οὖν τὸ μηδαμοῦ τοῦτο· τὴν
δὲ μὴ παντελῆ τῷ ἐλλείπειν τούτῳ. Μέρος οὖν
ὁρῶντες τῷ παρόντι μέρει τὸ ἀπὸν λαμβάνοντες,
10 ὅ ἐστι μὲν ἐν τῷ ὄλῳ εἶδει, ἐκεῖ δὲ ἄπειστον, οὕτω
κακίαν λέγομεν, ἐν ἀορίστῳ τὸ ἐστερημένον
καταλιπόντες. Καὶ δὴ ἐπὶ τῆς ὕλης οἶον αἰσχρὸν
τι πρόσωπον ἰδόντες, οὐ κρατήσαντος ἐν αὐτῷ τοῦ
λόγου, ὥστε κρύψαι τὸ τῆς ὕλης αἰσχος, αἰσχρὸν
φантаζόμεθα τῇ τοῦ εἶδους ἐλλείψει. Ὁ δὲ

are full we are different, both in our desires and our
thoughts, from what we are when we are empty, and
when we have eaten our fill of one kind of food we are
different from what we are when we are filled with
another.

So then, let unmeasure be the primary evil, and
that which is in a state of unmeasuredness by like-
ness or participation evil in a secondary sense,
because its unmeasuredness is accidental. Primary
evil is the darkness, secondary evil the darkened, in
the same way. Vice, which is ignorance and un-
measuredness in the soul, is evil secondarily, not
absolute evil: just as virtue is not primary good, but
that which is made like to or participates in it.

9. With what, then, do we know good and evil?
First, of all, with what do we know vice? We know
virtue by our very intellect and power of thought; it
knows itself: but how do we know vice? Just as
with a ruler we know what is straight and also
what is not straight, so we know what does not
fit with virtue. Do we see it then or do we not see it
when we know it, vice I mean? We do not see
absolute wickedness, because it is unbounded; we
know it by removal, as what is in no way virtue;
but we know vice which is not absolute by its fall-
ing short of virtue. So we see a part, and by the
part which is there we grasp what is not there,
which is in the complete form but missing in that
particular thing, and so we speak of vice, leaving
the missing part in indefiniteness. So too, when
for instance we see an ugly face in matter, because
the formative principle in it has not got the better of
the matter so as to hide its ugliness, we picture it to
ourselves as ugly because it falls short of the form.

15 μηδαμῆ εἶδους τετύχηκε, πῶς; Ἡ τὸ <πάν> παρά-
 παν εἶδος ἀφαιρούντες [πάν εἶδος], ᾧ μὴ ταῦτα
 πάρεστι, λέγομεν εἶναι ὕλην, ἀμορφίαν καὶ αὐτοὶ
 ἐν ἡμῖν λαβόντες ἐν τῷ πάν εἶδος ἀφελεῖν, εἰ
 ἐμέλλομεν ὕλην θεάσασθαι. Διὸ καὶ νοῦς ἄλλος
 οὗτος, οὐ νοῦς, τολμήσας ἰδεῖν τὰ μὴ αὐτοῦ.
 20 Ὡσπερ ὄμμα ἀποστήσαν αὐτὸ φωτός, ἵνα ἴδῃ τὸ
 σκότος καὶ μὴ ἴδῃ—τὸ καταλιπεῖν τὸ φῶς, ἵνα
 ἴδῃ τὸ σκότος, μεθ' οὗ οὐκ ἦν ἰδεῖν αὐτό· οὐδ'
 αὐτὸ ἀνευ τοῦ οἶόν τε ἦν ἰδεῖν, ἀλλὰ μὴ ἰδεῖν—ἵνα
 γένηται αὐτῷ ὡς οἶόν τε ἰδεῖν, οὕτως οὖν καὶ νοῦς,
 εἴσω αὐτοῦ τὸ αὐτοῦ καταλιπὼν φῶς καὶ οἶον
 25 ἔξω αὐτοῦ προσελθὼν εἰς τὰ μὴ αὐτοῦ ἐλθὼν, μὴ
 ἐπαγόμενος τὸ ἑαυτοῦ φῶς ἔπαθε τούναντίον ἢ
 ἑαυτοῦ, ἵν' ἴδῃ τὸ αὐτῷ ἐναντίον.

10. Καὶ ταῦτα μὲν ταύτη. Ἄποιος δὲ οὐσα
 πῶς κακῆ; Ἡ ἄποιος λέγεται τῷ μηδὲν ἔχειν
 αὐτῇ ἐφ' ἑαυτῆς τούτων τῶν ποιότητων ὡς δέξεται
 καὶ ἐν αὐτῇ ὡς ὑποκειμένῳ ἔσσονται, οὐ μὴν
 5 οὕτως, ὡς μηδεμίαν φύσιν ἔχειν. Εἰ δὲ ἔχει τινὰ
 φύσιν, ταύτην τὴν φύσιν τί κωλύει κακὴν εἶναι,
 οὐκ οὕτω δὲ κακὴν, ὡς ποιόν; Ἐπειδὴ καὶ τὸ
 ποιὸν τοῦτό ἐστι, καθ' ὃ ἕτερον ποιὸν λέγεται.
 Συμβεβηκὸς οὖν τὸ ποιὸν καὶ ἐν ἄλλῳ· ἢ δὲ ὕλη
 οὐκ ἐν ἄλλῳ, ἀλλὰ τὸ ὑποκείμενον, καὶ τὸ συμβε-
 10 βηκὸς περὶ αὐτό. Τοῦ οὖν ποιού τοῦ φύσιν
 συμβεβηκίως ἔχοντος οὐ τυχούσα ἄποιος λέγεται.
 Εἰ ποῖνον καὶ ἢ ποιότης αὐτῇ ἄποιος, πῶς ἢ ὕλη

But how do we know what has absolutely no part in form? By absolutely taking away all form, we call that in which there is no form matter; in the process of taking away all form we apprehend formlessness in ourselves, if we propose to look at matter. So this which sees matter is another intellect which is not intellect, since it presumes to see what is not its own. As an eye withdraws itself from the light so that it may see the darkness and not see it—leaving the light is so that it may see the darkness, since with the light it cannot see it; but without something it cannot see, but only not see—that it may be able to see in the way it is possible to see darkness; so intellect, leaving its own light in itself and as it were going outside itself and coming to what is not its own, by not bringing its own light with it experiences something contrary to itself, that it may see its own contrary.

10. So that is how this is. But if matter is without quality, how is it evil? It is called "without quality" because it has in its own right none of the qualities which it is going to receive and which are going to be in it as their substrate, but not in the sense that it has no nature at all. Well then, if it has a nature, what prevents this nature from being evil, but not evil in the way it would be if it had quality? Furthermore, quality is that in virtue of which something else is said to have quality. So quality occurs accidentally, and in something else, but matter is not in something else, but is the substratum on which the accident occurs. Since it has not the quality which has the nature of an accident, it is said to be without quality. Then too, if quality in itself is without quality, how could matter which

οὐ δεξαμένη ποιότητα ποιά ἂν λέγοιτο; Ὁρθῶς ἄρα λέγεται καὶ ἄποιος εἶναι καὶ κακή· οὐ γὰρ λέγεται κακή τῷ ποιότητι ἔχειν, ἀλλὰ μάλλον
 15 τῷ ποιότητι μὴ ἔχειν, ἵνα μὴ ᾗν ἴσως κακή εἶδος οὐσα, ἀλλὰ μὴ ἐναντία τῷ εἶδει φύσις.

11. Ἄλλ' ἢ ἐναντία τῷ εἶδει παντὶ φύσις στέρησις· στέρησις δὲ αἰεὶ ἐν ἄλλῳ καὶ ἐπ' αὐτῆς οὐχ ὑπόπτωσις· ὥστε τὸ κακὸν εἴ ἐν στερήσει, ἐν τῷ ἐστερημένῳ εἶδους τὸ κακὸν ἔσται· ὥστε καθ'
 5 εἰς αὐτὸ οὐκ ἔσται. Εἰ οὖν ἐν τῇ ψυχῇ ἔσται κακόν, ἢ στέρησις ἐν αὐτῇ τὸ κακὸν καὶ ἢ κακία ἔσται καὶ οὐδὲν ἔξω. Ἐπεὶ καὶ ἄλλοι λόγοι τὴν ὕλην ὅλως ἀναιρεῖν ἀξιούσιν, οἱ δὲ οὐδ' αὐτὴν κακὴν εἶναι οὐσαν. Οὐδὲν οὖν δεῖ ἄλλοθι ζητεῖν τὸ κακόν, ἀλλὰ θέμενον ἐν ψυχῇ οὕτω θέσθαι ἀπουσίαν
 10 ἀγαθοῦ εἶναι. Ἄλλ' εἴ ἢ στέρησις ἐπιβάλλοντός ἐστι παρεῖναι εἶδους τινός, εἰ τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ στέρησις ἐν ψυχῇ, τὴν δὲ κακίαν ἐν αὐτῇ ποιεῖ τῷ λόγῳ τῷ εἰς αὐτῆς, ἢ ψυχῇ οὐδὲν ἔχει ἀγαθόν· οὐ τοίνυν οὐδὲ ζῶν οὐσα ψυχῇ. Ἄψυχον ἄρα ἔσται ἢ ψυχῇ, εἴπερ μὴδὲ ζῶν· ὥστε ψυχῇ οὐσα οὐκ ἔσται
 15 ψυχῇ. Ἐχει ἄρα τῷ εἰς αὐτῆς λόγῳ ζῶν· ὥστε οὐ στέρησιν ἔχει τὴν τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ παρ' αὐτῆς. Ἀγαθοειδὲς ἄρα ἔχουσι τι ἀγαθὸν νοῦ ἵχνος καὶ οὐ κακὸν παρ' αὐτῆς· οὐκ ἄρα οὐδὲ πρῶτως κακὸν οὐδὲ συμβεβηκός τι αὐτῇ τὸ πρῶτως κακόν, ὅτι μὴδὲ ἀπεστιν αὐτῆς πᾶν τὸ ἀγαθόν.

¹ This is the Aristotelian doctrine, implying the distinction between matter and privation which forms the basis of Aristotle's criticism of the Platonic doctrine of matter

has not received quality be said to have it? So it is rightly said to be both without quality and evil; for it is not called evil because it has, but rather because it has not quality; so that perhaps it would not have been evil if it was a form instead of a nature opposed to form.

11. But the nature which is opposed to all form is privation; but privation is always in something else and has no existence by itself.¹ So if evil consists in privation, it will exist in the thing deprived of form and have no independent existence. So if there is evil in the soul, it will be the privation in it which will be evil and vice, and nothing outside. There are some lines of argument which claim to abolish matter altogether, and others which say that though it exists it is not itself evil: so [on these assumptions] one should not look for evil elsewhere, but place it in the soul in such a way that it is simply absence of good. But if the privation is privation of a form which ought to be present, if the privation in the soul is a privation of good and produces vice in the soul corresponding to its own definition, soul then has no good in it; so then it has no life in it, though it is still soul. So then soul will be soulless, if it has not even any life in it; so though it is still a soul it will not be a soul. But it has life by its own definition; so it does not have the privation of good from itself: so it is a thing of a good kind since it has some good, a trace of intellect, and it is not evil of itself. It is not then primary evil, nor is primary evil an accident of it, because the good is not altogether absent from it.

(*Physics* I. 9) and which is attacked by Plotinus in II. 4. 14 (see note there).

12. Τί οὖν, εἰ μὴ παντελῆ στέρησιν λέγοι ἀγαθοῦ τὴν κακίαν καὶ τὸ κακὸν τὸ ἐν ψυχῇ, ἀλλὰ τινα στέρησιν ἀγαθοῦ; Ἄλλ' εἰ τοῦτο, τὸ μὲν ἔχουσα, τοῦ δὲ ἐστερημένη, μικτὴν ἔξει τῆν
5 διάθεσιν καὶ οὐκ ἄκρατον τὸ κακόν, καὶ οὕτω εὐρηται τὸ πρῶτον καὶ ἄκρατον κακόν· καὶ τὸ μὲν ἀγαθὸν τῇ ψυχῇ ἔσται ἐν οὐσίᾳ, συμβεβηκὸς δέ τι τὸ κακόν.

13. Εἰ μὴ ἄρα τούτῳ τὸ κακὸν ἢ ἐμπόδιον, ὡσπερ ὀφθαλμῷ πρὸς τὸ βλέπειν. Ἄλλ' οὕτω ποιητικὸν κακοῦ ἔσται τὸ κακὸν αὐτοῖς, καὶ οὕτω ποιητικόν, ὡς ἑτέρου τοῦ κακοῦ αὐτοῦ ὄντος. Εἰ οὖν ἢ κακία ἐμπόδιον τῇ ψυχῇ; ποιητικόν
5 κακοῦ, ἀλλ' οὐ τὸ κακὸν ἢ κακία ἔσται· καὶ ἢ ἀρετὴ δὲ οὐ τὸ ἀγαθόν, ἀλλ' ἢ ὡς συνεργόν· ὥστε, εἰ μὴ ἢ ἀρετὴ τὸ ἀγαθόν, οὐδ' ἢ κακία τὸ κακόν. Εἶτα καὶ ἢ ἀρετὴ οὐκ αὐτὸ τὸ καλόν· οὐδ' αὐτοαγαθόν· οὐ τοίνυν οὐδ' ἢ κακία αὐτὸ τὸ αἰσχροὸν οὐδ' αὐτοκακόν. Ἐφάμεν δὲ τὴν ἀρετὴν
10 οὐκ αὐτοκαλὸν οὐδ' αὐτοαγαθόν, ὅτι πρὸ αὐτῆς καὶ ἐπέκεινα αὐτῆς αὐτοκαλὸν καὶ αὐτοαγαθόν· καὶ μεταλήψει πως ἀγαθόν καὶ καλόν. Ὡς οὖν ἀπὸ τῆς ἀρετῆς ἀναβαίνουντι τὸ καλόν καὶ τὸ ἀγαθόν, οὕτω καὶ ἀπὸ τῆς κακίας καταβαίνουντι τὸ κακόν αὐτό, ἀρξαμένῳ μὲν ἀπὸ τῆς κακίας.
15 Θεωροῦντι μὲν ἢ θεωρία ἥτις ἐστὶ τοῦ κακοῦ αὐτοῦ, γινομένῳ δὲ ἢ μετάληψις αὐτοῦ γίνεται γὰρ παντάπασιν ἐν τῷ τῆς ἀνομοιότητος

¹ Plato speaks of the "bottomless sea of unlikeness" in *Politicus* 273D6-E1. S. Augustine uses Plotinus's phrase, *in regione dissimilitudinis*, of the state of alienation from God

12. But what is the answer if someone says that the vice and evil in the soul is not absolute privation of good, but only a [particular, limited] privation of good? In this case, if it has some good and is deprived of some, it will be in a mixed state and the evil will not be undiluted, and we have not yet found primary, undiluted evil: and the soul will have good in its very substance, but evil as some kind of accident.

13. But perhaps evil is an impediment to good, as the eye has impediments which prevent its seeing. Yes, but in this way evil will be what produces evil for the things where it occurs, and produces it in such a way that the actual evil produced is different from the evil which produces it. If then vice is an impediment to the soul, it is not evil but something which produces evil; and virtue is not the good, except in so far as it helps to produce it: so if virtue is not good, vice is not evil. Then too, virtue is not absolute beauty or absolute good; so it follows that vice is not absolute ugliness or absolute evil. We said that virtue was not absolute beauty or absolute good because absolute beauty and absolute good are prior to it and transcend it; it is good and beautiful by some kind of participation. So just as when one goes up from virtue one comes to the beautiful and the good, when one goes down from vice one comes to absolute evil, taking vice as the starting-point. One will contemplate it with the contemplation which belongs to absolute evil, and participate in it when one becomes it: one enters altogether into "the region of unlikeness"¹ when one sinks into it

in *Confessions*, VII. 10. 16. The "mud" is Orphic, taken over by Plato. Cp. *Phaedo* 69C6.

τύπῳ, ἔνθα δὺς εἰς αὐτὴν εἰς βόρβορον σκο-
 τεῖνον ἔσται πεσών· ἐπεὶ καὶ εἰ παντελῶς εἴη ἡ
 ψυχὴ εἰς παντελὴ κακίαν, οὐκέτι κακίαν ἔχει, ἀλλ'
 20 ἑτέραν φύσιν τὴν χεῖρω ἠλλάξατο· ἔτι γὰρ
 ἀνθρωπικὸν ἢ κακία μεμιγμένη τινὶ ἐναντίῳ.
 Ἀποθνήσκει οὖν, ὡς ψυχὴ ἂν θάνοι, καὶ ὁ θάνατος
 αὐτῇ καὶ ἔτι ἐν τῷ σώματι βεβαπτισμένη ἐν ὕλῃ
 ἐστὶ καταδύναται καὶ πλησθῆναι αὐτῆς καὶ ἐξελθούσῃ
 ἐκεῖ κείσθαι, ἕως ἀναδράμῃ καὶ ἀφέλῃ πως τὴν
 25 ὄψιν ἐκ τοῦ βορβόρου· καὶ τοῦτό ἐστι τὸ ἐν
 Ἄϊδου ἐλθόντα ἐπικαταδαρθεῖν.

14. Εἰ δέ τις ἀσθένειαν ψυχῆς τὴν κακίαν λέγοι—
 εὐπαθῆ γοῦν καὶ εὐκίνητον εἶναι τὴν κακὴν ἀπὸ
 παντὸς εἰς ἅπαν κακὸν φερομένην, εὐκίνητον μὲν
 εἰς ἐπιθυμίας, εὐερέθιστον δὲ εἰς ὀργάς, προπετῆ
 5 δὲ εἰς συγκαταθέσεις, καὶ ταῖς ἀμυδραῖς φαντασίαις
 εἴκουσαν ῥαδίως, οἷα τὰ ἀσθενέστατα τῶν τέχνη
 ἢ φύσει πεποιημένων, ἃ ῥαδίαν ἔχει ὑπὸ τε
 πνευμάτων ὑπὸ τε εἰλήσεων τὴν φθοράν—ἄξιον ἂν
 εἴη ζητεῖν, τίς καὶ πόθεν ἡ ἀσθένεια τῆ ψυχῆ.
 Οὐ γὰρ δὴ, ὡς περ ἐπὶ τῶν σωμάτων, οὕτω καὶ
 10 ἐπὶ τῆς ψυχῆς τὸ ἀσθενές· ἀλλ' ὡς περ ἐκεῖ ἡ
 πρὸς τὸ ἔργον ἀδυναμία καὶ τὸ εὐπαθές, οὕτω καὶ
 ἐνταῦθα ἀναλογία τὸ τῆς ἀσθενείας ἔσχε προσηγο-
 ρίαν· εἰ μὴ ταύτῃ εἴη τὸ αὐτὸ αἴτιον ἢ ὕλη τῆς
 ἀσθενείας. Ἀλλὰ προσιτέον ἐγγὺς τῷ λόγῳ, τί
 τὸ αἴτιον ἐν τῷ λεγομένῳ ἀσθενεῖ τῆς ψυχῆς· οὐ
 15 γὰρ δὴ πυκνότητες ἢ ἀραιότητες οὐδ' αὐτὸ ἰσχύνητες
 ἢ παχύτητες ἢ νόσος, ὡς περ τις πυρετός, ἀσθενῆ
 ἐποίησε ψυχὴν εἶναι. Ἀνάγκη δὲ τὴν τοιαύτην
 ἀσθένειαν ψυχῆς ἢ ἐν ταῖς χωρισταῖς παντελῶς ἢ

and has gone falling into the mud of darkness; for
 when the soul is fallen utterly into utter vice, it no
 longer *has* vice, but has changed to another nature,
 a worse one (for vice which is mixed with anything
 of its contrary is still human). So it dies, as far as
 the soul can die, and its death, while it is still plunged
 in the body, is to sink in matter and be filled with it,
 and, when it has gone out of the body, to lie in matter
 till it raises itself and somehow manages to look
 away from the mud; this is "going to Hades and
 falling asleep there."¹

14. But if someone says that vice is a weakness
 of the soul—pointing out that the bad soul is
 easily affected and easily stirred, carried about from
 one evil to another, easily stirred to lust, easily
 roused to anger, hasty in its assents, giving way
 freely to confused imaginations, like the weakest of
 the products of art or nature, which the winds or the
 sun's heat so easily destroy²—it will be worth
 enquiring what this weakness is and where the soul
 gets it from. For weakness in the soul is not just
 like that in bodies; but incapacity for work and
 being easily affected, as in the body, so by analogy
 in the soul has the name of weakness: unless we are
 to refer weakness in the soul to the same cause as
 that in the body, matter. But we must get to grips
 with the question, what is the cause for what we
 call weakness in the soul; it is not density or rarity
 or thinness or fatness, or an illness, like fever, which
 makes the soul weak. This kind of weakness of the
 soul must be found either in those souls which are
 completely separate or in those which are in matter

¹ Republic VII. 534C7-D1.² Cp. Republic II. 380E5.

ἐν ταῖς ἐνύλοις ἢ ἐν ἀμφοτέραις εἶναι. Εἰ δὲ μὴ
 20 ἐν ταῖς χωρὶς ὕλης—καθαραὶ γὰρ πάσαι καὶ τὸ
 λεγόμενον ἐπτερωμένα καὶ τέλειοι: καὶ τὸ
 ἔργον αὐταῖς ἀνεμπόδιστον—λοιπὸν ἐν ταῖς πεσοῦ-
 σαις εἶναι τὴν ἀσθένειαν, ταῖς οὐ καθαραῖς οὐδὲ
 κεκαθαρμέναις, καὶ ἢ ἀσθένεια αὐταῖς εἶη ἂν
 οὐκ ἀφαίρεσις τινός, ἀλλὰ ἀλλοτρίου παρουσία,
 25 ὡσπερ φλέγματος ἢ χολῆς ἐν σώματι. Τοῦ δὲ
 πτώματος τὸ αἷτιον ψυχῇ σαφέστερον λαμβάνουσι
 καὶ ὡς πρυσήκει λαβεῖν καταφανὲς ἔσται τὸ
 ζητούμενον ἢ ψυχῆς ἀσθένεια. Ἔστιν ἐν τοῖς
 οὐρανῶν ὕλη, ἔστι δὲ καὶ ψυχῆ, καὶ οἶον τόπος εἰς τις.
 Οὐ γὰρ χωρὶς μὲν ὁ τόπος τῆ ὕλης, χωρὶς δὲ αὐτὸ ὁ
 30 τῆς ψυχῆς—οἶον ὁ μὲν ἐν γῆ τῆ ὕλης, ὁ δὲ ἐν
 ἀέρι τῆ ψυχῆ—ἀλλ' ὁ τόπος τῆ ψυχῆ χωρὶς τὸ
 μὴ ἐν ὕλει· τοῦτο δὲ τὸ μὴ ἐνωθῆναι τῆ ὕλει·
 τοῦτο δὲ τὸ μὴ ἐν τι ἐξ αὐτῆς καὶ ὕλης γενέσθαι·
 τοῦτο δὲ τὸ μὴ ἐν ὑποκειμένῳ τῆ ὕλει γενέσθαι·
 35 καὶ τοῦτο ἔστι τὸ χωρὶς εἶναι. Δυνάμεις δὲ
 ψυχῆς πολλαὶ καὶ ἀρχὴν καὶ μέσα καὶ ἔσχατα
 ψυχῆ ἔχει· ὕλη δὲ παρούσα προσαιτεῖ καὶ οἶον
 καὶ ἐνοχλεῖ καὶ εἰς τὸ εἶσω παρελθεῖν θέλει· πᾶς
 δὲ ὁ χῶρος ἱερός καὶ οὐδέν ἐστιν ὁ ἄμοιρόν ἐστι
 ψυχῆς. Ἐλλάμπεται οὖν ὑποβάλλουσα ἑαυτὴν καὶ
 40 ἀφ' οὗ μὲν ἐλλάμπεται οὐ δύναται λαβεῖν· οὐ
 γὰρ ἀνέχεται αὐτὴν ἐκείνο καίτοι παρούσαν, ὅτι

¹ *Phaedrus* 246B7–C1.

² The word *προσαιτεῖ* may be a reminiscence of *Symposium* 203B4, where Poverty comes begging to the feast of the gods.

³ Sophocles *Oedipus at Colonus*, 54; cp. 16. If Plotinus fully remembered what he was quoting, and the passion of

or in both. So if it is not in those without matter—
 they are all pure, and, as Plato says, “winged and
 perfect”¹ and their activity is unhindered—it remains
 that the weakness must be in the souls which have
 fallen, those which are not pure and have not been
 purified; and their weakness will not be a taking
 away of something but the presence of something
 alien, like the presence of phlegm or bile in the body.
 When we understand the cause of the fall of the soul
 more clearly, and as it ought to be understood, what
 we are looking for, the soul’s weakness, will be ob-
 vious. There is matter in reality and there is soul
 in reality, and one single place for both of them.
 For there are not two separate places for matter and
 for the soul,—on earth, for instance, for matter and
 in the air for the soul: the soul’s separate place is its
 not being in matter; and this means not being united
 to matter; and this means that not one single thing
 comes into being from it and matter; and this means
 that it is not in matter as a substratum; and this is
 being separate. But there are many powers of
 soul, and it has a beginning, a middle and an end;
 and matter is there, and begs it and, we may say,
 bothers it and wants to come right inside.² “All
 the place is holy,”³ and there is nothing which is
 without a share of soul. So matter spreads itself
 out under soul and is illumined, and cannot grasp
 the source from which its light comes: that source
 cannot endure matter though it is there, because

love for the “holy place” of Colonus with which the whole
 play is charged, this must be taken as one of the strongest
 affirmations of the goodness of the material world in the
Enneads. Soul is a god and the material world is holy as
 being the place where it dwells; cp. Introduction, p. xxiv.

μη ὄρα διὰ κάκην. Τὴν δὲ ἔλλαμψιν καὶ τὸ
 ἐκείθεν φῶς ἐσκότωσε τῇ μίξει καὶ ἀσθενὲς
 πεποίηκε τὴν γένεσιν αὐτῆ παρασχοῦσα καὶ τὴν
 αἰτίαν τοῦ εἰς αὐτὴν ἐλθεῖν· οὐ γὰρ ἂν ἦλθε τῷ μὴ
 παρόντι. Καὶ τοῦτό ἐστι πῶμα τῆς ψυχῆς τὸ
 45 οὕτως ἐλθεῖν εἰς ὕλην καὶ ἀσθενεῖν, ὅτι πάσαι αἱ
 δυνάμεις οὐ πάρισω εἰς ἐνέργειαν κωλυούσης
 ὕλης παρῆναι τῷ τὸν τόπον ὃν κατέχει αὐτῆ
 καταλαβεῖν καὶ οἶον συσπειραθῆναι ποιῆσαι
 ἐκκίνη, ὃ δ' ἔλαβεν οἶον κλέψασα ποιῆσαι κακὸν
 εἶναι, ἕως ἂν δινηθῆ ἀναδραμεῖν. Ὑλὴ τοῖνον καὶ
 50 ἀσθενείας ψυχῆς αἰτία καὶ κακίας αἰτία. Πρῶτερον
 ἄρα κακὴ αὐτῆ καὶ πρῶτον κακόν· καὶ γὰρ εἰ
 αὐτῆ ἢ ψυχῆ τὴν ὕλην ἐγέννησε παθοῦσα, καὶ εἰ
 ἐκοινώνησεν αὐτῆ καὶ ἐγένετο κακὴ, ἢ ὕλη αἰτία
 παρούσα· οὐ γὰρ ἂν ἐγένετο εἰς αὐτὴν μὴ τῆ
 παρουσίᾳ αὐτῆς τὴν γένεσιν λαβοῦσα.

15. Εἰ δὲ τις τὴν ὕλην μὴ φησιν εἶναι, δεικτέον
 αὐτῷ ἐκ τῶν περὶ ὕλης λόγων τὴν ἀνάγκην τῆς
 ὑποστάσεως αὐτῆς διὰ πλείονων ἐκεῖ περὶ τούτου
 εἰρημένου. Κακὸν δὲ εἰ τις λέγοι τὸ παράπαν ἐν
 5 τοῖς οὐσι μὴ εἶναι, ἀνάγκη αὐτῷ καὶ τὸ ἀγαθὸν
 ἀναιρεῖν καὶ μηδὲ ὀρεκτὸν μηδὲν εἶναι· μὴ τοῖνον
 μηδὲ ὀρεξιν μηδ' αὐτὴ ἐκκλισιν μηδὲ νόησιν· ἢ γὰρ
 ὀρεξις ἀγαθοῦ, ἢ δὲ ἐκκλισις κακοῦ, ἢ δὲ νόησις
 καὶ ἢ φρόνησις ἀγαθοῦ ἐστὶ καὶ κακοῦ, καὶ αὐτῆ
 10 καὶ ἄμικτον ἀγαθόν, τὸ δὲ μεμιγμένον ἤδη ἐκ
 κακοῦ καὶ ἀγαθοῦ, καὶ πλείονος τοῦ κακοῦ μεταλα-

¹ I.e., the treatise *On the Two Kinds of Matter* II. 4.

its evil makes it unable to see. Matter darkens the illumination, the light from that source, by mixture with itself, and weakens it by itself offering it the opportunity of generation and the reason for coming to matter; for it would not have come to what was not present. This is the fall of the soul, to come in this way to matter and to become weak, because all its powers do not come into action; matter hinders them from coming by occupying the place which soul holds and producing a kind of cramped condition, and making evil what it has got hold of by a sort of theft—until soul manages to escape back to its higher state. So matter is the cause of the soul's weakness and vice: it is then itself evil before soul and is primary evil. Even if soul had produced matter, being affected in some way, and had become evil by communicating with it, matter would have been the cause by its presence: soul would not have come to it unless its presence had given soul the occasion of coming to birth.

15. If anyone says that matter does not exist, he must be shown the necessity of its existence from our discussions about matter,¹ where the subject is treated more fully. But if anyone says that there is no evil at all in the nature of things, he must also abolish the good and have no object to aim at, and, for that matter, no aiming or avoidance or intelligence; for aiming is at the good and avoidance, of the evil, and intelligence and practical wisdom deal with good and evil, and are a good in themselves. So there must be good, and unmixed good, and that which is a mixture of bad and good, when it has a larger share of evil making itself totally evil, when it has a smaller share tending, because the evil is less,

βὸν ἦδη καὶ αὐτὸ συντελέουσαν ἐκείνῳ <ὁ> ἐν τῷ ὄλῳ
κακόν, ἐλάττονος δέ, ἢ ἠλάττωται, τῷ ἀγαθῷ.
Ἐπεὶ ψυχῇ τί ἂν εἴη κακόν; Ἥ τίτι ἂν μὴ
ἐφαισμημένη τῆς φύσεως τῆς χείρονος; Ἐπεὶ οὐδ'
15 ἐπιθυμῖαι οὐδ' ἀδ' λῦται, οὐ θυμοί, οὐ φόβοι· καὶ
γὰρ φόβοι τῷ συνθέτῳ, μὴ λυθῆ, καὶ λῦται καὶ
ἀλγηδόνες λυομένου· ἐπιθυμῖαι δὲ ἐνοχλοῦντός
τινος τῇ σνστάσει ἢ, ἵνα μὴ ἐνυχλῆ, ἴασιν προνοου-
μένου. Φαντασία δὲ πληγῇ ἀλόγου ἔξωθεν· δέχε-
ται δὲ τὴν πληγὴν διὰ τοῦ οὐκ ἀμεροῦς· καὶ
20 δόξαι ψευδεῖς ἔξω γενομένη τοῦ ἀληθοῦς αὐτοῦ
ἔξω δὲ γίνεται τῷ μὴ εἶναι καθαρά. Ἡ δὲ πρὸς
νοῦν ὄρεξις ἄλλο· συνεῖναι γὰρ δεῖ μόνον καὶ ἐν
αὐτῷ ἰδρυμένην, οὐ νεύσασαν εἰς τὸ χεῖρον. Τὸ δὲ
κακὸν οὐ μόνον ἐστὶ κακὸν διὰ δύναμιν ἀγαθοῦ
καὶ φύσιν· ἐπεὶ περ ἐφάνη ἐξ ἀνάγκης, περιληφθὲν
25 δεσμοῖς τισι καλοῖς, ὅλα δεσμῶταί τινες χρυσῷ,
κρύπτεται τούτοις, ἵν' ἄμουσα μὴ ὄρωτο τοῖς θεοῖς,
καὶ ἄνθρωποι ἔχοιεν μὴ αἰεὶ τὸ κακὸν βλέπειν,
ἀλλ' ὅταν καὶ βλέπωσιν, εἰδώλοισι τοῦ καλοῦ εἰς
ἀνάμνησιν συνῶσιν.

to the good. What, after all, is the evil of the soul?
What soul would have it if it did not come into
contact with a lower nature? If it did not there
would be no desires or sorrows or passions or fears;
for fears are for the composite nature, dreading its
dissolution; and sorrows and pains belong to it when
it is being dissolved; desires arise when something
interferes with the composition or when one is plan-
ning a remedy to prevent its being interfered with.
Imagination is from a stroke of something irrational
from outside; and the soul is accessible to the stroke
because of what in it is not undivided. It has false
opinions because it has come to be outside absolute
truth; and it has come to be outside by not being
pure. The impulse towards intellect is a different
kind of thing; all that is necessary here is to be with
intellect and established in it, without inclination to
what is worse. But because of the power and nature
of good, evil is not only evil; since it must necessarily
appear, it is bound in a sort of beautiful fetters, as
some prisoners are in chains of gold, and hidden by
them, so that it may not appear in its charmlessness
to the gods, and men may be able not always to look at
evil, but even when they do look at it, may be in
company with images of beauty to remind them.

I. 9. ON GOING OUT OF THE BODY

Introductory Note

THIS short treatise is one of the early group (No. 16 in the chronological order), written before Porphyry joined Plotinus; it cannot therefore present the arguments Plotinus used to discourage Porphyry from suicide (*Life* ch. 11). Creuzer supposed it to be an abridgement taken from the edition of Eustochius; Heinemann, a paraphrase or summary (and an inaccurate one) by Porphyry which has displaced the original text: but there seems no sufficient reason against believing, with Bréhier, Harder, Henry and Schwyzer, that it is the genuine treatise of Plotinus which held this place in Porphyry's edition.

Synopsis

If you take your soul out of your body by suicide, something evil will come with it; one must wait till the body goes from the soul by natural death; the violent emotions, too, which accompany suicide, harm the soul. One must not therefore go out of the body by suicide except in the case of desperate necessity.

Plotinus on Voluntary Death

L. G. Westerink has shown convincingly that this is not any sort of genuine quotation from Plotinus ("Elias and Plotin", *Byzantinische Zeitschrift* 57 (1964) 26-32); the editors are agreed that it should be deleted from the works of Plotinus (*Addenda ad textum* in OCT Plotinus vol. III, p. 307). But as it is still printed in vol. I of the OCT Plotinus I have retained the text and translation. [A.H.A. 1986]

I. 9. (16) ΠΕΡΙ ΕΞΑΓΩΓΗΣ

Οὐκ ἐξάξεις, ἵνα μὴ ἐξίῃ· ἐξελεύσεται γὰρ
 ἔχουσά τι, ἵνα καὶ ἐξέλθῃ, τό τε ἐξελεῖν ἐστι
 μεταβῆναι εἰς ἄλλον τόπον. Ἄλλὰ μένει τὸ σῶμα
 ἀποστήναι πᾶν αὐτῆς, ὅτε μὴ δέεται μετελθεῖν,
 5 ἀλλ' ἐστι πάντῃ ἔξω. Πῶς οὖν ἀφίσταται τὸ
 σῶμα; Ὅταν μὴδὲν ἔτι δεδεμένον ἢ τῆς ψυχῆς,
 ἀδυνατούντος ἔτι τοῦ σώματος συνδεῖν, τῆς ἁρμο-
 νίας αὐτοῦ οὐκέτ' οὔσης, ἣν ἔχον εἶχε τὴν ψυχὴν.
 Τί οὖν, εἰ μηχανήσασαί τις λυθῆναι τὸ σῶμα;
 Ἡ ἐβιάσατο καὶ ἀπέστη αὐτός, οὐκ ἐκείνο ἀφήκε
 10 καὶ ὅτε λύει, οὐκ ἀπαθῆς, ἀλλ' ἢ δυσχέρανσις ἢ
 λύπη ἢ θυμός· δεῖ δὲ μὴδὲν πράττειν. Εἰ οὖν
 ἀρχὴν αἰσθοῖτο τοῦ ληρεῖν; Ἡ τάχα μὲν οὐ περὶ
 σπουδαίων· εἰ δὲ καὶ γένοιτο, τάττοιτ' ἂν ἐν τοῖς
 ἀναγκαίοις τοῦτο καὶ ἐκ περιστάσεως αἰρετοῖς,
 οὐχ ἀπλῶς αἰρετοῖς. Καὶ γὰρ ἡ τῶν φαρμάκων
 15 προσαγωγὴ πρὸς ἔξοδον ψυχῆς τάχα ἂν ψυχῇ οὐ
 πρόσφορος. Καὶ εἰ εἰμαρμένος χρόνος ὁ δοθεὶς

¹ This cryptic saying is stated by the Byzantine Psellus to have been taken by Plotinus from the *Chaldaean Oracles* (PG122. 1125C-D): if so, it would be the only place in the

I. 9. ON GOING OUT OF THE BODY

You shall not take out your soul, so that it may not go¹; for if it goes thus, it will go taking something with it so that it can manage to get out; and going out is moving to another place. But the soul waits for the body to depart altogether from it; then soul does not have to change its place, but is completely outside. But how does the body depart? When nothing of soul is any longer bound up with it, because the body is unable to bind it any more, since its harmony is gone; as long as it has this it holds the soul. But suppose someone contrives the dissolution of his body? He has used violence and gone away himself, not let his body go; and in dissolving it he is not without passion; there is disgust or grief or anger; one must not act like this. But suppose he is aware that he is beginning to go mad? This is not likely to happen to a really good man; but if it does happen, he will consider it as one of the inevitable things, to be accepted because of the circumstances, though not in themselves acceptable.² And after all, taking drugs to give the soul a way out is not likely to be good for the soul. And if each man has a destined time allotted to him, it is not

Enneads where Plotinus quotes from this sort of occultist literature; but it is by no means certain whether Plotinus is quoting the oracle or whether the oracle was later taken from Plotinus.

² Cp. I. 4. 7-8.

PLOTINUS: ENNEAD I. 9

ἐκάστω, πρὸ τούτου οὐκ εὐτυχές, εἰ μὴ, ὡσπερ
 φάμεν, ἀναγκαῖον. Εἰ δέ, οἷος ἕκαστος ἕξεισι,
 ταύτην ἴσχει ἐκεῖ τάξιν, εἰς τὸ προκόπτειν οὔσης
 ἐπιδόσεως οὐκ ἐξακτέον.

*Plotinus de Voluntaria Morte
 Apud Eliam*

Ὁ μέντοι Πλωτῖνος περὶ εὐλόγου ἐξαγωγῆς
 γράφει μονόβιβλον καὶ οὐδένα τῶν πέντε τρόπων
 τούτων ἀποδέχεται· φησὶ γὰρ ὅτι ὡσπερ ὁ θεὸς οὐκ
 ἀφίσταται ἡμῶν προνοούμενος, ἀλλ' ἡμεῖς ἑαυτοὺς
 ποιούμεν ἀνεπιτηδέους καὶ νομίζομεν τὸν θεὸν
 πόρρω εἶναι ἀφ' ἡμῶν αἰεὶ παρόντα πᾶσιν ἐπίσης,
 ὡς δηλοῦσιν οἱ καθαροὶ τὸν βίον, αὐτόπται τοῦ
 θείου καὶ συνομιληταὶ γινόμενοι· ὡσπερ καὶ ὁ
 ἥλιος χορηγεῖ ἐπίσης τὸ φῶς, ἀλλ' αἱ νυκτερίδες
 ἀνεπιτήδαιοι οὔσαι ἀποφεύγουσιν αὐτὸν καὶ οὐ
 φωτίζονται ἐξ αὐτοῦ, ἀλλὰ σκότος αὐτὸν νομίζου-
 σιν εἶναι πηγὴν φωτὸς ὑπάρχοντα· οὕτως δεῖ καὶ
 τὸν φιλόσοφον μιμούμενον θεὸν καὶ ἥλιον μὴ
 ἀμελεῖν πάντη τοῦ σώματος δι' ἐπιμέλειαν τῆς
 ψυχῆς, ἀλλὰ τὴν προσήκουσαν αὐτοῦ ποιεῖσθαι
 πρόνοιαν, ἕως οὗ ἐκεῖνο ἀνεπιτήδειον γενόμενον
 διαστήσοι ἑαυτὸ τῆς πρὸς τὴν ψυχὴν κοινωνίας·
 ἀποπον γὰρ τὸ πρὸ καιροῦ ἐξάγειν ἑαυτὸν, πρὸ οὗ
 λύσῃ ὁ δῆσας.

¹ The "five ways of reasonable departure" are the five
 good reasons for suicide according to the Stoics; cp. *Stoicorum
 Veterum Fragmenta* III. 768. In I. 4. 7-8 and I. 9 Plotinus

ON GOING OUT OF THE BODY

a good thing to go out before it, unless, as we main-
 tain, it is necessary. And if each man's rank in
 the other world depends on his state when he goes
 out, one must not take out the soul as long as there
 is any possibility of progress.

*Plotinus on Voluntary Death
 (In Elias, Prolegomena 6. 15. 23-16. 2.)*

Plotinus writes a single treatise about "reasonable
 departure" and does not accept any of these five
 ways:¹ he says, that just as God does not leave off
 taking thought for us, but we make ourselves unfit
 and think God is far from us when he is always present
 equally to all, as men of pure life show, who came to
 see God face to face and be his close companions; and
 just as the sun dispenses his light equally, but bats,
 because they are unfit for the sunlight, fly from him
 and are not enlightened by him, but think that he is
 darkness when he is the source of light; so the
 philosopher must imitate God and the sun and not
 neglect his body altogether in caring for his soul,
 but take thought for it in the appropriate way till it
 becomes unfit and separates itself from its com-
 munity with the soul. It is all wrong to take oneself
 out before the right time, when he who bound body
 and soul together looses the bond.

does in fact accept at least three of them, long and extremely
 painful illness, madness, and, probably, coercion to immoral
 behaviour (I. 4. 7. 43-45) as reasons for suicide.